

*The Centenary Edition.*

---

THE COMPLETE WORKS  
OF  
SAINT ALPHONSUS DE LIGUORI,  
DOCTOR OF THE CHURCH,  
*Bishop of Saint Agatha, and Founder of the Congregation of the Most  
Holy Redeemer.*

TRANSLATED FROM THE ITALIAN.

EDITED BY  
REV. EUGENE GRIMM,  
*Priest of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer.*

---

THE ASCETICAL WORKS.

Volume VI.

THE HOLY EUCHARIST.

*THE SACRIFICE, THE SACRAMENT, AND THE SACRED HEART OF  
JESUS CHRIST. PRACTICE OF LOVE OF JESUS CHRIST.  
NOVENA TO THE HOLY GHOST.*



Centenary Edition.

THE COMPLETE ASCETICAL WORKS  
OF  
ST. ALPHONSUS DE LIGUORI.

18 vols., Price, per vol., *net*, \$1.25.

*Each book is complete in itself, and any volume will be sold separately.*

- 
- Volume I. PREPARATION FOR DEATH ; or, Considerations on the Eternal Truths. Maxims of Eternity—Rule of Life.
- “ II. WAY OF SALVATION AND OF PERFECTION : Meditations. Pious Reflections. Spiritual Treatises.
- “ III. GREAT MEANS OF SALVATION AND OF PERFECTION : Prayer. Mental Prayer. The Exercises of a Retreat. Choice of a State of Life, and the Vocation to the Religious State and to the Priesthood.
- “ IV. THE INCARNATION, BIRTH AND INFANCY OF JESUS CHRIST ; or, The Mysteries of Faith.
- “ V. THE PASSION AND THE DEATH OF JESUS CHRIST.
- “ VI. THE HOLY EUCHARIST. The Sacrifice, the Sacrament, and the Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ. Practice of Love of Jesus Christ. Novena to the Holy Ghost.
- “ VII., VIII. GLORIES OF MARY: 1. Explanation of the *Salve Regina*, or Hail, Holy Queen. Discourses on the Feasts of Mary. 2. Her Dolors. Her Virtues. Practices. Examples. Answers to Critics.—Devotion to the Holy Angels. Devotion to St. Joseph. Novena to St. Teresa. Novena for the Repose of the Souls in Purgatory.
- “ IX. VICTORIES OF THE MARTYRS ; or, the Lives of the Most Celebrated Martyrs of the Church.
- “ X., XI. THE TRUE SPOUSE OF JESUS CHRIST: 1. The first sixteen Chapters. 2. The last eight Chapters. Appendix and various small Works. Spiritual Letters.
- “ XII. CONGREGATION OF THE MOST HOLY REDEEMER: Rule. Instructions about the Religious State. Letters and Circulars. Lives of two Fathers and of a Lay-brother.
- “ XIII. DIGNITY AND DUTIES OF THE PRIEST ; or, SELVA, a collection of Material for Ecclesiastical Retreats. Rule of Life and Spiritual Rules.
- “ XIV. THE HOLY MASS : Sacrifice of Jesus Christ. Ceremonies of the Mass. Preparation and Thanksgiving. The Mass and the Office that are hurriedly said.
- “ XV. THE DIVINE OFFICE: Translation of the Psalms and Hymns.
- “ XVI. PREACHING : The Exercises of the Missions. Various Counsels. Instructions on the Commandments and Sacraments.
- “ XVII. SERMONS FOR SUNDAYS.
- “XVIII. VARIOUS SMALLER WORKS: Discourses on Calamities. Reflections useful for Bishops. Seminaries. Ordinances. Letters. General alphabetical index.
- 

Benziger Brothers, New York, Cincinnati, and St. Louis.



The Centenary Edition.

# THE HOLY EUCHARIST.

THE SACRIFICE, THE SACRAMENT, AND  
THE SACRED HEART OF JESUS CHRIST.

PRACTICE OF LOVE OF JESUS  
CHRIST. NOVENA TO THE  
HOLY GHOST.

BY  
ST. ALPHONSUS DE LIGUORI,  
*Doctor of the Church.*

EDITED BY  
REV. EUGENE GRIMM,  
*Priest of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer.*



NEW YORK, CINCINNATI, AND ST. LOUIS:  
**BENZIGER BROTHERS,**  
*Printers to the Holy Apostolic See.*

R. WASHBOURNE,  
18 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON.

M. H. GILL & SON,  
505 UPPER O'CONNELL STREET, DUBLIN.  
1887.

JAN 23 1953

APPROBATION.

By virtue of the authority granted me by the Most Rev. Nicholas Mauron, Superior-General of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer, I hereby sanction the publication of the work entitled "The Holy Eucharist," etc., which is Vol. VI. of the new and complete edition in English of the works of Saint Alphonsus de Liguori, called "The Centenary Edition."

ELIAS FRED. SCHAUER,

*Sup. Prov. Baltimorensis.*

BALTIMORE, MD., *January* 16, 1887.

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
APPROBATION.....	4
NOTICE.....	15

## THE SACRIFICE OF JESUS CHRIST.

I. The sacrifices of the Old Law were figures of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.....	17
II. Fulfilment of the prophetic figures.....	21
SHORT EXPLANATION OF THE PRAYERS OF MASS . . . . .	28
HEARING MASS.....	58
PIOUS EXERCISE to acquire the proper disposition for making a good Confession.....	61
ACTS FOR HOLY COMMUNION.	
I. Preparation for Communion.....	68
Acts before Communion.....	71
II. Thanksgiving after Communion.....	75
Acts after Communion.....	77
LOVING ASPIRATIONS to Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament.	
Before Communion.....	83
After Communion.....	93
HYMNS.....	105
Holy Communion, 105. To Jesus after Communion.....	106

## VISITS TO THE BLESSED SACRAMENT AND TO THE BLESSED VIRGIN.

NOTICE.....	110
TO MARY.....	111
TO THE READER.....	112
INTRODUCTION.....	113
The Visit to the Most Holy Sacrament, 113. The Visit to the Blessed Virgin, 118. Spiritual Communion.....	121

	PAGE
MANNER OF MAKING THE VISITS.....	123
VISITS for every day in the month.....	127
HYMNS.....	209
Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament enclosed in the Tabernacle,	
209. The visit to Jesus on the altar. ....	210

## MEDITATIONS FOR THE OCTAVE OF CORPUS CHRISTI.

I. The love of Jesus in the Most Blessed Sacrament.....	213
II. Jesus remains on the altar, that every one may be able to find him.....	215
III. The great gift which Jesus has made us by giving him- self to us in the Blessed Sacrament.....	216
IV. The great love which Jesus Christ has shown us in the Blessed Sacrament.....	218
V. The union of the Soul with Jesus in Holy Communion...	220
VI. The desire which Jesus Christ has to unite himself to us in Holy Communion.....	222
VII. Holy Communion obtains for us perseverance in divine grace.....	224
VIII. Preparation for Communion and Thanksgiving after it....	226

## NOVENA TO THE SACRED HEART.

Notice on the devotion to the adorable Heart of Jesus.....	229
--	-----

### MEDITATIONS.

I. The amiable Heart of Jesus.....	235
II. The loving Heart of Jesus.....	237
III. The Heart of Jesus Christ panting to be loved.....	240
IV. The sorrowful Heart of Jesus.....	242
V. The compassionate Heart of Jesus.....	244
VI. The generous Heart of Jesus.....	246
VII. The grateful Heart of Jesus.....	249
VIII. The despised Heart of Jesus. ....	251
IX. The faithful Heart of Jesus.....	253
AFFECTIONS of love towards the Heart of Jesus.....	256
HYMNS .....	258
The loving Spouse, 258. The loving Spouse in the Heart of Jesus.....	259

THE PRACTICE OF THE LOVE OF JESUS CHRIST.

INTRODUCTION.

	PAGE
I. How deserving Jesus Christ is of our love, on account of the love he has shown us in his Passion.....	263
II. How much Jesus Christ deserves to be loved by us, on account of the love he has shown us in instituting the Most Holy Sacrament of the altar.....	275
III. The great confidence we ought to have in the love which Jesus Christ has shown us, and in all he has done for us.	285
IV. How much we are obliged to love Jesus Christ.....	293

CHAPTER I.

CHARITY IS PATIENT.

He that loves Jesus Christ loves sufferings. (Patience.).....	305
---	-----

CHAPTER II.

CHARITY IS KIND.

He that loves Jesus Christ loves meekness. (Meekness.).....	316
---	-----

CHAPTER III.

CHARITY ENVIETH NOT.

The soul that loves Jesus Christ does not envy the great ones of this world, but only those who are greater lovers of Jesus Christ.....	323
---	-----

CHAPTER IV.

CHARITY DEALETH NOT PERVERSELY.

He that loves Jesus Christ avoids lukewarmness, and seeks perfection; the means of which are: 1. Desire; 2. Resolution; 3. Mental Prayer; 4. Communion; 5. Prayer.....	330
Lukewarmness, 330. Remedies against lukewarmness: 1. Desire of perfection, 334; 2. Resolution, 337; 3. Mental Prayer.	342

CHAPTER V.

CHARITY IS NOT PUFFED UP.

He that loves Jesus Christ is not vain of his own worth, but humbles himself, and is glad to be humbled by others. (Humility.).....	358
---	-----

*CHAPTER VI.*

CHARITY IS NOT AMBITIOUS.

He that loves Jesus Christ desires nothing but Jesus Christ. (Vainglory.).....	PAGE 366
---	-------------

*CHAPTER VII.*

CHARITY SEEKETH NOT HER OWN.

He that loves Jesus Christ seeks to detach himself from every creature. (Detachment.).....	371
Detachment from relatives, above all, in regard to one's vocation, 379. Sanctity required to enter Holy Orders, 382. Detach- ment from human respect and self-will .....	387

*CHAPTER VIII.*

CHARITY IS NOT PROVOKED TO ANGER.

He that loves Jesus Christ is never angry with his neighbor. (Meekness.).....	392
--	-----

*CHAPTER IX.*

CHARITY THINKETH NO EVIL, REJOICETH NOT IN INIQUITY,  
BUT REJOICING WITH THE TRUTH (CONFORMITY TO GOD'S  
WILL).....

The necessity of conforming to God's will, 400. Obedience.....	409
--	-----

*CHAPTER X.*

CHARITY BEARETH ALL THINGS.

He that loves Jesus Christ bears all things for Jesus Christ, and especially illnesses, poverty, and contempt.....	415
1. Patience in sickness, 415. 2. Patience in poverty, 421. 3. Patience under contempt.....	426

*CHAPTER XI.*

CHARITY BELIEVETH ALL THINGS.

He that loves Jesus Christ believes all his words. (Faith.).....	430
--	-----

*CHAPTER XII.*

CHARITY HOPETH ALL THINGS.

He that loves Jesus Christ hopes for all things from him. (Hope.)	434
---	-----

*CHAPTER XIII.*

He that loves Jesus Christ with a strong love does not cease to love him in the midst of all sorts of temptations and desolations. ....	PAGE 446
1. Temptations; why God permits them, 447. Remedies against temptations, 450. 2. Desolations. ....	458
ABSTRACT of the virtues treated of in this work, to be practised by him who loves Jesus Christ. ....	470
NOVENA to the Holy Ghost.	

*MEDITATIONS.*

I. Love is a fire that inflames the heart. ....	479
II. Love is a light that enlightens the soul. ....	481
III. Love is a fountain that satisfies. ....	482
IV. Love is a dew that fertilizes. ....	484
V. Love is a repose that refreshes. ....	485
VI. Love is the virtue that gives strength. ....	487
VII. Love causes God to dwell in our souls. ....	488
VIII. Love is a bond that binds. ....	490
IX. Love is a treasure containing every good. ....	492
X. The means of loving God and of becoming a saint. ....	494
PIOUS EXERCISE to obtain the seven gifts of the Holy Ghost. ....	496
HYMN. ....	505
INDEX. ....	506





The Sacrifice of Jesus Christ,  
WITH A SHORT EXPLANATION OF  
*THE PRAYERS OF THE MASS.*

IN the two preceding volumes we have been considering that the Son of God, not content with becoming man and immolating himself for our salvation, in order to satisfy the love that he bore us, also wished to create for himself an entirely new life of love by instituting the Holy Eucharist expressly for the purpose of giving himself to us in three different ways; namely, as a victim of of an infinite price in the Holy Sacrifice; as the food of our souls in Holy Communion; and, in the holy tabernacle, as a perpetual companion of our exile here upon earth.

After having paid our homage to our Saviour in his sacrament of love, we honor with a special worship his divine heart, which is regarded as the seat of his immense love for us.

Now, as God loves only in order to be loved, we are led by the foregoing considerations to the practice of the love of Jesus Christ.

We conclude by speaking of the devotion that is due to the Holy Spirit, who is the love that is consubstantial with the Father and the Son, through whom God loves us, and through whom we love God.

Such are the contents of this volume, which is Volume VI. of the ascetical works.

We place at the beginning of this volume a short treatise entitled "The Sacrifice of Jesus Christ," because the Sacrifice of the Altar is intimately connected with the Sacrifice of the Cross, the latter being the subject considered in the last volume, and because the Sacrifice of the Altar completes the Sacrifice of the Cross by Holy Communion.

St. Alphonsus wrote this little work in his retreat in the year 1776, when he was eighty years of age, and published it with his work called the *Victories of the Martyrs*.

ED.

## NOTICE.

---

I ACKNOWLEDGE to have drawn this little treatise on the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ from a work composed by a learned French author.\* His work is complete and somewhat diffuse. I have composed and have published this abridgment because of the profit that may be derived from it, not only by the priests who say Mass, but by the faithful who are present at it.

My little work bears the title "The Sacrifice of Jesus Christ," for, although we distinguish by different names the Sacrifice of the Cross from the Sacrifice of the Altar,

---

\* This is, however, not a mere abridgment that St. Alphonsus gives us. As was usual with him, he appropriated the subject and treated it after his own manner by confining himself to quoting on some points the opinion of the French author. What he ascribes to the latter is found, nearly word for word, in the book entitled "*L'Idée du Sacerdoce et du Sacrifice de Jésus-Christ, par le R. P. De Condren, etc. Par un Prêtre de l'Oratoire.*" We doubt, however, whether this excellent work is that which our Saint had before him; for it appears to us that such a work cannot be called anonymous, though the learned Oratorian who published it in 1677 gives in the title-page only his title, and the initials of his name in his dedication, by signing himself P. Q. (This is Father Pasquier Quesnel, who later on became unfortunately so famous.) This doubt is confirmed by the remark that we add further on, page 26, and is changed almost into certainty in view of a passage that we read on page 36, and that we have not seen in the aforesaid work. We therefore believe that there exists a more recent work in which "*L'Idée*" of Father De Condren is reproduced in an incomplete manner and without the name of the author.—ED.

yet it is substantially the same sacrifice. In fact, we find at the altar the same victim and the same priest that one day offered himself on the cross. The Sacrifice of the Altar is a continuation or a renewal of the Sacrifice of the Cross, and differs from it only in the manner in which it is offered.

## The Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

### I.

#### The Sacrifices of the Old Law were Figures of the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

All the sacrifices of the old law were figures of the sacrifice of our divine Redeemer, and there were four kinds of these sacrifices; namely, the sacrifices of peace, of thanksgiving, of expiation, and of impetration.

1. The *sacrifices of peace* were instituted to render to God the worship of adoration that is due to him as the sovereign master of all things. Of this kind were the holocausts.

2. The *sacrifices of thanksgiving* were destined to give thanks to the Lord for all his benefits.

3. The *sacrifices of expiation* were established to obtain the pardon of sin. This kind of sacrifice was specially represented in the Feast of the Expiation by the emissary-goat,<sup>1</sup> which, having been laden with all the sins of the people, was led forth out of the camp of the Hebrews, and afterwards abandoned in the desert to be there devoured by ferocious beasts. This sacrifice was the most expressive figure of the sacrifice of the cross. Jesus Christ was laden with all the sins of men, as Isaias had foretold: *The Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.*<sup>2</sup> He was afterwards ignominiously led forth from Jerusalem, whither the Apostle invites us to follow him

<sup>1</sup> Lev. xvi. 8.

<sup>2</sup> "Et posuit Dominus in eo iniquitatem omnium nostrum."—Isa. liii. 6.

by sharing in his opprobrium: *Let us go forth therefore to him without the camp, bearing his reproach.*<sup>1</sup> He was abandoned to ferocious beasts; that is to say, to the Gentiles, who crucified him.

4. Finally, the *sacrifices of impetration* had for their object to obtain from God his aid and his grace.

Now, all these sacrifices were abolished by the coming of the Redeemer, because only the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, which was a perfect sacrifice, while all the ancient sacrifices were imperfect, was sufficient to expiate all the sins, and merit for man every grace. This is the reason why the Son of God on entering the world said to his Father: *Sacrifice and oblation Thou wouldst not; but a body Thou hast fitted to me. Holocausts for sin did not please Thee. Then said I: Behold, I come; in the head of the book it is written of me, that I should do Thy will, O God.*<sup>2</sup> Hence, by offering to God the sacrifice of Jesus Christ we can fulfil all our duties towards his supreme majesty, and provide for all our wants; and by this means we succeed in maintaining a holy intercourse between God and ourselves.

We must also know that the Old Law exacted five conditions in regard to the victims which were to be offered to God so as to be agreeable to him; namely, sanctification, oblation, immolation, consumption, and participation.

1. The victim had to be *sanctified*, or consecrated to God, so that there might not be offered to him anything that was not holy nor unworthy of his majesty. Hence, the animal destined for sacrifice had to be without stain, without defect; it was not to be blind, lame, weak, nor

<sup>1</sup> "Exeamus igitur ad eum extra castra, improprium ejus portantes."—*Heb.* xiii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Hostiam et oblationem noluisti, corpus autem aptasti mihi; holocaustomata pro peccato non tibi placuerunt; tunc dixi: Ecce venio; in capite libri scriptum est de me, ut faciam, Deus, voluntatem tuam."—*Heb.* x. 5.

deformed, according to what was prescribed in the Book of Deuteronomy.<sup>1</sup> This condition indicated that such would be the Lamb of God, the victim promised for the salvation of the world; that is to say, that he would be holy, and exempt from every defect. We are thereby instructed that our prayers and our other good works are not worthy of being offered to God, or at least can never be fully agreeable to him, if they are in any way defective. Moreover, the animal thus sanctified could no longer be employed for any profane usage, and was regarded as a thing consecrated to God in such a manner that only a priest was permitted to touch it. This shows us how displeasing it is to God if persons consecrated to him busy themselves without real necessity with the things of the world, and thus live in distraction and in neglect of what concerns the glory of God.

2. The victim had to be *offered* to God; this was done by certain words that the Lord himself had prescribed.

3. It had to be *immolated*, or put to death; but this immolation was not always brought about by death, properly so called; for the sacrifice of the loaves of proposition, or show-bread, was accomplished, for example, without using iron or fire, but only by means of the natural heat of those who ate of them.

4. The victim had to be *consumed*. This was done by fire. The sacrifice in which the victim was entirely consumed by fire was called holocaust. The latter was thus entirely annihilated in order to indicate by this destruction the unlimited power that God has over all his creatures, and that as he created them out of nothing, so he can reduce them to the nothingness from which they came. In fact, the principal end of the sacrifice is to acknowledge God as a sovereign being, so superior to all things that everything before him is purely nothing; for all

<sup>1</sup> *Deut.* xv. 21.

things are nothing in presence of him who possesses all things in himself. The smoke that came from this sacrifice and arose in the air signified that God received it as a sweet odor,—that is to say, with pleasure,—as is written of the sacrifice of Noe: *Noe . . . offered holocausts upon the altar; and the Lord smelled a sweet savor.*<sup>1</sup>

5. All the people, together with the priest, had to be partakers of the victim. Hence, in the sacrifices, excepting the holocaust, the victim was divided into three parts, one part of which was destined for the priest, one for the people, and one for the fire. This last part was regarded as belonging to God, who by this means communicated in some manner with those who were partakers of the victim.

These five conditions are found reunited in the sacrifice of the Paschal Lamb. The Lord had commanded Moses<sup>2</sup> that, on the tenth day of the month on which the Jews had been delivered from the slavery of Egypt, a lamb of one year and without blemish should be taken and separated from the flock; and thus were verified the conditions enumerated above, namely: 1. The separation of the lamb signified that it was a victim *consecrated* to God; 2. This consecration was succeeded by the *oblation*, which took place in the Temple, where the lamb was presented; 3. On the fourteenth day of the month the *immolation* took place, or the lamb was killed; 4. Then the lamb was roasted and divided among those present; and this was the partaking of it, or communion; 5. Finally, the lamb having been eaten, what remained of it was *consumed* by fire, and thus was the sacrifice consummated.

<sup>1</sup> “Noe . . . obtulit holocausta super altare; odoratusque est Dominus odorem suavitatis.”—*Gen.* viii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Exod.* xii. 3.



## II.

## Fulfilment of the Prophetic Figures.

The Sacrifice of our Lord, as we have said, was a perfect sacrifice, of which those sacrifices of the Old Law were but signs, imperfect figures, and what the Apostle calls *weak and needy elements*.<sup>1</sup> The sacrifice offered by Jesus Christ really fulfilled all the conditions mentioned above. The first condition, which is the *sanctification*, or the consecration of the victim, was accomplished in the Incarnation of the Word by God the Father himself, as is mentioned in the Gospel of St. John: *Whom the Father hath sanctified*.<sup>2</sup> Likewise, when announcing to the Blessed Virgin that she was chosen to be the Mother of the Son of God, the Angel said: *The Holy which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God*.<sup>3</sup> Thus this divine victim, who was to be sacrificed for the salvation of the world, had already been sanctified by God, when he was born of Mary. From the first moment in which the Eternal Word took a human body, he was consecrated to God to be the victim of the great sacrifice that was to be accomplished on the Cross for the salvation of men. In regard to this our Lord said to his Father: *But a body Thou hast fitted to me . . . that I should do Thy will, O God*.<sup>4</sup>

The second condition, or the *oblation*, was also fulfilled at the moment of the Incarnation, when Jesus Christ voluntarily offered himself to atone for the sins of men. Knowing that divine justice could not be satisfied by all

<sup>1</sup> "Infirma et egena elementa."—*Gal.* iv. 9.

<sup>2</sup> "Quem Pater sanctificavit."—*John*, x. 36.

<sup>3</sup> "Quod nascetur ex te Sanctum, vocabitur Filius Dei."—*Luke*, i. 35.

<sup>4</sup> "Corpus autem aptasti mihi, . . . ut faciam, Deus, voluntatem tuam."—*Heb.* x. 5.

the ancient sacrifices, nor by all the works of men, he offered himself to atone for all the sins of men, and hence he said to God, *Sacrifices, and oblations, and holocausts for sin, Thou wouldst not. . . . Then said I, Behold, I come to do Thy will, O God.*<sup>1</sup> Then the Apostle adds immediately, *In which will we are sanctified by the oblation of the body of Jesus Christ once.*<sup>2</sup> This last text is remarkable. Sin had rendered all men unworthy of being offered to God and of being accepted by him, and, therefore, it was necessary that Jesus Christ should offer himself for us in order to sanctify us by his grace, and to make us worthy of being accepted by God. And this offering which our Lord then made of himself did not limit itself to that moment, but it only then began; it always has continued since, and it will continue forever. It is true it will cease on earth at the time of Antichrist: the Sacrifice of the Mass is to be suspended for twelve hundred and ninety days; that is, for three years six months and a half, according to the prophecy of Daniel: *And from the time when the continual sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination unto desolation shall be set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred ninety days.*<sup>3</sup> Yet the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ will never cease, since the Son of God will always continue to offer himself to his Father by an eternal sacrifice, for he himself is the priest and the victim, but an eternal victim and an eternal priest, not according to the order of Aaron, of which the priesthood and the sacrifice were temporary, imperfect, and inadequate to appease the anger of God against rebellious man, but according to the order of Melchisedech, as David predicted: *Thou art a priest ac-*

<sup>1</sup> "Quia hostias et oblationes et holocaustomata noluisti . . . tunc dixi: Ecce venio, ut faciam, Deus, voluntatem tuam."—*Heb.* x. 8.

<sup>2</sup> "In qua voluntate sanctificati sumus per oblationem corporis Jesu Christi semel."—*Ibid.* 10.

<sup>3</sup> "Et a tempore cum ablatum fuerit jure sacrificium, et posita fuerit abominatio in desolatione, dies mille ducenti nonaginta."—*Dan.* xii. 11.

*cording to the order of Melchisedech.*<sup>1</sup> The priesthood of Jesus Christ will, therefore, be eternal, since, even after the end of the world, he will always continue to offer in heaven this same victim that he once offered on the Cross for the glory of God and for the salvation of mankind.

The third condition of the sacrifice—namely, the *immolation* of the victim—was evidently accomplished by the death of our Lord on the Cross.

There remains for us yet to verify, in the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ, the two other conditions requisite to render a sacrifice perfect—that is, the *consumption* of the victim and the *partaking* of it.

It is then asked, What was this consumption of the victim in the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ? for although his body was by death separated from his holy soul, yet it was not consumed, nor destroyed.

The anonymous author of whom I spoke in the beginning, says that this fourth condition was fulfilled by the resurrection of our Lord; for, then, his adorable body was divested of all that is terrestrial and mortal, and was clothed in divine glory. He adds that it is this glory that Jesus Christ asked of his Father before his death: *And now glorify Thou me, O Father, with Thyself, with the glory which I had, before the world was, with Thee.*<sup>2</sup> Our Lord did not ask this glory for his divinity, since he possessed it from all eternity as being the Word equal to the Father; but he asked it for his humanity, and he obtained it at his resurrection, by which he entered in a certain manner into his divine glory.

In speaking of the fifth condition, which is, the *partaking* of the victim, or Communion, the same author

<sup>1</sup> "Tu es Sacerdos in æternum secundum ordinem Melchisedech." —*Ps.* cix. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Et nunc clarifica me tu, Pater, apud temetipsum, claritate quam habui, priusquam mundus fieret, apud te." —*John*, xvii. 5.

says that it is also fulfilled in heaven, where all the blessed are partakers of the victim of the Sacrifice that Jesus Christ continues to offer to God while offering himself.

These two reflections, made by the author to explain the two last conditions of the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ, are wise and ingenious ; but for myself I think that the two conditions of which there is question, namely, the consumption and Communion, are manifestly fulfilled in the Sacrifice of the Altar, which, as has been declared by the Council of Trent, is the same as that of the Cross. In fact, the Sacrifice of the Mass, instituted by our Lord before his death, is a continuation of the Sacrifice of the Cross. Jesus Christ wished that the price of his blood, shed for the salvation of men, should be applied to us by the Sacrifice of the Altar ; in which the victim offered is the same, though it is there offered differently from what it is on the Cross, that is, without the shedding of blood. These are the words of the Council of Trent : “ Although Christ our Lord was to offer himself once to his Eternal Father on the altar of the Cross by actually dying to obtain for us eternal redemption, yet as his priesthood was not to become extinct by his death, in order to leave his Church a visible sacrifice suited to the present condition of men, a sacrifice which might at the same time represent to us the bloody sacrifice consummated on the Cross, preserve the memory of it to the end of the world, and apply the salutary fruits of it for the remission of the sins which we daily commit ; at his last supper, on the very night on which he was betrayed, giving proof that he was established a priest forever according to the order of Melchisedech, he offered to God the Father his body and blood, under the appearances of bread and wine, and, under the same symbols, gave them to the apostles, whom he constituted at the same time priests of the New Law. By these words,

‘Do ye this in remembrance of me,’ he commissioned them and their successors in the priesthood to consecrate and offer his body and blood, as the Catholic Church has always understood and taught.”<sup>1</sup> And further on the Council declares that the Lord, appeased by the oblation of the Sacrifice of Mass, grants us his graces and the remission of sins. It says: “It is one and the same victim; the one that offers sacrifice is the same one who, after having sacrificed himself on the Cross, offers himself now by the ministry of the priest; there is no difference except in the manner of offering.”<sup>2</sup>

Jesus Christ has, then, paid the price of our redemption in the Sacrifice of the Cross. But he wishes that the fruit of the ransom given should be applied to us in the Sacrifice of Altar, being himself in both the chief sacrificer, who offers the same victim, namely, his own body and his own blood;—with this difference only, that on the Cross his blood was shed, while it is not shed at the

<sup>1</sup> “Is igitur Deus et Dominus noster, etsi semel semetipsum in ara crucis, morte intercedente, Deo Patri oblaturus erat, ut æternam illic redemptionem operaretur; quia tamen per mortem sacerdotium ejus exstinguendum non erat; in cœna novissima, qua nocte tradebatur, ut dilectæ sponsæ suæ Ecclesiæ visibile, sicut hominum natura exigit, relinqueret sacrificium, quo cruentum illud semel in cruce peragendum repræsentaretur, ejusque memoria in finem usque sæculi permaneret, atque illius salutaris virtus in remissionem eorum, quæ a nobis quotidie committuntur, peccatorum applicaretur, Sacerdotem secundum ordinem Melchisedech se in æternum constitutum declarans, corpus et sanguinem suum sub speciebus panis et vini Deo Patri obtulit; ac, sub earumdem rerum symbolis, Apostolis, quos tunc Novi Testamenti Sacerdotes constituebat, ut sumerent, tradidit; et eisdem eorumque in sacerdotio successoribus, ut offerrent, præcepit per hæc verba: ‘Hoc facite in meam commemorationem;’ uti semper Catholica Ecclesia intellexit et docuit.”—*Sess. 22, c. 1.*

<sup>2</sup> “Una enim eademque est Hostia, idem nunc offerens Sacerdotis ministerio, qui seipsum tunc in cruce obtulit, sola offerendi ratione diversa.”—*Sess. 22, c. 2.*

altar. Hence the Roman catechism<sup>1</sup> teaches that the Sacrifice of the Mass does not serve only to praise God and to thank him for the gifts that he has granted us, but it is a true propitiatory sacrifice, by which we obtain from the Lord pardon for our sins and the graces of which we stand in need. Because the fruit of the death of Jesus Christ is applied to us by the Sacrifice of the Altar, the Church expresses herself thus in her prayers: "As often as the memory of the Sacrifice of the Cross is celebrated, so often is accomplished the work of our redemption."<sup>2</sup>

Now, in the Mass we find not only the three essential parts of the Sacrifice of the Cross,—that is, the sanctification and oblation of the victim, as also the immolation, which is here done mystically, the consecration of the body and that of the blood taking place separately,—but we also find the two other parts of the sacrifice; namely, the destruction or consumption, communion or partaking, of the victim. The destruction or consumption is accomplished by the natural heat of those who receive the consecrated Host. Communion or partaking of the victim consists in the distribution of the Holy Eucharist to the faithful who approach the altar for this purpose.

In this manner we clearly see realized in the Sacrifice of the Altar the five conditions required in the ancient sacrifices, all of which were signs and figures of the great Sacrifice of our Lord.\*

<sup>1</sup> P. 2, c. 4, q. 62.

<sup>2</sup> "Quoties hujus Hostiæ commemoratio celebratur, opus nostræ redemptionis exercetur."—*Dom. 9 p. Pent.*

---

\* It seems to us that the two explanations which we have just read—the explanation of the anonymous author and that of St. Alphonsus—about the consummation or the last two parts of the Sacrifice of Jesus Christ can be and should be admitted, should not exclude each other, but should be united. It was necessary that this great sacrifice, the only real sacrifice worthy of God, should be consummated in heaven and on earth at the same time, to unite to God



the body of Jesus Christ entirely; that is, the Church triumphant and the Church militant: in heaven, by the glorious union of Jesus Christ, of the Blessed Virgin, of the angels, of the saints with God, and among themselves in the bosom of God in which the sacrifice is perfect and eternal: on earth, by Holy Mass and Communion, in which all the faithful partake of the same victim under the Eucharistic veil. The body of the Redeemer, immolated on the Cross, had, therefore, to be transformed in a twofold manner; namely, by the resurrection, for the consummation of the sacrifice in heavenly glory; by the Eucharist, for the consummation of the sacrifice in earthly combats. This twofold consummation of the true sacrifice was typified in the ceremonies of the Old Law: the burning of the victim represented heavenly Communion, and the eating of it represented earthly Communion. But in heaven, as in Holy Mass, we have not only consummation, but we have all the parts of the Sacrifice of the Cross and of the sacrifices of the Old Law. Hence, three kinds of sacrifices, or three degrees, are to be distinguished. In the Old Law there were figures without the reality; in the New Law we have the reality under the figures or appearances; in glory we have the reality exposed and unveiled. Such is, briefly, the thought of Père De Coudren, wisely developed by him who published it. Such is, also, without doubt, the thought of St. Alphonsus; for otherwise we should not understand what he says on page 22, where he explains the text taken from Daniel.—ED.

## Short Explanation of the Prayers of Mass.

Mass is rightly divided into six parts. The first part is the preparation for the sacrifice ; and this is made at the foot of the altar. The second part extends from the Introit to the Credo, inclusively—and was formerly called the Mass of the Catechumens, who had to leave the church after the Credo. The third part contains the Offertory and the Preface. The fourth part comprises the Canon with the *Pater Noster* ; for the Canon in olden times finished with the *Pater Noster*, as a learned author concludes from a passage in the writings of St. Gregory the Great.<sup>1</sup> The fifth part begins with the prayer *Liberamur, quæsumus, Domine* (“ Deliver us, O Lord, we beseech Thee”), which is a preparation for Communion, and includes Communion. The sixth and last part comprises under the form of thanksgiving the rest of the Mass.

### FIRST PART.

**The Preparation that is made at the Foot of the Altar.**

*In nomine Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti. Amen* (“ In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen”).

In order to sacrifice a victim one must have the power over its life and death ; but as God only has the power over the life of his incarnate Son, who is the victim of the Sacrifice of the Mass, the priest needs divine authority in order to be able to offer Jesus Christ to his heavenly Father. Yet as he is invested with the authority that

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 1. 7, *ind.* 2, *cp.* 63.



belongs to the priesthood, he says, in union with Jesus Christ, who is the principal one that offers that sacrifice, In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; thus declaring that he offers the sacrifice by the authority of the three Persons.

The priest afterwards recites the antiphon *Introibo ad altare Dei* ("I will go unto the altar of God"), and the psalm *Judica me Deus* ("Judge me, O God"). He implores the help of God against the enemies who are laying snares for him. Then expressing the pain that he feels of seeing himself, as it were, rejected by the Lord, he begs him to assist him with his light, and to console him with the graces that he promised by leading him into his tabernacle. Finally, he reproaches himself for indulging in fear, for why should he be troubled when he has with him his God in whom he should confide?

Innocent III.<sup>1</sup> attests that the recitation before Mass of the psalm *Judica me* was the custom of his time, that is, in the twelfth century; and Cardinal Lambertini, afterwards Benedict XIV.,<sup>2</sup> assures us that it was recited before the eighth century. The psalm is concluded with the *Gloria Patri*. It was Pope St. Damasus who ordained that each psalm should be concluded in this manner. It is, however, believed that the *Gloria Patri* was introduced by the Council of Nice, or, as we are told by Baronius<sup>3</sup> and St. Basil, even by the Apostles, the Council of Nice having added only these words, *Sicut erat*, etc.

*Adjutorium nostrum in nomine Domini* ("Our help is in the name of the Lord"). Affrighted by the grandeur of the act he is about to perform, and by the thought of his unworthiness, the priest asks God's help in the name of Jesus Christ; and acknowledging himself guilty, he accuses himself of his sins, not only before God, but before the Blessed Virgin and all the saints, who on the

<sup>1</sup> *De Alt. Myst.* l. 2, c. 13.

<sup>2</sup> *De Missæ S.* l. 2, c. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Ann.* 325.

last day, with Jesus Christ, will pronounce judgment upon sinners.

*Deus, tu conversus, vivificabis nos* ("Thou, O Lord," says the priest, "wilt turn and bring us to life"). The sinner remains in death so long as God in his goodness does not come to restore to him the life of grace. Then he implores anew the divine mercy: *Ostende nobis, Domine, misericordiam tuam* ("Show us, O Lord, Thy mercy"); and supplicates the Lord to hear him: *Domine, exaudi orationem meam* ("O Lord, hear my prayer").

Before leaving the people to go up to the altar, the priest says to them, *Dominus vobiscum* ("The Lord be with you"). By these words he wishes and asks that Jesus Christ may grant to the people as well as to himself the effects of the prayers that he has said; and the server expresses to him the same wish when answering for all the people: *Et cum spiritu tuo* ("And with Thy spirit"). These reciprocal wishes indicate the union of faith in Jesus Christ that exists between the priest and the people.

*Aufer a nobis*, etc. ("Take away from us our iniquities, etc."). In going up the steps of the altar, the priest begs the Lord to deliver him from all iniquities, in order that he may approach the Holy of Holies with a pure heart; that is to say, in order that he may worthily offer up the great sacrifice.

*Oramus te, Domine, per merita Sanctorum tuorum*, etc. ("We beseech Thee, O Lord, by the merits of Thy saints, etc."). Having reached the altar, he kisses it, to unite himself to Jesus Christ, represented by the altar; and, through the merits of the holy martyrs whose relics are therein enclosed, he conjures our Lord to deign to pardon him all his sins.

From the first ages the Church was accustomed to offer up the Eucharistic sacrifice on the tombs of the martyrs who had sacrificed their lives for God, and who

for this reason have always been particularly honored in the Church. During the first period of the Church there were no other festivals than those of the mysteries of Jesus Christ, those of the Blessed Virgin, and the anniversaries of the martyrs. However, it is not to the saints, but only to God that altars are erected, "and," as St. Augustine says, "we have not erected an altar to the martyr, Stephen, but with the relics of the martyr Stephen we have erected an altar to God."<sup>1</sup>

## SECOND PART.

### From the Introit to the Credo.

It is usually in the Introit that the Church proposes the subject of the feast that is celebrated. Mention is therein made of some divine mystery, of the Blessed Virgin, or of some other saint whom the Church honors on that day, so that we simply render this honor to the saint, since the sacrifice, as we have said, is offered only to God. It is asserted that the author of the Introit is St. Gregory the Great, as may be seen in the works of Benedict XIV.<sup>2</sup>

*Kyrie, eleison ; Christe, eleison.* These are Greek words that mean "Lord, or Christ, have mercy." This prayer is addressed three times to the Father, three times to the Son, and three times to the Holy Ghost. Durand<sup>3</sup> says that Mass was begun to be said in Greek in the Oriental Church at the time of the Emperor Adrian I., about the year 140. Pope St. Sylvester ordered that, after the example of the Greeks, the *Kyrie eleison* should be said in the Latin Church. According to Cardinal Bellarmine<sup>4</sup> this custom was introduced into Italy about

<sup>1</sup> "Nos, in isto loco, non aram fecimus Stephano, sed de reliquiis Stephani aram Deo."—*Serm.* 318, *E. B.*

<sup>2</sup> *De Missæ S.* l. 2, c. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Ration.* l. 4, c. 1.

<sup>4</sup> *De Miss.* l. 2, c. 16.

a hundred and fifty years before St. Gregory. Thereby is shown the union that exists between the Greek and the Latin Church.

*Gloria in excelsis Deo*, etc. ("Glory be to God on high, etc."). This canticle or prayer is formed of the words that the celestial choirs used when the Angel came to announce to the shepherds the birth of the Saviour; "Glory to God in the highest: and on earth peace to men of good will."<sup>1</sup> The remaining words were added by the Church. In it God is thanked for his glory, because God has used our salvation for his glory by saving us through Jesus Christ, who, in offering himself as a sacrifice to his Father, has procured salvation for men, and has given, at the same time, infinite glory to God. Then the Church, addressing herself to Jesus Christ, asks him by the merits of his sacrifice to have pity on us; and she concludes by proclaiming him: *Quoniam tu solus Sanctus, tu solus Dominus, tu solus Altissimus, Jesu Christe, cum Sancto Spiritu in gloria Dei Patris. Amen* ("For Thou only art holy; Thou only art Lord; Thou only, O Jesus Christ, art Most High in the glory of God the Father. Amen"). For our Saviour, who sacrifices himself as a victim, is at the same time God, equal to Him to whom the sacrifice is offered.

Then follows the prayer or Collect, thus called because the priest, performing the office of mediator between God and men, collects all the prayers of the people, and presents them to God. The Collect is said in a suppliant manner, with outstretched and raised hands. In these prayers are asked of God the graces that have reference to the mystery of the day: for example, at Easter, the grace to rise with Jesus Christ, and at the Ascension to dwell with him in spirit in heaven; or we ask for those graces that we wish to obtain through the

<sup>1</sup> *Luke*, ii. 14.

intercession of the saint whose feast we are celebrating. But all these prayers are concluded with the name of Jesus Christ: *Per Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum* ("Through our Lord Jesus Christ"). Because all the graces that we obtain are given to us chiefly in view of the merits of Jesus Christ. It is not true, as the innovators say, that we offer the Sacrifice of the Altar to the saints. It is altogether false; for we know very well that the sacrifice, being a cult or worship that is due to the sovereign Lord of the universe, can be offered only to God; and if at the Mass we make mention of the saints, we do so only because of the favors that they have received from God, to whom they acknowledge they are indebted for all the happiness that they possess.

Here follow the Epistle and the Gospel. While listening to the reading of the Epistle, we must hear it as if it is God himself who speaks by the mouth of his prophets and apostles.

The Epistle is followed by the Gradual, which, according to Bellarmin, was sung in former times while the deacon ascended the steps of the *ambo*—an elevated pulpit—to read the Gospel. The Gradual was followed by the *Alleluia*, a Hebrew word that signifies *Praise the Lord*. But in Lent the *Alleluia*, which expresses joy, is replaced by the Tract, which Abbot Rupert calls the *lamentation of penitents* (*Pœnitentium lamentum*).

The priest then leaving the left side of the altar, which represents the Jewish people, passes to the right side, which represents the Gentiles, who accepted the Gospel that was rejected by the Jews. We should listen to the Gospel as if we heard the words of our divine Saviour instructing us himself, and we should at the same time ask him for the necessary help to put in practice what he teaches. It is an ancient custom to stand during the reading of the Gospel, to show that we are ready to fol-

low the precepts and counsels that our Lord points out to us.

*Credo* ("I believe"). While the priest is reciting the symbol, we should renew our faith in all the mysteries and all the dogmas that the Church teaches. By the *symbol* was formerly understood a military sign, a mark by which many recognize one another, and are distinguished from one another: this at present distinguishes believers from unbelievers. Benedict XIV.<sup>1</sup> tells us that at Rome the recitation of the symbol during Mass was begun only in the eleventh century.

### THIRD PART.

#### The Offertory and the Preface.

The Offertory embraces everything from the *Dominus vobiscum* till the Preface. In offering the bread and wine the priest calls them *the immaculate Host, the Chalice of salvation*. We should not be astonished at this; for all the prayers and all the ceremonies before and after the consecration have reference to the divine Victim. It is at the moment of consecration that the Victim presents himself to God, that he offers himself to him, and that the sacrifice is offered; but as these different acts cannot be explained at the same time, they are explained one after the other. The priest then offers by anticipation the bread prepared for the sacrifice, and while saying, *Suscipe, sancte Pater, hanc immaculatam Hostiam*, etc. ("Accept, O holy Father, this immaculate Host, etc."); and he offers the wine as if it had already been consecrated, by saying, *Offerimus tibi, Domine, Calicem salutaris*, etc. ("We offer unto Thee, O Lord, the Chalice of salvation, etc."); because this wine, being afterwards changed into the blood of Jesus Christ, becomes our sal-

<sup>1</sup> *De Missæ* S. l. 2, c. 8.



vation. St. Augustine says that as at the Eucharistic Table our Saviour offers us to eat and to drink his body and his blood, we should also offer to him our body and our blood by giving ourselves entirely to him, being ready to sacrifice our life for his glory, should it be necessary. These are the beautiful words of the holy Doctor: "You know what this banquet is, and what nourishment is offered you at this table. Since Jesus Christ gives entirely his body and his blood, let no one approach without giving himself entirely to the Lord."<sup>1</sup>

A little water is mixed with the wine to represent the mixture or the union that takes place in the Incarnation of the Word between the divinity and the humanity, and also to represent the intimate union that is effected in the sacramental Communion between Jesus Christ and the person who communicates—a union which St. Augustine calls *Mixtura Dei et hominis* ("A mixture of God and of man"). Hence the priest, in the prayer which he recites while mixing the water with the wine, beseeches God to grant that, as his divine Son became partaker of our humanity, we may be made partakers of his divinity. The Council of Trent declares that this mingling of water and of wine in the chalice is prescribed: "The holy Synod admonishes that it is enjoined on the priests by the Church that they should mix water with the wine that is to be offered in the chalice, as it is believed that the Lord has done the same thing."<sup>2</sup> However, this is only an ecclesiastical, not a divine precept.

*Offerimus tibi, Domine, Calicem salutaris*, etc. ("We offer unto Thee, O Lord, the Chalice of salvation, etc."). The chalice of salvation is offered to the Lord, so that it may

<sup>1</sup> "Mensa quæ sit, nostis; ibi est corpus et sanguis Christi; qui accedit ad talem mensam, præparet talia."—*In Jo. tr.* 47.

<sup>2</sup> "Monet sancta Synodus præceptum esse ab Ecclesia Sacerdotibus, ut aquam vino in calice offerendo miscerent; quod Christum Dominum ita fecisse credatur."—*Sess.* 22 c. 7.

arise in his divine presence as an agreeable odor, for our salvation and for the salvation of the whole world. Cardinal Bona,<sup>1</sup> in his Liturgy, assures us that neither in the *Sacramentarium* of St. Gregory, nor in other authors, is any prayer found for the offering of the bread and of the wine; however, the same Cardinal says that in the ancient Liturgy which he caused to be published we find the prayers that were recited by the clergy as well as by the faithful when the latter presented to the priest their offerings. Moreover, our French author says that the prayers recited at present by the priest at the oblation of the bread and of the wine have reference to the offerings which the faithful formerly made, not at the altar, but at the balustrade of the choir.

*In spiritu humilitatis et in animo contrito suscipiamur a te, Domine, etc.* ("In the spirit of humility, and with a contrite heart, let us be received by Thee, O Lord, etc."). The priest presents himself before our Lord with an humble and a contrite heart, and begs him to bless the great sacrifice that is about to be offered: *Veni, Sanctificator, etc.* ("Come, O Sanctifier, etc.").

Then he goes to wash his hands, out of respect for this divine sacrifice, while reciting the psalm *Lavabo inter innocentes manus meas, etc.* ("I will wash my hands among the innocent, etc.").

*Suscipe, Sancta Trinitas, etc.* ("Receive, O Holy Trinity, etc."). By this prayer the priest offers to God Jesus Christ as a victim already immolated by his death on the Cross. Heretics calumniate us when they affirm that we offer to God two different sacrifices, namely, the sacrifice of the Cross and that of the altar. We reply to them that there are not two sacrifices, since, as we have already explained elsewhere, the sacrifice of the altar is a memorial of the sacrifice of the Cross; it is really the

<sup>1</sup> *Lib. 2, c. 9, § 2.*



same sacrifice as that of the Cross, Jesus Christ being there the principal offerer and the victim that is offered.

*Orate, fratres*, etc. ("Brethren, pray, etc."). By these words the priest exhorts the people to supplicate the Lord to receive this sacrifice for the glory of his name and the good of the faithful. The server then answers in the name of the people by praying to God to accept this sacrifice: *Suscipiat Dominus Sacrificium de manibus tuis*, etc. ("May the Lord receive this sacrifice from thy hands, etc.").

Then follows the *Secret*, a prayer that refers to the offerings made by the people, namely, of the bread and wine that are to be changed into the body and the blood of Jesus Christ. The Church asks the Lord to bless them and to render them profitable, not only to those who present them, but to all the faithful, just as may be seen in the Secret of the fifth Sunday after Pentecost: "Mercifully receive, O Lord, these offerings of thy servants; that what each hath offered to the honor of thy name, may avail to the salvation of all."<sup>1</sup> Thus the Offertory is concluded.

Before passing to the Canon, the priest reads the Preface, in which he exhorts the faithful to raise their hearts to God: *Sursum corda* ("Lift up your hearts"). The people answer that they have already done so: *Habemus ad Dominum* ("We have lifted them to the Lord"). And the priest continues by inviting them to unite with him in thanking the Lord: *Gratias agamus Domino Deo nostro* ("Let us give thanks to our Lord God"). He afterwards says that it is just and salutary to render thanks through Jesus Christ, who alone can worthily give thanks for the eternal salvation and for so many benefits granted to men and also to angels, who also give thanks to God through Jesus Christ for all the gifts that they

<sup>1</sup> "Domine, has oblationes benignus assume, ut, quod singuli obtulerunt, cunctis proficiat."

have received. The priest entreats the Lord to accept our prayers united with those of the angels, who celebrate his glory by repeating without ceasing the canticle, *Sanctus, Sanctus, Sanctus, Dominus Deus Sabaoth!*<sup>1</sup> ("Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Hosts!"); and he concludes by repeating the words used by the Jewish people in their acclamations at the triumphant entry of Jesus into Jerusalem: *Benedictus, qui venit in nomine Domini! Hosanna in excelsis!*<sup>2</sup> ("Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!")

#### FOURTH PART.

##### The Canon.

*Te igitur, clementissime Pater, etc.* ("We therefore humbly pray and beseech Thee, most merciful Father, etc."). Here begins what we call the *Canon* of the Mass, which the Council of Trent declares to be free from every error,<sup>3</sup> since it is composed of the very words of our Lord, of the traditions of the apostles, and of pious regulations of the Holy See.<sup>4</sup> The Canon is very ancient: it was already in use in the fourth century, according to the testimony of St. Ambrose.<sup>5</sup> The priest first prays to his heavenly Father in the name of the whole Church, and through the merits of Jesus Christ, to accept and to bless the offerings that are made to him, and that are called gifts without spot: *Hæc dona, hæc munera, hæc sancta sacrificia illibata* ("These gifts, these presents, these holy unspotted sacrifices"). These words apply not only to the bread and the wine that have been offered, but refer by

<sup>1</sup> *Isa.* vi. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Matt.* xxi. 9.

<sup>3</sup> "Ab omni errore purum."

<sup>4</sup> "Is enim constat, cum ex ipsis Domini verbis, tum ex Apostolorum traditionibus, ac Sanctorum quoque Pontificum piis institutionibus."—*Sess.* 22, c. 4.

<sup>5</sup> *De Sacr.* l. 4, c. 4.

anticipation to the body and the blood of Jesus Christ, into which the bread and the wine are soon to be changed; hence they are called unspotted sacrifices. Innocent III. refers these last words to the purity of the heart and of the body with which the priest should celebrate Mass: "We call them by this name because of the purity of heart and of body with which the priest should offer them."<sup>1</sup> But this is rather a spiritual and mystical reflection, the proper explanation is that which precedes it above.

The Holy Sacrifice is, before all, offered for the Catholic Church by praying to God that he may preserve her in peace, may defend her, maintain her in unity, and govern her through the ministry of the pastors, by communicating to them his Holy Spirit. It must be observed that the prayers of the Church, during the Holy Sacrifice, should be addressed to God the Father, as was ordained by the Third Council of Carthage: "During the August Function the prayer should be addressed to God the Father."<sup>2</sup> It does not follow that the other divine Persons should be excluded from these prayers; but they are considered together in the Person of the Father, their first principle, and this is the reason why the Church is accustomed to pray to the Father, with the Son, in the Holy Ghost.

At the first *Memento*, the priest recommends, at first, all those persons for whom he wishes most especially to pray; then he recommends all those who, happening to be present, offer with him the Holy Sacrifice; finally, he recommends all their relatives and friends. He says: 1. *Pro quibus tibi offerimus, vel qui tibi offerunt* ("For whom we offer, or who offer up to Thee"). It must be remarked that the disjunctive particle *vel*, "or," is some-

<sup>1</sup> " 'Illibata,' quæ sine macula cordis et corporis oportet offerri."—*De Alt. Myst.* l. 3, c. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Cum altari assistitur, semper ad Patrem dirigatur oratio."—c. 23.

times conjunctive, and that it is probable that it is here taken in this last sense according to St. Gregory, as we are told by Benedict XIV. Moreover, it must be observed that there is a great difference between sacrificing and offering: to the priest alone belongs the right to sacrifice, whilst all those who are present may offer the sacrifice. 2. *Quorum tibi fides cognita est, et nota devotio* ("Whose faith is known, and devotion apparent unto Thee"). By these words we are to understand that in order to participate in the fruit of the sacrifice we must have faith and devotion, which spring from charity. 3. *Pro redemptione animarum suarum* ("For the redemption of their souls"). The first effect of the sacrifice of the Cross, which is applied to us by the sacrifice of the altar, is to become free from the power of the devil. 4. *Pro spe salutis et incolumitatis suæ* ("For the hope of their safety and salvation"). These words comprise all the spiritual and temporal graces that God grants to us by virtue of this sacrifice, through which alone we can render to God the thanks that we owe him.

*Communicantes et memoriam venerantes*, etc. ("Communicating with the saints and honoring the memory, etc."). This prayer is said in order to enter into communion with the Church triumphant. Thereby we honor, in the first place, the memory of the Mother of God, then that of the apostles, then that of the martyrs and of all the other saints, through the merits and the intercession of whom we beg our Lord's protection in all our necessities. We who are travellers upon earth form only one body with the saints who are in heaven, and united with them in the same spirit, we offer to God the same sacrifice.

*Hanc igitur oblationem*, etc. ("We therefore beseech Thee, O Lord, graciously to accept this oblation, etc."). The priest spreads his hands over the bread and the wine, and, through the merits of Jesus Christ, who re-

deemed us from the power of the devil, he prays to the Eternal Father favorably to accept this offering that his servants and his whole family make to him. He also asks God to help us to enjoy peace in this life, to preserve us from hell, and to admit us among the number of the elect: *Et in electorum tuorum jubeas grege numerari* ("And number us in the flock of Thine elect"). Estius observes that by these last words we do not ask of God predestination, as if God could change his eternal decrees, but we ask of him the effects of predestination, that he may draw us to himself and conduct us to eternal happiness.<sup>1</sup> In the Old Law he who offered sacrifice placed his hands on the victim to signify that just as this animal was soon to lose its life by immolation, so he also offered up his own life to God. It is with the same spirit of sacrifice that every priest should offer himself to God, when he spreads his hands over the host and the chalice.\*

*Quam oblationem tu, Deus in omnibus, quæsumus, benedictam, adscriptam, ratam, rationabilem, acceptabilemque facere digneris; ut nobis corpus et sanguis fiat dilectissimi Filii tui Domini nostri Jesu Christi* ("Which oblation do Thou, O God, vouchsafe in all respects to make blessed, approved, ratified, reasonable, and acceptable, that it may become to us the body and blood of Thy most beloved Son, Jesus Christ our Lord"). In this prayer the priest asks God to cause this oblation to be blessed (*benedictam*), that by this blessing the bread and the wine may be changed into the body and the blood

<sup>1</sup> "Non petimus immutari æternum Dei propositum, sed causam pro effectu ponimus, orantes ut Deus nos ad se convertat atque ad æternam felicitatem perducatur; qui sunt effectus prædestinationis."—*In Sent.* l. 1, d. 40, § 22.

\* Such should also be, in this grave ceremony, the sentiments of all the faithful, who, we should not forget, offer the holy sacrifice jointly with the priest.—ED.

of Jesus Christ ; that it may be admitted (*adscriptam*),—that is, substracted from all profane usage and wholly consecrated to the divine Majesty; ratified (*ratam*), that is, approved as a perfect sacrifice ; reasonable or rational (*rationabilem*),—this includes an allusion to a passage in the Epistle to the Romans, in which St. Paul says : “ I beseech you . . . that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, pleasing unto God, your reasonable service;”<sup>1</sup> acceptable (*acceptabilem*),—that is, altogether agreeable and worthy of being received, differently from the victims and the oblations of the Hebrew people, which were not sufficient to appease the divine justice incensed against sinners ; and, finally, *Ut nobis corpus et sanguis fiat dilectissimi Filii tui* (“That it may become to us the body and blood of Thy most beloved Son” ). The priest, according to St. Thomas, does not thereby ask that the consecration be accomplished, but that it be profitable to us.<sup>2</sup>

*Qui, pridie quam pateretur*, etc. (“Who the day before he suffered,” etc.). Here the priest, renewing the memory of the Passion of Jesus Christ, relates what the Lord did on the evening before his death, when he instituted the Sacrament and the sacrifice of his body and blood. Then the priest does the same thing, and consecrates by pronouncing the very words used by Jesus Christ, as St. Ambrose remarks: “He uses not his own words, but the very words of Jesus Christ.”<sup>3</sup>

The form of the consecration is taken from St. Matthew : *Hoc est corpus meum* (“This is my body”).<sup>4</sup> These words need no explanation, since they themselves

<sup>1</sup> “Exhibeatis corpora vestra hostiam viventem, sanctam, Deo placentem, rationabile obsequium vestrum.”—*Rom.* xii. i.

<sup>2</sup> “Non ut consecratio impleatur, sed ut nobis fiat fructuosa.”—P. 3, q. 83, a. 4.

<sup>3</sup> “Non suis sermonibus, sed utitur sermonibus Christi.”—*De Sacr.* i. 4, c. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Matt.* xxvi. 26.



declare what mystery is accomplished, namely, the change of the bread into the body of Jesus Christ.

The form of the consecration of the chalice is as follows: *Hic est enim calix Sanguinis mei, novi et æterni Testamenti, mysterium fidei, qui pro vobis et pro multis effundetur in remissionem peccatorum* ("For this is the chalice of my blood of the new and eternal testament, the mystery of faith, which shall be shed for you, and for many, to the remission of sins"). These words the Church has taken from different texts of the Gospel, partly from St. Luke, partly from St. Matthew. St. Luke says: *This is the chalice, the new testament in my blood, which shall be shed for you.*<sup>1</sup> St. Matthew: *For this is my blood of the new testament which shall be shed for many unto remission of sins.*<sup>2</sup> The word *æterni*, "everlasting," is found in St. Paul: *In the blood of the everlasting testament.*<sup>3</sup> The other words, *Mystery of faith*, the Roman catechism declares are taught by sacred tradition, which is the guardian of Catholic truths. This divine mystery is called *Mystery of faith*, not to exclude the reality of the blood of Jesus Christ, but to show that in it the faith shines forth in a wonderful manner, and triumphs over all the difficulties that may be raised by human reason, since it is here, says Innocent III.,<sup>4</sup> that we see one thing and believe another. We believe, he adds, that the form that we read in the Canon was received from Jesus Christ by the Apostles, and that they transmitted it to their successors.<sup>5</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> "Hic est calix novum Testamentum in Sanguine meo, qui pro vobis fundetur."—*Luke*, xxii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> "Hic est enim Sanguis meus novi Testamenti, qui pro multis effundetur in remissionem peccatorum."—*Matt.* xxvi. 28.

<sup>3</sup> "In sanguine Testamenti æterni."—*Heb.* xiii. 20.

<sup>4</sup> "Quoniam aliud ibi cernitur, aliud creditur."—*De Alt. Myst.* l. 4, c. 36.

<sup>5</sup> "Sane formam istam verborum ab ipso Christo acceperunt Apostoli, et ab ipsis Apostolis accepit Ecclesia."—*Ibid.* c. 5.



## 44 *Short Explanation of the Prayers of Mass.*

Roman catechism,<sup>1</sup> moreover, says, that the words of consecration should be thus understood: It is my blood that is contained in the chalice of the New Testament. This signifies that men receive no longer the figure of the blood of Jesus Christ, as was the case in the Old Law; but they really receive the true blood of the New Testament. The words *Pro vobis et pro multis* ("For you and for many") are used to distinguish the virtue of the blood of Christ from its fruits; for the blood of our Saviour is of sufficient value to save all men, but its fruits are applicable only to a certain number and not to all, and this is their own fault. Or, as the theologians say, this precious blood is (in itself) sufficiently (*sufficienter*) able to save all men, but (on our part) effectually (*efficaciter*) it does not save all—it saves only those who co-operate with grace. This is the explanation of St. Thomas, as quoted by Benedict XIV.\*

The consecration is followed by the elevation of the host and of the chalice: this is done, writes Sassi, in order to prove the truth of the Eucharist which was attacked by Berengarius at the beginning of the twelfth century. The same truth is again professed at the second elevation shortly before the *Pater noster*, when the priest says, *Omnis honor et gloria* ("All honor and glory"). It was also at the time of the heresy of Berengarius that the custom was introduced of ringing the bell at the elevation of the Host and of the chalice.

<sup>1</sup> P. 2, c. 4, q. 20.

\* *De Miss. Sacr.* l. 2, c. 15.—Benedict XIV. here observes that St. Thomas (P. 3, q. 18, a. 3) seems to favor the opinion of those who make the essential form of the consecration of the chalice consist in all the words that the priest pronounces as far as *Hæc quotiescumque*; because the words that follow, *Hic est enim calix sanguinis mei*, are *determinationes prædicati*, that is to say, *sanguinis Christi*, and consequently, belonging *ad integritatem ejusdem locutionis*, are *de substantia formæ*. St. Pius V. caused the contrary opinion to be erased from the commentary of Cajetan.

*Hæc quotiescumque feceritis, in mei memoriam facietis* ("As often as ye do these things, ye shall do them in remembrance of me"). After the two consecrations the priest repeats the words of Jesus Christ, by which our Saviour commanded his Apostles and their successors to do, in memory of his Passion, what he had just done himself in their presence.

*Unde et memores, Domine*, etc. ("Wherefore, O Lord, . . . calling to mind," etc.). Here the priest calls to mind the Passion of our Lord, his resurrection, and ascension. He offers to the divine majesty in the name of the Church the consecrated victim, which he calls a *pure* Host, exempt from every sin; *holy*, being united with the divinity in the person of the Word; *immaculate*, without any stain; and then, "The holy bread of eternal life, and the chalice of everlasting salvation." While pronouncing these words he blesses the bread and the chalice with the sign of the cross. On this subject Luther turns to ridicule the Roman Church by asking how the priest blesses Jesus Christ—how the creature blesses the Creator. We answer here that the priest blesses the Host, not by his own authority, nor in his own name, but in the name and by the authority of the Eternal Father, who alone can bless Jesus Christ as man and as victim. Such is the answer given on this point by Innocent III. St. Thomas answers differently by saying that after the consecration the priest does not make the sign of the cross to bless, but only to remind us of the power of the cross and of the death of our Lord.<sup>1</sup>

*Supra quæ propitio*, etc. ("Upon which vouchsafe to look," etc.). The priest then prays to the Lord that he

<sup>1</sup> "Sacerdos, post consecrationem, non utitur cruce signatione ad benedicendum et consecrandum, sed solum ad commemorandum virtutem crucis et modum passionis Christi. quæ ad crucem est terminata."—P. 3, q. 83, a. 5.

may accept with pleasure this sacrifice, just as he accepted the offerings of Abel, the sacrifice of Abraham, and that of Melchisedech. In recalling to mind the sacrifice of Abel, of Abraham, and of Melchisedech, we regard less the value of the things offered than the sanctity of those who offered them, because they were holy men. Consequently, if God, because of his sanctity, favorably received their sacrifice, how much more should please him the sacrifice of the Saint of saints—of our Lord Jesus Christ! But the most decisive reason on account of which the Church makes special mention of these three sacrifices is, because they represented in an excellent manner the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

*Supplices te rogamus*, etc. ("We most humbly beseech Thee," etc.). The priest continues humbly to ask the Saviour that the consecrated Host be presented to his divine Majesty through the hands of his holy Angel, in order that all those who are going to receive the body and the blood of his adorable Son may be filled with blessings and all celestial gifts through the merits of Jesus Christ. By the Angel of whom mention is made in this prayer, we may understand the Angel who presides at the Sacrifice of the Altar, or, as our French author says, we may understand Jesus Christ himself, who is pre-eminently the Holy Angel, called in Scripture the Angel of the Great Counsel. But the explanation of St. Thomas seems to be the most natural. The priest, he says, speaks for the Church, and asks that the Angel who presides at the divine mysteries may present to God the prayers of the celebrant and of the people.<sup>1</sup>

*Memento etiam, Domine*, etc. ("Be mindful, O Lord," etc.). The priest asks the Lord to remember his servants who have passed to the other life and are slumber-

<sup>1</sup> "Sacerdos petit hoc pro corpore mystico, ut scilicet orationes Sacerdotis et populi Angelus assistens divinis mysteriis Deo repræsentet."—P. 3, q. 83, a. 4.

ing in the sleep of peace, and to grant them a place of refreshment, light, and peace, through the merits of Jesus Christ. When the charity of the souls that depart from this life is not sufficient to purify them, the fire of purgatory will supply this defect. Yet the charity of the Saviour supplies it best by means of the Eucharistic sacrifice, which procures for these holy souls great mitigation of their sufferings, and often deliverance from their torments. The Council of Trent says: "The souls there detained are helped by the suffrages of the faithful, but principally by the acceptable sacrifice of the altar."<sup>1</sup> And it adds<sup>2</sup> that this is a tradition of the Apostles. St. Augustine exhorts us to offer the sacrifice for all the dead, in case the souls that we recommend cannot receive our help.

*Nobis quoque peccatoribus*, etc. ("And to us sinners," etc.). Here the Church prays for sinners, in order that God may vouchsafe, in his mercy, to permit them to enter the society of the saints; and she asks this grace through the merits of Jesus Christ. She then adds:

*Per quem hæc omnia semper bona creas*, etc. ("By whom, O Lord, Thou dost always create," etc.). By the Word Thou hast created this bread and wine, and now, by the same Word, Thou hast sanctified (*sanctificas*) them by reserving them for the sacrifice. Thou hast quickened them (*vivificas*) by changing them into the body and the blood of Jesus Christ; Thou hast *blessed* (*benedicis*) them and transformed them into a source of benediction for the Church of Christ; and, finally, *Thou hast given us all these good things* (*et præstas nobis*) by distributing them to the faithful in Holy Communion. And all these favors the Church asks through the merits of Jesus Christ: *Per ipsum*, that is, through him; *cum ipso*, in

<sup>1</sup> "Animas ibi detentas, fidelium suffragiis, potissimum vero acceptabili altaris Sacrificio juvari."—*Sess. 25, Decr. de Purg.*

<sup>2</sup> *Sess. 22, c. 2.*

## 48 *Short Explanation of the Prayers of Mass.*

union with our Saviour; *in ipso*, in him as the members are in the body, since God recognizes as his own only those who are united with Jesus Christ.

### THE PATER NOSTER.

*Oremus. Præceptis salutaribus moniti*, etc. ("Instructed by Thy saving precepts, etc."). The Church militant regards herself as entirely composed of sinners; she thinks herself unworthy to call God her Father, and to address to him the seven petitions, which in the name of the faithful she is going to address to him by reciting the *Pater noster*, ("Our Father"). Hence she protests that she only dares to address to God this prayer because God himself has commanded her to do so. She then teaches us that we may venture to present to God the seven petitions which contain the whole economy of our salvation, because it is pleasing to him and he himself gives us the command. We are so miserable, and our mind is so limited, that we do not even know what graces we should ask of God in behalf of our own salvation. Regarding our poverty and our insufficiency, Jesus Christ himself deigned to compose our prayer or to indicate the subjects on which we should address Almighty God. He instructs us to say :

*Pater noster, qui es in cælis* ("Our Father, who art in heaven, etc.). The Apostle St. John says: *Behold what manner of charity the Father hath bestowed upon us that we should be called, and should be the sons of God.*<sup>1</sup> It is assuredly only by the effect of extreme love that we worms of the earth have been enabled to become the children of God, not by nature, but by adoption; and such is the immense grace that the Son of God has obtained for us by becoming man; for St. Paul says: *You have received the*

<sup>1</sup> "Videte qualem charitatem dedit nobis Pater, ut Filii Dei nominemur et simus."—I *John*, iii. 1.

*spirit of adoption of sons, whereby we cry, Abba (Father).<sup>1</sup>* Can a subject wish for greater happiness than to be adopted by his king? or a creature to be adopted by its Creator? This is what God has done for us; and he wishes that we should address to him with filial confidence the following prayer:

1. *Sanctificetur nomem tuum* ("Hallowed be Thy name"). God cannot possess a greater sanctity than that which he possesses from all eternity, because he is infinite; hence what we ask in this prayer is merely that God may make known in every place his holy name, and that he may make himself loved by all men: by unbelievers, who know him not; by heretics, who do not know him in the right manner; and by sinners, who know him but do not love him.

2. *Adveniat regnum tuum* ("Thy kingdom come"). Two kinds of dominion God exercises over our souls—the dominion of grace and the dominion of glory. By these words we ask for both, namely, that the grace of God may reign among us in this life, that it may direct and govern us, so that one day we may be judged worthy of glory, and may have the happiness to possess God and be possessed by him for all eternity.

3. *Fiat voluntas tua, sicut in cælo, et in terra* ("Thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven"). The whole perfection of a soul consists in the perfect accomplishment of the will of God, as is done by the blessed in heaven. Hence Jesus Christ wishes us to ask the grace to accomplish the will of God upon earth, as the angels and saints accomplish it in heaven.

4. *Panem nostrum quotidianum da nobis hodie* ("Give us this day our daily bread"). Such is the text as we find it in St. Luke.<sup>2</sup> By this prayer we ask God for the temporal

<sup>1</sup> "Accepistis Spiritum adoptionis, in quo clamamus: Abba (Pater)." —Rom. viii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Luke, xi. 3.



goods of which we stand in need to sustain our present life. The words "Our daily bread" teach us that we should ask for this kind of goods with moderation, after the example of Solomon, who asked only what was necessary: *Give me only the necessities of life.*<sup>1</sup> It is to be remarked that in the Gospel of St. Matthew, instead of the *daily bread*, we read, *Give us this day our supersubstantial<sup>2</sup> bread.\** By this supersubstantial bread we must understand, according to the explanation given by the Roman catechism, Jesus Christ himself in the Sacrament of the Altar, that is, in Holy Communion. We ask this heavenly bread every day, *Give us this day*, because every good Christian should communicate every day, if not really at least spiritually, as we are exhorted by the Council of Trent.

5. *Et dimitte nobis debita nostra, sicut et nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris* ("And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us"). To eat worthily of this heavenly bread, we must be free from mortal sin, or at least be washed of it by the blood of the Lamb in the sacrament of penance. We say, *free from mortal sin*; but it must be observed that if any one should communicate with an actual affection for some venial sin, he could not be said to communicate without offering some indignity to our Lord—at least if he communicates often.

6. *Et ne nos inducas in tentationem* ("And lead us not into temptation"). How are these words to be under-

<sup>1</sup> "Tribue tantum victui meo necessaria."—*Prov.* xxx. 8.

<sup>2</sup> "Supersubstantialem."—*Matt.* vi. 11.

---

\* These two expressions are not opposed to each other; on the contrary, one explains the other. We ask, in the one as in the other, what is each day necessary for the subsistence of the body and of the soul; but we chiefly ask for spiritual nourishment, and, above everything else, for the Holy Eucharist, which is pre-eminently and beyond comparison called the bread of life and the true bread of the children of God: *Panis vitæ, vere Panis filiorum.*—ED.



stood? Does God sometimes tempt us—does he lead us into temptation? No; for St. James says: *God is not a tempter of evils, and He tempteth no man.*<sup>1</sup> This text we must understand as we do that of Isaias: *Blind the heart of this people . . . lest they see.*<sup>2</sup> God never blinds any sinner, but he often refuses to grant to some, in punishment for their ingratitude, the light that he would have given them had they remained faithful and grateful. Hence when it is said that God makes any one blind, it is meant that he withholds the light of his grace. This, therefore is the sense of the prayer, *and lead us not into temptation*; we ask God not to permit us to have the misfortune of being in those occasions of sin in which we might fall. Hence we should always watch and pray as the Lord exhorts us to do, in order not to fall into, temptation: *Watch ye, and pray that ye enter not into temptation.*<sup>3</sup> To enter into temptation means the same as to find one's self in the danger of falling into sin; we should therefore often say to God, *Lord, lead us not into temptation.*

7. *Sed libera nos a malo* ("But deliver us from evil"). There are three kinds of evils from which we should ask the Lord to deliver us—the temporal evils of the body, the spiritual evils of the soul, and the eternal evils of the next life. As for the temporal evils of this life, we ought always to be disposed to receive with resignation those that God sends us for the good of our souls, such as poverty, sickness, and desolation; and when we ask God to deliver us from temporal evils we should always do so on condition that they are not necessary nor useful for our salvation. But the true evils from which we

<sup>1</sup> "Deus enim intentator malorum est; ipse autem neminem tentat."—*James*, i. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Excæca cor populi hujus . . . ne forte videat."—*Isa.* vi. 10.

<sup>3</sup> "Vigilate et orate, ut non intretis in temptationem."—*Matt.* xxvi. 41.

should absolutely pray to be delivered are spiritual evils, sins, which are the cause of eternal evils. Moreover, let us be convinced of this infallible truth, that in the present state of corrupt nature we cannot be saved unless we pass through the many tribulations with which this life is filled: *Through many tribulations we must enter into the kingdom of God.*<sup>1</sup>

The priest finishes the Lord's prayer with the word *Amen*, which he pronounces in a low voice, because he represents the person of Jesus Christ, who is the foundation of all the divine promises.\* This word is a summary of all the petitions that have been made—petitions the repetition of which pleases the Lord, for the more we pray to God the more he will hear our prayers. The great people of this world are not pleased when they are importuned by petitions; but this importunity is pleasing to God, says St. Jerome.<sup>2</sup> Cornelius à Lapide even assures us that God wishes that we should persevere in this importunity in our prayers.<sup>3</sup>

## FIFTH PART.

### From the Prayer "*Libera nos*" till the Communion.

Immediately after the *Pater noster* the priest recites the prayer *Libera nos, quæsumus, Domine* ("Deliver us, O Lord"), by which he asks the Lord for himself and for all the faithful to grant, through the intercession of the Blessed Virgin, of the apostles and of all the saints, a continual peace during the days of the present life, so

<sup>1</sup> "Per multas tribulationes oportet nos intrare in regnum Dei."—*Acts*, xiv. 21.

<sup>2</sup> "Oratio, quamvis importuna, plus amica est."—*Hom. in Matt.*

<sup>3</sup> "Vult Deus nos in oratione esse perseverantes usque ad importunitatem."—*In Luc.* xi. 8.

---

\* This signifies that the divine Mediator gives support to our prayer and renders it efficacious.—ED.

that his divine mercy may preserve them from every sin and from all confusion.

He then says, *Pax Domini sit semper vobiscum* ("May the peace of the Lord be always with you"). He wishes the peace of the Lord for all his brethren, who answer him with the same wish: *Et cum spiritu tuo* ("And with thy spirit"). He makes at the same time upon the chalice, with the particle of the Host which he holds in his hand, three signs of the cross, which indicates, according to St. Thomas,<sup>1</sup> the three days that Jesus Christ spent in the tomb.

The priest then drops the sacred particle into the chalice and says these words: *Hæc commixtio et consecratio Corporis et Sanguinis Domini nostri Jesu Christi fiat accipientibus nobis in vitam æternam!* ("May this mixture and consecration of the body and blood of our Lord Jesus Christ be to us that receive it effectual to eternal life"). Explaining these words, *Consecratio . . . fiat*, Bellarmin says that we do not here ask that the consecration should take place, but that it be profitable for eternal life to those who are about to receive Jesus Christ in Holy Communion.<sup>2</sup> This mixture of the holy species represents the union of the divinity with the humanity which was at first effected in the womb of Mary through the Incarnation of the Word, and which is renewed in the souls of the faithful when they receive him in the Eucharistic Communion.

*Agnus Dei, qui tollis peccata mundi* ("Lamb of God, who takest away the sins of the world"). Before Communion the Lamb of God, Jesus Christ, as the victim of the sacrifice, is invoked, and is invoked three times, to point out

<sup>1</sup> P. 3, q. 83, a. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Non enim petimus ut nunc fiat Consecratio, sed ut Consecratio, antea facta, sit nobis ad vitam æternam salutaris."—*De Miss.* l. 2, c.

the need that we have of his grace, in order to be reconciled with God and to receive his peace.

Here follow the three prayers that precede Communion.

In the first prayer—*Domine Jesu Christe, qui dixisti Apostolis tuis, Pacem relinquo vobis* ("Lord Jesus Christ, who said to Thy Apostles, I leave you peace")—prayer is offered to God that he may vouchsafe to grant peace to the Church in consideration of her faith, and keep her in union, according to his will, by delivering her from the division produced by false doctrines, and from all that is contrary to the divine will.—And here the Church has introduced the custom that the faithful should give one another the kiss of peace, to remind them that their hearts should be united in charity. Before giving the kiss of peace, the priest kisses the altar, to show that he cannot give the peace unless he has first received it from Jesus Christ, who is represented by the altar.

In the second prayer, *Domine Jesu Christe, Fili Dei vivi*, the priest asks Jesus Christ, by virtue of his adorable body and blood, to deliver him from all evils, and to keep him always united with him.

In the third prayer he beseeches the Lord that this Communion may not turn to his condemnation, but may be for the salvation of his soul and body.—The Holy Eucharist protects the soul against temptations and passions; it extinguishes the fire of concupiscence that burns in our bodies, and is a powerful remedy against the death of the soul.

After these prayers the priest says, while invoking the name of the Lord, *Panem cælestem accipiam, et nomen Domini invocabo* ("I will take the bread of heaven, and call upon the name of our Lord"). In order that the earthly food may be of benefit to us, we must eat it when we are hungry; in like manner, in order that Communion may produce in us much fruit, we should receive it with

great desire to possess Jesus Christ and to love him ardently. As John Gerson says, we ought, at the moment in which we are about to receive Jesus, invoke him anew, in order to obtain the grace to receive him with great profit to our souls.

*Corpus (Sanguis) Domini nostri Jesu Christi custodiat animam meam in vitam æternam* ("May the Body (Blood) of our Lord Jesus Christ preserve my soul to life everlasting"). While pronouncing these words the priest receives the body and the blood of Jesus Christ. This prayer recalls to our mind that this precious body and blood are given to us as a pledge of eternal life, and as a *viaticum* in order to pass from this exile to our heavenly country. Hence when we receive Communion we ought to be so disposed as if we had to leave the earth at once, to enter eternity.

## SIXTH PART.

### Thanksgiving.

*Quid retribuam Domino pro omnibus quæ retribuit mihi?* ("What shall I render to the Lord for all he hath rendered unto me?") The priest says, *For all, etc.*, because he who receives Jesus Christ in Communion receives all the gifts and all the goods that one can desire, according to the words of St. Paul: *How hath He not also, with Him, given us all things.*<sup>1</sup> He says, *What shall I render?* because man is not capable of thanking God as he should thank him. Jesus Christ only can worthily thank the Eternal Father for the gifts that he bestowed upon men. The priest therefore adds: *Calicem salutaris accipiam, et nomen Domini invocabo* ("I will take the chalice of salvation, and call upon the name of the Lord"). He suppli-

<sup>1</sup> "Quomodo non etiam cum illo omnia nobis donavit?"—*Rom. viii.*  
32.

cates the Divine Redeemer to thank the heavenly Father for himself and for all men.

After having taken the precious blood he renews his thanks to God in the following words: *Quod ore sumpsimus, Domine, pura mente capiamus, et de munere temporali fiat nobis remedium sempiternum* ("Grant, O Lord, that what we have taken with our mouth we may receive with a pure mind, that of a temporal gift it may become to us an eternal remedy"). By this prayer the Church makes us ask God that, as our mouth has received this divine food and drink, our hearts may also receive them, so that they may be for us an eternal remedy that may forever heal us of all our infirmities.

Finally the priest says, *Corpus tuum, Domine, quod sumpsi, et Sanguis quem potavi, adhæreat visceribus meis* ("May Thy body, O Lord, which I have received, and the blood which I have drunk, cleave to my bowels"). In this prayer, and in the last prayer called Post-communion, he asks, through the merits of Jesus Christ in this mystery, and through the intercession of the saint whose memory is celebrated, that this divine Saviour may always preserve him in this intimate union with him, and that no stain may rest on his soul, which has been nourished by a sacrament so holy and so pure.

*Ite, Missa est* ("Go, the Mass is ended"); or, *Benedicamus Domino* ("Let us bless the Lord"). It is with these words that the priest dismisses the people, just as if he said, The Sacrifice is accomplished; and those who are present while thanking God by the mouth of the server, say, *Deo Gratias* ("Thanks be to God"). "To give thanks to God," says St. Augustine, "is to acknowledge that all good things come from God, and to thank him for them."<sup>1</sup>

The priest afterwards passes to the right side of the

<sup>1</sup> "*Deo gratias agere, est sentire omnia bona a Deo data esse, et pro ipsis Deum laudare.*"



altar, and recites the Gospel of St. John: *In principio erat Verbum* ("In the beginning was the Word"). William de Bury says that it was St. Pius V. who ordained that this Gospel should always be recited at the end of Mass; as formerly some said it, and others omitted it.

---

This explanation of the prayers of Mass may be serviceable to all—to the faithful as well as to priests.



## HEARING MASS.\*

In order to hear Mass with devotion, it is necessary to know that the sacrifice of the altar is the same as that which was once offered on Calvary, with this difference, that on Calvary the blood of Jesus Christ was really shed, but on the altar it is shed only in a mystical manner. Had you been present on Calvary, with what devotion and tenderness would you have attended that great sacrifice! Enliven your faith, then, and consider that the same action is performed on the altar, and that the same sacrifice is offered not only by the priest, but also by all who attend Mass. Thus, all perform, in a certain manner, the office of priests during the celebration of the Mass, in which the merits of the Passion of our Saviour are applied to us in a particular manner.

It is, moreover, necessary to know that the sacrifice of the Mass has been instituted for four ends. 1. To honor God. 2. To satisfy for our sins. 3. To thank God for his benefits. 4. To obtain the divine graces. Thence arise the following considerations which may aid us to hear Mass with great fruit :

1. By the oblation of the person of Jesus Christ, God and man, to the Eternal Father, we give to God infinite honor ; we give him greater honor than he would receive from the oblation of the lives of all men and all angels.

2. By the oblation of Jesus Christ in the Mass, we offer to God a complete satisfaction for all the sins of men, and especially for the sins of those who are present at Mass ; to whom is applied the same divine blood, by

---

\* We add this paragraph that it may serve as a practical conclusion. It is taken from the "True Spouse of Christ," chap. 24, § 4.

which the human race was redeemed on Calvary. Thus, by each Mass more satisfaction is made to God than by any other expiatory work. But although the Mass is of infinite value, God accepts it only in a finite manner, according to the dispositions of those who attend the holy sacrifice, and, therefore, it is useful to hear several Masses.

3. In the Mass we render to God an adequate thanksgiving for all the benefits that he has bestowed upon us.

4. During the Mass we can obtain all the graces that we desire for ourselves and for others. We are unworthy of receiving any grace from God, but Jesus Christ has given us the means of obtaining all graces, if, while we offer him to God in the Mass, we ask them of the Eternal Father in his name, for then Jesus himself unites with us in prayer. If you knew that while you pray to the Lord, the divine Mother, along with the whole of paradise, united with you, with what confidence would you pray? Now when you ask of God any grace during the Mass, Jesus (whose prayers are more efficacious than the prayers of all who are in heaven) prays for you, and offers in your behalf the merits of his Passion.

You will do well, then, to divide the Mass into four parts, as follows :

*1. From the Beginning to the Gospel.*

Offer the sacrifice of the Mass to honor God, saying :  
My God, I adore Thy majesty. I would wish to honor Thee as much as Thou deservest ; but what honor can I, a miserable sinner, give Thee ? I offer Thee the honor which Jesus renders to Thee on this altar.

*2. From the Gospel to the Elevation.*

Offer the sacrifice in satisfaction for your sins, saying :  
Lord, I detest above every evil all the offences that I

have given Thee : I am sorry for them above all things, and in satisfaction for them I offer Thy Son, who sacrifices himself again for us on this altar, and through his merits I pray Thee to pardon me, and to give me holy perseverance.

3. *From the Elevation to the Communion.*

Offer Jesus to the Eternal Father in thanksgiving for all the graces that he has bestowed upon you, saying :

Lord, I am unable to thank Thee ; I offer Thee the blood of Jesus Christ in this Mass, and in all the Masses that are at this moment celebrated throughout the world.

4. *From the Communion to the End.*

You will ask with confidence the graces that you need, and particularly sorrow for your sins, the gift of perseverance, and of the divine love ; and you will recommend to God, in a special manner, the persons with whom you live, your relatives, poor sinners, and the souls in purgatory. I do not find it amiss if you recite vocal prayers during Mass,\* but I desire that you should not fail at the same time to fulfil the four duties to God that I have pointed out to you ; namely, honor, expiation, thanksgiving, and prayer. I desire you to hear as many Masses as possible. Every Mass heard in this manner will obtain for you a treasure of merits.

---

\* See Vol. I., *A Christian's Rule of Life*, chap. 2, § 4.

## Pious Exercise to acquire the Proper Disposition for making a good Confession.\*

### *Preparation.*

To prepare ourselves well for confession, we should retire from every external source of distraction, go either to a church or an oratory, place ourselves in the presence of God, and make the following act:

### *Act of Adoration.*

Supreme and adorable Majesty, God of heaven and earth, I firmly believe that Thou art present, and that Thou seest me and knowest the dispositions of my heart. I adore Thee and render Thee my humble homage, acknowledging Thee for my God, my Creator, and my Sovereign Redeemer. In testimony of this my faith, I prostrate my soul and body before the throne of Thy Infinite Majesty, and offer Thee the adoration which is due to Thee alone.

---

\* We find this exercise, with that which is mentioned at the end of the Novena to the Holy Ghost, in an old edition of the Reflections and Affections on the Passion (*Operette spir.*, p. 2. Napoli, 1769). The act which concludes it—the Offering of the Mass—shows that it here finds a suitable place in connection with the Holy Sacrifice, as it does elsewhere in connection with Holy Communion.—There are other shorter Acts for Confession in the Christian's Rule of Life, chap. ii. § 3. On the advantages of frequent confession, and the manner how to approach worthily this sacrament, see True Spouse of Christ, chap. xviii. § 1, and Instructions on the Commandments and the Sacraments, part ii. chap. 5.—ED.

*Examination of Conscience.*

We ought to represent confession to ourselves as the last one of our life, and dispose ourselves to make it as one would do who is at the point of death. We should ask God for the grace to make well the examination of conscience, and for the necessary light to know well our sins. Hence let us recite the *Veni Creator Spiritus*.

O Father of lights! who enlightenest every man that comes into the world, send into my heart a ray of light, of love, and of sorrow, that I may know, detest, and confess the sins which I have committed against Thee.

*Prayer before the Examination of Conscience.*

Mother of my God, who art so charitable to sinners that desire to repent, assist me by thy intercession.—My guardian angel, who hast been a spectator of all my crimes, help me to discover the sins which I have committed against my God.—All ye saints of heaven, pray for me, that I may bring forth fruits of penance. Amen.

*Offering of the Examination.*

Jesus, my God and Saviour, I offer Thee the examination which I am going to make, that Thy divine justice may be glorified in it. I look to Thee with confidence for the grace to do it well. Thus, therefore, in the spirit of charity, in order to please Thee, and to accomplish Thy holy will, together with every intention that can procure Thee the greatest honor and glory, I undertake it.

Here the penitent must begin the examination of his conscience. But it must be observed by persons of a timorous disposition, who often approach the sacraments, that their examination ought to be short and unaccompanied with disquietude and scrupulosity. It is sufficient for persons of this description to take a momentary view of the faults into which they are ac-

customed to fall, and then principally to apply themselves to acts of devotion and contrition, which are always the most essential dispositions for this sacrament, and from which they may easily suffer their minds to be diverted by yielding to fears and anxiety. As for those who seldom approach the sacrament, it is their duty to employ sufficient time to make a diligent examination of their consciences, and to call to mind as nearly as possible, by reading over leisurely and attentively the commandments of God and of the Church, together with the seven capital sins, the duties of their state of life, and see in what they have failed in thought, word, or deed. If they cannot call to mind the precise number of their sins, they must consider how often in the day or week they have sinned in each particular kind, and their confession of them in this manner will satisfy the divine justice, which never obliges us to do what is morally impossible.

We should take care to examine ourselves especially about the fault to which we are inclined, and about the means that we should adopt to amend ourselves.

### **Motives of Contrition.**

#### **I.**

#### *The Greatness and Sanctity of God.*

Reflect, that sin, however trifling it may be, greatly offends Almighty God, and is an insult to the infinite perfections of him whose greatness knows no limits, and who is consequently deserving of infinite love. By sin you displease one who loves you most tenderly. Oh! reflect well on this, and you will discover how base, how cruel, how unreasonable it is to offend him. But, alas! we shall never, during this life, be able fully to comprehend the entire malice even of a venial sin, or know what punishment he deserves who commits it.

#### *An Act of Contrition.*

O my infinitely amiable God! I acknowledge that my sins are multiplied beyond the number of the hairs of my head, or the grains of sand on the sea-shore. But, if



I had committed only one, in committing it I have offended Thy infinite perfections. Oh! why then is not my heart penetrated with infinite grief and regret? I have sinned against Thy goodness, which I ought ever to have loved. I have preferred a vile creature, a petty honor, a miserable pleasure, some vain interest, to Thy sovereign majesty, which I ought to have adored, served, and honored. Ah! my God, pardon my sins. O infinite beauty, infinite goodness! how could I have the audacity to insult and despise Thee? But I now heartily repent of my ingratitude and disloyalty; I wish sincerely that I had never offended Thee, and resolve never to offend Thee again. Yes, I had rather sacrifice all that I possess, and forfeit my honor and my life, than ever more offend so good a God.

## II.

### *The Benefits of God.*

Reflect that God is our sovereign benefactor, who has bestowed upon us innumerable benefits, both general and particular. He has drawn us out of nothing, and formed us to his own image and likeness, without having any need at all of us: we are continually dependent upon him for our preservation. He has redeemed us with the price of the blood of his Son; he has made us Christians in preference to thousands of others whom he has left in the darkness of infidelity; he has borne with us in our sins until the present time; he has given us many and easy means of saving our souls; and still we repay all his mercies with ingratitude. He has created all creatures for our benefit, and the only use which we make of them is to offend him.

### *An Act of Contrition.*

Oh! how great has been my ingratitude! there is, there can be, none equal to it. O my amiable Saviour! is this the recompense that I have made Thee, for hav-



ing drawn me out of the abyss of nothing, in which I should still be, were it not for Thee? is this the value that I set upon the precious blood of Thy veins spilt with so much pain and so much love for me? Ungrateful creature that I am! who will give sighs to my heart and tears to my eyes, that I may bewail, as I ought, the insults which I have offered to my God, my sovereign benefactor? O God of goodness! have mercy on me. I greatly desire, and firmly resolve, never to offend Thee more. Ah! why was I born to receive so many benefits from my God, and still to offend him so often and so grievously as I have done? How could I employ in offending him the hands, the feet, the tongue, the ears, the heart which he gave me to use in his service? O unhappy eyes! O criminal hands! O unfaithful heart! you, by your sins, have been the cause of the pains, the torments, and the cruel death which the Son of God suffered upon the cross.

### III.

#### *The Presence of God.*

Reflect that the Most Blessed Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, the only and almighty God, is everywhere present, that he sees all things, knows all things, and penetrates the inmost and most secret thoughts of our heart. He is that divine and infinite Majesty before whom the highest seraphim tremble with a holy fear, and veil their faces through respect; and we have the audacity to sin in his presence; to say, to do, and to think what, if known, would cover us with confusion before the meanest of men. Reflect, moreover, that this God, before whom we sin, is our sovereign Judge, who at the moment of our death will inevitably pass sentence upon the thoughts, the words, the actions, of which we may be found guilty.

#### *An Act of Contrition.*

Supreme and just Judge of the living and the dead,  
Thou who seest and knowest all things, even those very

secrets that pass in the interior of my heart, and which I would not have known to any creature upon earth, is it possible that I should dare to appear in Thy presence, after having been so unfaithful to Thee? Alas! I cannot fly from Thee, because Thou art present everywhere: I cannot hide myself from Thy view, because Thou seest all things. Ah! has not my insolence been insupportable in having dared, in the presence of Thy exalted majesty, before whom the purest angels cover their faces, to do what I would not have done before the meanest and the last of men? O my God! have mercy on me: I detest, with my whole heart, all my sins for the love of Thee.

*Another Act of Contrition.*

O my God! I am covered with shame and confusion, when I reflect that I have lived in Thy presence with so little regard and respect, and that I have so often broken the protestations that I have made never to offend Thee more. O God! if I had made so many promises to any creature upon earth, how much should I feel ashamed at having broken my word! But, where Thou art concerned, I pay little regard to my resolutions, since I daily insult Thee before Thy eyes. Oh! how great is Thy goodness in having borne with me so long! O God of my heart! since Thou hast dealt mercifully with me in the course of my most heinous crimes, do not withdraw Thy mercy, now that I repent of all my disloyalties.

*Offering of the Holy Mass to obtain Remission of Sins.*

Heavenly Father, Father of mercy and God of consolation, who does comfort us in all our pains, accept, I beseech Thee, this sacrifice of the body and blood of Thy only Son, which I offer Thee to-day in union with the Church militant and the Church triumphant, in memory

of the Passion, the resurrection, and the ascension of my Saviour, and in honor of the Blessed Virgin and of all the heavenly court, in order to satisfy for my sins and those of all men. Behold, O my God, on this altar Thy well-beloved Son, the one object of Thy complacency; listen to the voice of his wounds; consider the precious tears which from his cross he shed, whilst he prayed so humbly for me, his faithless murderer, but now a penitent sinner. Behold his heart burning with so pure, so ardent a love; and in consideration of his merits, deliver us from all the evils that we have deserved on account of our sins. Yes, O merciful Father! pardon us for the love of Jesus Christ who is our advocate and mediator, and who makes satisfaction for us, whilst together with the Holy Ghost he renders Thee all glory and all honor forever and ever. Amen.

## Acts for Holy Communion.\*

### I.

#### Preparation for Communion.

St. Francis de Sales says,<sup>1</sup> that our Saviour can never be seen more amiable and more tender, in all that he has done for us, than in the Holy Communion, in which he, so to say, annihilates himself and becomes food, that he may unite himself to the hearts and bodies of his faithful. Therefore the learned Gerson used also to say, that there was no means more efficacious than the Holy Communion whereby to enkindle devotion and the holy love of God in our souls.

And, indeed, if we speak of doing something agreeable to God, what can a soul do more agreeable to him than to receive Communion? St. Denis teaches us that love always tends towards perfect union; but how can a soul be more perfectly united with Jesus than in the manner of which he speaks himself, saying: *He that eateth My flesh and drinketh My blood abideth in Me and I in him.*<sup>2</sup> St. Augustine says, that if every day you receive this sacrament, Jesus will be always with you, and you will always advance in divine love.

Again, if there is question of healing our spiritual infirmities, what more certain remedy can we have than

<sup>1</sup> *Introd.*, ch. 21.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem et bibit meum sanguinem, in me manet, et ego in illo."—*John*, vi. 57.

---

\* These Acts and the Aspirations that follow them were published by the Saint, with the Visits to the Blessed Sacrament, about the year 1745.—ED.

the Holy Communion, which is called by the sacred Council of Trent "a remedy whereby we may be freed from daily faults, and be preserved from mortal sins."<sup>1</sup>

Whence does it come, asks Cardinal Bona, that in so many souls we see so little fruit with so frequent Communions, and that they constantly relapse into the same faults? He replies: "The fault is not in the food, but in the disposition of him who receives."<sup>2</sup> *Can a man, says Solomon, hide fire in his bosom, and his garments not burn?*<sup>3</sup> *God is a consuming fire.*<sup>4</sup> He comes himself in the Holy Communion to enkindle this divine fire; how is it, then, says William of Paris, that we see so diabolical a miracle as that souls should remain cold in divine love in the midst of such flames?

All comes from the want of proper dispositions, and especially from want of preparation. Fire immediately inflames dry but not green wood; for this latter is not disposed to burn. The saints derived great benefit from their Communions, because they prepared themselves with very great care. St. Aloysius Gonzaga devoted three days to his preparation for Holy Communion, and three days he spent in thanksgiving to his Lord.

To prepare well for Holy Communion, a soul should be disposed on two main points: it should be detached from creatures, and have a great desire to advance in divine love.

1. In the first place, then, a soul should detach itself from all things, and drive everything from its heart which is not God. *He that is washed, saith Jesus, needeth*

<sup>1</sup> "Antidotum quo liberemur a culpis quotidianis, et a peccatis mortalibus præservemur."—*Sess. xiii. c. 2.*

<sup>2</sup> "Defectus non in cibo est, sed in edentis dispositione."—*De Sacr. M. c. 6, § 6.*

<sup>3</sup> "Numquid potest homo abscondere ignem in sinu suo, ut vestimenta illius non ardeant?"—*Prov. vi. 27.*

<sup>4</sup> "Ignis consumens est."—*Deut. iv. 24.*

*not but to wash his feet, but is clean wholly;*<sup>1</sup> which signifies, as St. Bernard explains it, that in order to receive this sacrament with great fruit, we should not only be cleansed from mortal sins, but our feet also should be washed, that is, free from earthly affections; for being in contact with the earth, they excite a sort of repugnance in God, and soiling the soul, prevent the effects of the Holy Communion.

St. Gertrude asked our Lord what preparation he required of her for the Holy Communion; and he replied: "I only ask that thou shouldst come empty of thyself, to receive me."<sup>2</sup>

2. In the second place, it is necessary, in the Holy Communion, to have a great desire to receive Jesus Christ and his holy love. In this sacred banquet, says Gerson,<sup>3</sup> only those who are famishing receive their fill; and the most blessed Virgin Mary had already said the same thing: *He hath filled the hungry with good things.*<sup>4</sup> As Jesus, writes the Venerable Father Avila,<sup>5</sup> only came into this world after he had been much and long desired, so does he only enter a soul that desires him; for it is not becoming that such food should be given to him who has a loathing for it. Our Lord one day said to St. Matilda: "No bee flies with such impetuosity to flowers, to suck their honey, as I fly to souls in the Holy Communion, driven by the violence of my love."<sup>6</sup> Since, then, Jesus Christ has so great a desire to come into our souls, it is right that we also should have a great desire to receive him and his divine love by the Holy Communion. St. Francis de Sales teaches us that the principal

<sup>1</sup> "Qui lotus est, non indiget nisi ut pedes lavet."—*John*, xiii. 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Insin.* l. 4, c. 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Sup. Magn.* tr. 9, p. 1.

<sup>4</sup> "Esurientes implevit bonis."—*Luke*, i. 53.

<sup>5</sup> Part I. Ep. 50.

<sup>6</sup> *Spir. Grat.* l. 2, c. 3.



object which a soul should have in view in communicating should be, to advance in the love of God; since he who for love alone gives himself to us should be received for love.

## Acts before Communion.

### 1. *An Act of Faith.*

*Behold, He cometh leaping upon the mountains, skipping over the hills.*<sup>1</sup> Ah, my most amiable Saviour, over how many, what rough and craggy mountains, hast Thou had to pass in order to come and unite Thyself to me by means of this most holy sacrament! Thou, from being God, hadst to become man; from being immense, to become a babe; from being Lord, to become a servant. Thou hadst to pass from the bosom of Thy Eternal Father to the womb of a Virgin; from heaven into a stable; from a throne of glory to the gibbet of a criminal. And on this very morning Thou wilt come from Thy seat in heaven to dwell in my bosom.

*Behold He standeth behind our wall, looking through the windows, looking through the lattices.*<sup>2</sup> Behold, O my soul, thy loving Jesus, burning with the same love with which he loved thee when dying for thee on the Cross, is now concealed in the Most Blessed Sacrament under the sacred species; and what is he doing? *Looking through the lattices.* As an ardent lover, desirous to see you correspond to his love, from the Host, as from within closed lattices, whence he sees without being seen, he is looking at you, who are this morning about to feed upon his divine flesh; he observes your thoughts, what it is that you love, what you desire, what you seek for, and what offerings you are about to make him.

<sup>1</sup> "Ecce iste venit saliens in montibus, transiliens colles."—*Cant.* ii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> "En ipse stat post parietem nostrum, respiciens per fenestras, prospiciens per cancellos."—*Cant.* ii. 9.



Awake, then, my soul, and prepare to receive thy Jesus; and, in the first place, by faith, say to him: So, then, my beloved Redeemer, in a few moments Thou art coming to me? O hidden God, unknown to the greater part of men, I believe, I confess, I adore Thee in the Most Holy Sacrament as my Lord and Saviour! And in acknowledgment of this truth I would willingly lay down my life. Thou comest to enrich me with Thy graces and to unite Thyself entirely to me; how great, then, should be my confidence in this Thy so loving visit!

### *2. An Act of Confidence.*

My soul, expand thy heart. Thy Jesus can do Thee every good, and, indeed, loves thee. Hope thou for great things from this thy Lord, who, urged by love, comes all love to thee.

Yes, my dear Jesus, my hope, I trust in Thy goodness, that, in giving Thyself to me this morning, Thou wilt enkindle in my poor heart the beautiful flame of Thy pure love, and a real desire to please Thee; so that, from this day forward, I may never will anything but what Thou wilt.

### *3. An Act of Love.*

Ah, my God, my God, true and only love of my soul, and what more couldst Thou have done to be loved by me? To die for me was not enough for Thee, my Lord; Thou wast pleased to institute this great sacrament in order to give Thyself all to me, and thus bind and unite Thyself heart to heart with so loathsome and ungrateful a creature as I am. And what is more, Thou Thyself invitest me to receive Thee, and desirest so much that I should do so! O boundless love! incomprehensible love! infinite love! a God would give himself all to me!—My soul, believest thou this? And what doest

thou? what sayest thou? O God, O God, O infinite amiability, only worthy object of all love, I love Thee with my whole heart, I love Thee above all things, I love Thee more than myself, more than my life! Oh, could I but see Thee loved by all! Oh, could I but cause Thee to be loved by all hearts as much as Thou deservest! I love Thee, O most amiable God, and I unite my miserable heart in loving Thee to the hearts of the Seraphim, to the heart of the most blessed Virgin Mary, to the Heart of Jesus, thy most loving and beloved Son. So that, O Infinite Good, I love Thee with the love with which the saints, with which Mary, with which Jesus love Thee. And I love Thee only because Thou art worthy of it, and to give Thee pleasure. Depart, all earthly affections, that are not for God, depart from my heart. Mother of fair love, most holy Virgin Mary, help me to love that God whom Thou dost so ardently desire to see loved!

#### *4. An Act of Humility.*

Then, my soul, thou art even now about to feed on the most sacred flesh of Jesus! And art thou worthy? My God, and who am I, and who art Thou? I indeed know and confess who Thou art that givest Thyself to me; but dost Thou know what I am who am about to receive Thee? And is it possible, O my Jesus, that Thou who art infinite purity desirest to come and reside in this soul of mine, which has been so many times the dwelling of Thy enemy, and soiled with so many sins? I know, O my Lord, Thy great Majesty and my misery; I am ashamed to appear before Thee. Reverence would induce me to keep at a distance from Thee; but if I depart from Thee, O my life, whither shall I go? to whom shall I have recourse? and what will become of me? No, never will I depart from Thee; nay, even I will ever draw nearer and nearer to Thee. Thou art

satisfied that I should receive Thee as food, Thou even invitest me to this. I come then, O my amiable Saviour, I come to receive Thee this morning, all humbled and confused at the sight of my defects ; but full of confidence in Thy tender mercy, and in the love which Thou bearest me.

#### *5. An Act of Contrition.*

I am indeed grieved, O God of my soul, for not having loved Thee during the time past ; what is still worse, so far from loving Thee, and to gratify my own inclinations, I have greatly offended and outraged Thy infinite goodness : I have turned my back upon Thee, I have despised Thy grace and friendship ; in a word, O my God, I was deliberate in my will to lose Thee. Lord, I am sorry, and grieve for it with my whole heart. I detest the sins which I have committed, be they great or small, as the greatest of all my misfortunes, because I have thereby offended Thee, O Infinite Goodness. I trust that Thou hast already forgiven me ; but if Thou hast not yet pardoned me, oh, do so before I receive Thee : wash with Thy blood this soul of mine, in which Thou art so soon about to dwell.

#### *6. An Act of Desire.*

And now, my soul, the blessed hour has arrived in which Jesus will come and take up his dwelling in thy poor heart. Behold the King of Heaven, behold thy Redeemer and God, who is even now coming ; prepare thyself to receive him with love, invite him with the ardor of thy desire.

Come, O my Jesus, come to my soul, which desires Thee. Before Thou givest Thyself to me, I desire to give Thee, and I now give Thee, my miserable heart ; do Thou accept it, and come quickly to take possession of it. Come, my God ! hasten ; delay no longer. My

only and Infinite Good, my treasure, my life, my Paradise, my love, my all, my wish is to receive Thee with the love with which the most holy and loving souls have received Thee ; with that with which the most blessed Virgin Mary received Thee ; to their Communions I unite this Communion of mine.

Most holy Virgin and my Mother Mary, behold, I already approach to receive thy Son. Would that I had the heart and love with which thou didst communicate ! Give me this morning thy Jesus, as thou didst give him to the shepherds and to the kings. I intend to receive him from thy most pure hands. Tell him that I am thy servant and thy client ; for he will thus look upon me with a more loving eye, and now that he is coming, will press me more closely to himself.

## II.

### **Thanksgiving After Communion.**

There is no prayer more agreeable to God, or more profitable to the soul, than that which is made during the thanksgiving after Communion. It is the opinion of many grave writers (Suarez, Cajetan, Valentia, De Lugo, and others), that the Holy Communion, so long as the sacramental species lasts, constantly produces greater and greater graces in the soul, provided the soul is then constant in disposing itself by new acts of virtue. The Council of Florence,<sup>1</sup> in the decree of Eugenius IV. to the Armenians, teaches that the Blessed Sacrament produces the same effect in the soul as material food, which, when it enters the body, takes effect according to the state in which it finds it.

For this reason, holy souls endeavor to remain as long as possible in prayer after Communion. The Venerable Father Avila, even when he was given his missions, used

<sup>1</sup> *Decr. ad Arm.*

to remain for at least two hours in prayer. Father Balthasar Alvarez used to say, that we should set great value on the time after Communion, imagining that we hear from the lips of Jesus Christ himself the words that he addressed to his disciples: *But Me you have not always with you.*<sup>1</sup>

It is not advisable, as many do, to begin to read immediately after Communion: it is then better to spend at least a short time in producing holy affections, and in conversing with Jesus, who is then within us, and in repeating many times words of tenderness, or some feeling prayer. Jesus Christ repeated the same prayer in the garden three times: *And He prayed the third time, saying the self-same word.*<sup>2</sup> In affections and prayers it is, then, that the soul should entertain itself with Jesus after Communion; for we must know, that the acts formed in prayer after Communion are far more precious and meritorious in the sight of God than when made at another time; for the soul being then united with Jesus, the value of the acts is increased by the presence of Jesus. We should, moreover, know, that after Communion Jesus Christ is more disposed to grant graces. St. Teresa says, that after Communion Jesus places himself in the soul as on a throne of grace, and then says: *What wilt thou that I should do for thee?*<sup>3</sup> meaning, O soul, I am come for the express purpose of granting thee graces: ask me what thou wilt, and as much as thou wilt, thou shalt receive all.

Oh, what treasures of grace would you receive, devout soul, if you only entertained yourself with Jesus for an hour, or at least half an hour, after Communion! For this purpose you can read the following acts. After your prayer is ended be also careful during the whole

<sup>1</sup> "Me autem non semper habetis."—*Matt.* xxvi. 11.

<sup>2</sup> "Et oravit tertio, eundem sermonem dicens."—*Matt.* xxvi. 44.

<sup>3</sup> "Quid tibi vis faciam?"—*Mark*, x. 51.



day on which you have communicated to keep yourself united by affections and prayers with Jesus, whom you have received.

### **Acts after Communion.**

#### *1. An Act of Faith.*

Behold, my God is even now come to visit me ; my Saviour to dwell in my soul. My Jesus is even now within me. He is come to make himself mine, and at the same time to make me his. So that Jesus is mine, and I belong to Jesus: Jesus is all mine, and I am all his.

O Infinite Goodness ! O Infinite Mercy ! O Infinite Love ! that a God should come to unite himself to me, and to make himself all mine ! My soul, now that thou art thus closely bound to Jesus, that thou art thus one with him, what doest thou ? Hast thou nothing to say to him ; dost thou not converse with thy God, who is with thee ? Ah, yes, renew thy faith ; remember that the angels now surround thee adoring their God, who is within thy breast ; do thou also adore thy Lord within thyself. Enter into thyself, and banish thence every other thought. Unite all thy affections, and, clinging closely to thy God, say:

#### *2. An Act of Welcome.*

Ah, my Jesus, my love, my infinite good, my all, be ever welcome in the poor dwelling of my soul ! Ah, my Lord, where art thou ! to what a place art Thou come ! Thou hast entered my heart, which is far worse than the stable in which Thou wast born ; it is full of earthly affections, of self-love, and of inordinate desires. And how couldst Thou come to dwell there ? I would address Thee with St. Peter: *Depart from me, for I am a sinful man.*<sup>1</sup> Yes, depart from me, O Lord, for I am indeed

<sup>1</sup> "Exi a me, quia homo peccator sum."—*Luke*, v. 8.

unworthy to receive a God of infinite goodness ; go and find repose in those pure souls who serve Thee with so much love. But no, my Redeemer ; what do I say ? Leave me not ; for if Thou departest, I am lost. I embrace Thee, my life ; I cling to Thee. Mad indeed have I been in having separated myself from Thee for the love of creatures ; and in my ingratitude I drove Thee from me. But now I will never more separate myself from Thee, my treasure ; I desire to live and die ever united to Thee. Most blessed Virgin Mary, Seraphim, and all souls, do ye who love God with pure love lend me your affections, that I may worthily attend on my beloved Lord.

### 3. *An Act of Thanksgiving.*

My God and Lord, I thank Thee for the grace which Thou hast this morning bestowed upon me, of coming to dwell in my soul ; but I would wish to thank Thee in a manner worthy of Thee and of the great favor which Thou hast done me. But what do I say ? how can so miserable a creature as I am ever worthily thank Thee ?

Father Segneri says, that the feeling most becoming a soul that communicates is that of wondering astonishment at the thought, and to repeat, "A God is united to me ; a God is mine !" David said, *What shall I render to the Lord for all the things that He hath rendered to me ?*<sup>1</sup> But I ! what return shall I make to Thee, my Jesus, who, after having given me so many of Thy good things, hast this morning, moreover, given me Thyself ? My soul, bless, then, and thank thy God as best thou canst. And thou, my Mother Mary, my holy advocates, my guardian angel, and all ye souls who love God, *Come and hear, all ye that fear God, and I will tell you what great things He*

<sup>1</sup> "Quid retribuam Domino pro omnibus quæ retribuit mihi?"—*Ps.*  
cxv. 12.



*hath done for my soul.*<sup>1</sup> Come and bless and thank my God for me, admiring and praising the indeed great graces which he has granted me.

#### 4. *An Act of Oblation.*

*My Beloved to me, and I to Him.*<sup>2</sup> Should a king go to visit a poor shepherd in his hut, what can the shepherd offer him other than his whole hut, such as it is? Since, then, O Jesus, my divine king, Thou hast come to visit the poor house of my soul, I offer and give Thee this house and my entire self, together with my liberty and will: *My Beloved to me, and I to Him.* Thou hast given Thyself all to me; I give myself all to Thee. \* My Jesus, from this day forward I will be no longer mine; I will be Thine, and all Thine. May my senses be Thine, that they may only serve me to please Thee. And what greater pleasure, says St. Peter of Alcantara, can be found, than that of pleasing Thee, most amiable, most loving, most gracious God? I at the same time give Thee all the powers of my soul, and I will that they shall be all Thine; my memory I will only use to recall to mind Thy benefits and Thy love; my understanding I will only use to think of Thee, who always thinkest of my good; my will I will only use to love Thee, my God, my all, and to will only that which Thou willest.

My most sweet Lord, I offer, then, and consecrate to Thee this morning all that I am and have—my senses, my thoughts, my affections, my desires, my pleasures, my inclinations, my liberty; in a word, I place my whole body and soul in Thy hands.

Accept, O Infinite Majesty, the sacrifice of the hitherto most ungrateful sinner Thou hast ever had on earth;

<sup>1</sup> "Venite, audite, . . . omnes qui timetis Deum, quanta fecit animæ meæ."—*Ps.* lxxv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> "Dilectus meus mihi et ego illi."—*Cant.* ii. 16.

but who now offers and gives himself all to Thee. Do with me and dispose of me, O Lord, as Thou pleasest.

Come, O consuming fire, O divine love! and consume in me all that is mine, and that is displeasing in Thy most pure eyes, so that henceforward I may be all Thine, and may live only to execute, not Thy commands and counsels only, but also all Thy holy desires and Thy good pleasure. Amen.

O most holy Mary, do thou present this offering of mine to the Most Blessed Trinity with thine own hands; and do thou obtain their acceptance of it, and that they may grant me the grace to be faithful unto death. Amen, amen, amen.

#### 5. *An Act of Petition.*

O my soul, what art thou doing? The present is no time to be lost: it is a precious time, in which thou canst receive all the graces that thou askest. Seest thou not the Eternal Father, who is lovingly beholding thee? for within thee he sees his beloved Son, the dearest object of his love. Drive, then, far from thee all other thoughts; rekindle thy faith, enlarge thy heart, and ask for whatever thou wilt.

Hearst thou not Jesus himself who thus addresses thee: *What wilt thou that I should do to thee?*<sup>1</sup> O soul, tell me, what dost thou desire of me? I am come for the express purpose of enriching and gratifying thee; ask with confidence, and thou wilt receive all.

Ah! my most sweet Saviour, since Thou hast come into my heart in order to grant me graces, and desirest that I should ask Thee for them, I ask Thee not for the goods of the earth—riches, honors, or pleasures; but grant me, I beseech Thee, intense sorrow for the displeasure that I have caused Thee; impart to me so clear

<sup>1</sup> "Quid tibi vis faciam?"—*Mark*, x. 51.

a light, that I may know the vanity of this world, and how deserving Thou art of love. Change this heart of mine, detach it from all earthly affections; give me a heart conformable in all things to Thy holy will, that it may seek only that which is more pleasing to Thee, and have no other desire than Thy holy love: *Create a clean heart in me, O God.*<sup>1</sup>

I deserve not this; but Thou, my Jesus, deservest it, since Thou art come to dwell in my soul: I ask it of Thee through Thy merits, and those of Thy most holy Mother, and by the love which Thou bearest to Thy Eternal Father.

Here pause, to ask Jesus for some other particular grace for yourself and for your neighbors. Do not forget poor sinners, or the souls in Purgatory; and pray also for me, who composed this little book for your good.

Eternal Father, Jesus Christ himself, Thy Son, has said, *Amen, amen, I say to you, If you ask the Father anything in My Name, He will give it you.*<sup>2</sup> For the love, then, of this Son, whom I now hold within my breast, do Thou graciously hear me and grant my petition.

*Amores mei dulcissimi, Jesu et Maria! pro vobis patiar, pro vobis moriar; sim totus vester, sim nihil meus.*<sup>3</sup> ("My most sweet Loves, Jesus and Mary, may I suffer for you, may I die for you; may I be all yours, and in nothing my own!")

*Prayers to which Indulgences are attached.*

May the Most Blessed Sacrament be ever thanked and praised!

Blessed be the holy and Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin Mary!

<sup>1</sup> "Cor mundum crea in me, Deus."—*Ps.* l. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Amen, amen, dico vobis: si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis."—*John*, xvi. 23.

<sup>3</sup> *Alph. Rodrig.*

*Anima Christi, sanctifica me ;  
Corpus Christi, salva me ;  
Sanguis Christi, inebria me ;  
Aqua lateris Christi, munda me ;  
Passio Christi, conforta me.*

*O bone Jesu ! exaudi me ;  
Intra vulnera tua, absconde me ;  
Ab hoste maligno defende me ;  
In hora mortis meae, voca me ;  
Et jube me venire ad te ;  
Ut cum Sanctis et Angelis tuis collaudem te,  
Per infinita sæcula sæculorum. Amen.*

Soul of Christ, sanctify me ;  
Body of Christ, protect me ;  
Blood of Christ, inebriate me ;  
Water of the side of Christ, purify me ;  
Passion of Christ, strengthen me.

O good Jesus, hear Thou me ;  
Within Thy wounds, oh, hide me ;  
Suffer me not to leave Thee ;  
From the evil one defend me ;  
In my last hour call Thou me ;  
Bid me, oh, bid me, come to Thee ;  
With saints and angels may I praise Thee,  
Through endless ages of eternity. Amen.

## Loving Aspirations to Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament.

They can be used either before or after Communion, or in visiting the Blessed Sacrament.

### Before Communion.

#### I.

*Egredimini et videte, filiæ Sion, regem Salomonem in diademate, quo coronavit illum mater sua in die desponsationis illius*<sup>1</sup>—"Go forth, ye daughters of Sion, and see king Solomon in the diadem wherewith his mother crowned him in the day of his espousals."

O daughters of grace, O ye souls who love God quit the darkness of earth, and behold Jesus, your king, crowned with a crown of thorns ; the crown of contempt and suffering with which the impious synagogue, his mother crowned him on the day of his espousals,—that is to say, on the day of his death, by means of which he espoused himself on the Cross to our souls. Go forth again, and behold him all full of compassion and love, now that he comes to unite himself to thee in this sacrament of love.

Has it indeed, then, cost Thee so much, my beloved Jesus, before Thou couldst come and unite Thyself to souls in this most sweet Sacrament? Wert Thou indeed obliged to suffer so bitter and ignominious a death? Oh, come, then, without delay, and unite Thyself to my soul also. It was at one time Thy enemy by sin ; but now Thou desirest to espouse it by Thy grace. Come, O Jesus, my spouse, for never more will I betray Thee ; I am determined to be ever faithful to Thee. As a loving spouse, my whole thought shall be to find out Thy

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* iii. 11.

pleasure. I am determined to love Thee without reserve ; I desire to be all Thine, my Jesus,—all, all, all.

## II.

*Fasciculus myrrhæ Dilectus meus mihi, inter ubera mea commorabitur*—“ A bundle of myrrh is my Beloved to me ; he shall abide between my breasts.”<sup>1</sup>

The myrrh plant, when pricked, sends forth tears, and a healthful liquor from the wounds. Before his Passion, our Jesus determined to pour forth his divine blood from his wounds in so painful a way, to give it afterwards all to us for our salvation in this bread of life.

Come, then, O my beloved bundle of myrrh, O my enamored Jesus ; Thou art indeed a subject of grief and pity to me when I consider Thee all wounded for me on the Cross : but then, when I receive Thee in this most sweet Sacrament, Thou becomest indeed to me more sweet and delicious than a bunch of the choicest grapes can be to one who is parched with thirst : *A cluster of cypress my Love is to me, in the vineyards of Engaddi.*<sup>2</sup> Come, then, to my soul, and revive and satiate me with Thy holy love Ah, what sweetness do I feel in my soul at the thought, that I have to receive within myself that same Saviour of mine who for my salvation was pleased to be drained of all his blood, and sacrificed on a cross ! *He shall abide between my breasts.* No, my Jesus, never more will I drive Thee hence ; and Thou shalt never more have to leave me. I am determined ever to love Thee, and to be always united and closely bound up with Thee. I will always belong to Jesus, and Jesus will be always mine : forever, forever, forever *He shall abide between my breasts.*

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* i. 12.

<sup>2</sup> “ *Botrus cyprî Dilectus meus mihi in vineis Engaddi.*”—*Cant.* i. 13.



III.

*Dum esset Rex in accubitu suo, nardus mea dedit odorem suum*<sup>1</sup>—"While the King was at His repose my spikenard sent forth the odor thereof."

When Jesus comes to dwell in a soul in the Holy Communion, oh, how clearly does she see and know her own nothingness by the bright light which the king of heaven brings with him! As the spikenard is the most lowly amongst plants, so does the soul confess itself the most vile of all creatures; and when thus humbled, oh, how sweet is the odor which she breathes forth to her beloved king! and for this reason he invites her to unite herself to him in closer and closer bonds.

If, then, my soul, thou desirest that thy Jesus should repose in thee, consider thy own nothingness. Who art thou? what dost thou deserve? Humble thyself as thou shouldst do, by casting away from thyself all self-esteem which may keep Jesus at a distance from thee, or prevent him from coming to repose in thee.

Come to me, my dear Redeemer, come; and by thy divine light make me to see my own lowliness, my misery, my nothingness, that Thou mayest be enabled to repose in me with satisfaction to Thyself, to separate Thyself no more from me.

IV.

*Sentite de Domino in bonitate*<sup>2</sup>—"Think of the Lord in goodness."

My soul, why art thou so timid and fearful at the sight of the goodness and infinite love of thy Lord? why such distrust? Now that thou art made worthy to receive within thee Jesus Christ, let thy sentiments correspond to this grace, by confiding in that goodness of God, who gives thee all himself. Truly his judgments are terrible,

<sup>1</sup> *Cant. i. II.*

<sup>2</sup> *Wisd. i. I.*



but they are terrible only to the proud and to the obstinate; but to the humble and penitent, who desire to love and please him, his judgments are all mercy and love, emanating from a heart full of compassion and kindness. So that David, considering these judgments of God, superabounds with hope: *I have more than hoped in Thy judgments.* These judgments made him happy and consoled him: *Thy judgments are delightful; I remembered Thy judgments, and was comforted.*<sup>1</sup> Ah! our great God is only too loving and generous to those who seek him with love: *The Lord is good to the soul that seeketh Him.*<sup>2</sup> How good is God to those who seek to unite their will to the divine will: *How good is God to Israel, to those that are of a right heart.*<sup>3</sup>

My God, my love, my hope, my all, I desire Thee, and Thee alone,—to love Thee, to please Thee, and to do Thy will in all things. Let me always find Thee; make me agreeable to Thee; and never let me leave Thee again. So be it. Amen, amen.

## v.

*Vox Dilecti mei pulsan- tis: Aperi mihi, soror mea, amica mea, columba mea, immaculata mea*<sup>4</sup>—"The voice of my Beloved knocking: Open to Me, My sister, My love, My dove, My undefiled."

Such are the words which Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament speaks to those who love and desire him. Open to me, he says, O soul, thy heart, and there I will come to unite myself to thee; so that, being one with me, thou mayest become my sister by resemblance, my friend by participation in my riches, my

<sup>1</sup> "In judiciis tuis supersperavi.—Judicia tua jucunda.—Memor fui judiciorum tuorum, . . . et consolatus sum."—*Ps.* cxviii. 43, 39, 52.

<sup>2</sup> "Bonus est Dominus animæ quærenti illum."—*Lam.* iii. 25.

<sup>3</sup> "Quam bonus Israel Deus his qui recto sunt corde!"—*Ps.* lxxii. 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Cant.* v. 2

dove by the gift of simplicity, my undefiled by the gift of purity, which I shall communicate to thee. And then he goes on to say, *Open to me, for my head is full of dew and my locks of the drops of the night.* As if he said: Consider, my beloved, that I have waited for thee all the night of the bad life thou hast led in the midst of darkness and error. Behold, now, instead of bringing scourges to chastise thee, I come in the Blessed Sacrament, with my hair full of heavenly dew, to extinguish in thee all impure desires towards creatures, and to kindle in Thee the happy fire of my love. Come, then, O my beloved Jesus, and work in me what Thou wilt. I renounce the love of all things, in order to be all Thine, and that Thou mayest make me as Thou wouldst have me, entirely united to Thy will.

VI.

*Veniat Dilectus meus in hortum suum, et comedat fructum pomorum suorum*<sup>1</sup>—"Let my beloved come into His garden, and eat the fruit of His apple-trees."

Cornelius à Lapide says that this is precisely the invitation that a soul desirous of the Holy Communion makes to Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament. Come, my beloved, she says, into my poor heart, which at one unhappy time did not belong to Thee; but which now, by the help of Thy grace, has returned to Thee: *Come and eat the fruit of Thy apple-trees.* Come and taste in me those virtues which Thou dost bring with Thyself when Thou comest to me. O my Lord, at least for the honor of Thy majesty, purify my heart, adorn it, inflame it with Thy love, and make it beautiful in Thy sight, that it may be a worthy dwelling-place for Thee.

<sup>1</sup> *Cant. v. 1.*

## VII.

*Ad ubera portabimini*<sup>1</sup>—"You shall be carried at the breasts."

It is thus that Jesus from the sacred altars invites our souls. Come, he says, and suck my divine milk, which I give you in this Sacrament, wherein I offer you my own blood to drink. But what shepherd, says St. John Chrysostom,<sup>2</sup> ever feeds his sheep with his own blood? Even mothers give their children to nurses to be fed. But Thou, O divine Pastor, art so enamored of our souls as to wish to nourish them with Thine own blood. St. Catharine of Sienna, then, did well in approaching the Holy Communion as if panting to suck the divine milk, in the same way as an infant presses anxiously to suck the milk from its mother's breast. And well might the Sacred Spouse say to her Beloved, *Thy breasts are better than wine*,<sup>3</sup> signifying that she esteemed the milk of this sacrament, as the sacred interpreters explain it, above all the pleasures of the world, which are transitory and vain, as are transitory and vain also the joys and pleasures of wine.

O my beloved Jesus, since Thou wilt feed me this morning with Thine own blood in the Holy Communion, it is but reasonable that I should willingly renounce all the delights and pleasures which the world might give me. Yes, I give them all up; I protest that I choose rather to suffer all evils united to Thee, than to enjoy all the goods of the world away from Thee. It is sufficient happiness for me to please Thee, who art worthy of all that we can do to please Thee. I will say, then, with St. Ignatius of Loyola, give me, I pray Thee, but Thy love and Thy grace; that is sufficient for me, and I am contented.

<sup>1</sup> *Isa. lxvi. 12.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ad pop. Ant. hom. 60.*

<sup>3</sup> "*Meliora sunt ubera tua vino.*"—*Cant. i. 1.*

VIII.

*Comedite, amici, et bibite, et inebriamini, charissimi*<sup>1</sup>—  
“Eat, O friends, and drink, and be inebriated, my dearly beloved.”

The “friends,” that is beginners, who scarcely enjoy the divine friendship, when they receive the Holy Communion, feed indeed on the flesh of Jesus Christ, but they eat with labor; while those who are on the way to perfection eat with less difficulty. But by the “dearly beloved” are meant the perfect, who, inebriated with holy love, live almost out of the world, forgetting all things, even themselves, and think only how they may love and please their God.

My beloved Jesus, I am not yet perfect; but Thou canst make me perfect. I am not dear to Thee, and it is my own fault, because I have been ungrateful and unfaithful; but Thou canst make me become so, by inebriating me this morning with Thy love. *Thy kingdom come.*<sup>2</sup> Come, my beloved Lord, and take possession of my whole soul. Establish Thy kingdom in me; so that Thou alone mayest reign in me, that Thy love alone may command me, and that Thy love only may I obey. Inebriate me, inebriate me entirely; make me forget all creatures, myself, my interests, and all, that I may love nothing but Thee, my God, my treasure, all my good, my all; may I sigh for Thee alone, seek Thee alone, think of Thee alone, and please Thee alone. Do this by the merits of Thy Passion. This only do I ask of Thee; this I hope.

IX.

*Fulcite me floribus, stipate me malis; quia amore langueo*<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* v. 1.

<sup>2</sup> “Adveniat regnum tuum.”—*Matt.* vi. 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Cant.* ii. 5.

—"Stay me up with flowers, compass me about with apples : because I languish with love."

The languor of the soul is when, forgetful of herself and her affairs, she thinks only of seeking refreshment for her languishing love by holy desires, which are the flowers, and by good works, which are the fruits of divine love.

O my God, O Blessed Sacrament, since Thou wilt have me to be all Thine, make me what Thou wouldst have me. Make me forget everything that does not belong to Thy love. Increase in me always more and more the desire of pleasing Thee. Grant that these flowers may not always remain flowers; make them also become fruits, by my doing and suffering something for Thee, who hast done and suffered only too much for me. O God, O God of my soul, make Thyself loved, but really loved, by me,—not only in word, but in deed,—before death comes upon me.

# x.

*Dilectus meus candidus et rubicundus, electus et millibus*<sup>1</sup>  
—"My Beloved is white and ruddy, chosen out of thousands."

Our beloved Jesus is all white by his purity, and all red by the flames of his divine love.

My spotless Lamb, all burning with love for me, when shall I make myself like to Thee, pure as Thou art, O lily; burning with love of Thee as Thou dost burn with love of me? Yes, I do renounce all other love, and choose for myself Thy sweet love, my God, my all. Begone, ye creatures ! what do you want with me? Go and enjoy the love of those who seek you. I wish only for my God; for God alone will I keep all my heart and all my affections.

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* v. 10.



XI.

*Benignitas et humanitas apparuit Salvatoris nostri Dei*<sup>1</sup>  
—"The goodness and kindness of God our Saviour appeared."

St. Paul says that God, by making himself man, showed the world how far his goodness towards us went. But by giving himself in this sacrament, he makes us know the depth of the tenderness of his love towards our souls. "Does it not seem madness to say, Eat my flesh, and drink my blood?" St. Augustine says, does it not seem a madness, Jesus Christ saying to us, as he said in that blessed night,<sup>2</sup> *Take and eat, this is My body?*<sup>3</sup> O men, he says, to make you understand how much I love you, I will that you should come and feed on my very flesh. O holy faith! And who among us would have been able to demand so much? Who could have even thought of it, if Jesus had not thought it and done it? Some of the followers of Jesus Christ, when they heard that from his mouth, that is, that he wished to give them his body to eat, said that this was too hard a thing, and that they could neither believe nor hear it: *This saying is hard, and who can hear it?*<sup>4</sup> And they went so far as to leave him, because they would not believe it: but yet it is of faith that so it is. But what else does Jesus Christ ask of us, by all this he has done for us, but that we should love him? as the Lord had once before instructed his people: *And now, Israel, what does the Lord thy God require of thee, but that thou . . . love Him and serve Him with all thy heart?*<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Tit.* iii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Nonne videtur insania: Manducate meam carnem, bibite meum sanguinem?"—*In Ps.* xxxiii. *en.* 1.

<sup>3</sup> "Accipite, et comedite; hoc est corpus meum."—*Matt.* xxvi. 26.

<sup>4</sup> "Durus est hic sermo et quis potest eum audire?"—*John*, vi. 61.

<sup>5</sup> "Et nunc, Israel, quid Dominus Deus tuus petit a te, nisi ut . . . diligas eum, ac servias Domino Deo tuo in toto corde tuo?"—*Deut.* x. 12.

O my most loving Jesus, what dost Thou not give, what dost Thou not promise to those that love Thee? Thou dost promise them Thy love: *I love those that love Me.*<sup>1</sup> Thou dost promise them Thy caresses, even when they have already turned their backs upon Thee: *Turn ye to Me, and I will turn to you.*<sup>2</sup> Thou dost promise to come with the Father and the Holy Spirit to abide forever in their souls: *He who loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, . . . and We will come to him and make Our abode with him.*<sup>3</sup> And what more hast Thou to promise and to give, to entice men to love Thee? My dearest Lord, I see how it is; Thou dost wish also to be loved by me: yes, I love Thee with all my heart; and if I do not love Thee, do Thou teach me to love Thee; make me to love Thee, and to love Thee above all things: "Give what Thou commandest, and command what Thou wilt."<sup>4</sup>

## XII.

*Nolite me considerare quod fusca sim, quia decoloravit me sol*<sup>5</sup>—"Do not consider me, that I am brown; for the sun has discolored me."

The heat of my passions, said the Sacred Spouse (and still more ought I to say it, O my dear Jesus), has deformed and blackened me: *I am black, but beautiful.*<sup>6</sup> But I am black by my own works; I am beautiful by Thy merits, O my Redeemer. I was black at one time, when I was alone and separated from Thee; but now that I am united to Thee, Thy grace, Thy beauty, Thy love has made me beautiful.

Yes, my Jesus, so do I hope. Mayest Thou be blessed

<sup>1</sup> "Ego diligentes me diligo."—*Prov.* viii. 17.

<sup>2</sup> "Convertimini ad me, . . . et convertar ad vos."—*Zach.* i. 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Si quis diligit me, . . . et Pater meus diligit eum, et ad eum veniemus, et mansionem apud eum faciemus."—*John*, xiv. 23.

<sup>4</sup> "Da quod jubes, et jube quod vis."—*S. Aug. Conf.* l. 10, c. 29.

<sup>5</sup> *Cant.* i. 5.

<sup>6</sup> "Nigra sum, sed formosa."—*Ibid.* 4.



forever. Never permit me to lose Thee again, and to return to my former depravity. I love Thee, O infinite beauty; I wish also that my soul should be beautiful, always beautiful, that it may be always pleasing in Thy divine sight, and that Thou mayest always love it.

### After Communion.

#### I.

*Trahe me: post te curremus in odorem unguentorum tuorum*<sup>1</sup>—"Draw me: we will run after Thee to the odor of Thy ointments."

Since, then, O my dear Jesus, I cannot, while in this life, ascend to Thee, Thou hast willed to descend to me, to unite Thyself to me in this sacrament of love. Draw me, my Lord, all to Thee. I do not wish to draw Thee to me, that Thou shouldst do my pleasure; but I desire that thou shouldst draw me so entirely to Thee by Thy sweet attractions, that I may not be able to desire or do anything else but Thy most holy will. It is just that my inclinations should yield to Thy disposition. Take me up wholly to Thyself; and so united, I shall be free from earthly affections, and shall run with Thee in the path of virtue, and be able to repose peacefully in Thy divine will both in this life and in the next: *In peace, in the self-same I will sleep, and I will rest.*<sup>2</sup>

#### II.

*Introduxit me in cellam vinariam, ordinavit in me charitatem*<sup>3</sup>—"The King brought me into the cellar of wine, and set in order charity in me."

It is precisely by this cellar of wine that St. Bonaven-

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* i. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "In pace, in idipsum dormiam et requiescam."—*Ps.* iv. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Cant.* ii. 4.

ture understands the Holy Communion which introduces and then unites the soul to its divine king, and gives it to taste that wine of love which destroys the desire of created things; infuses a well-regulated love, that is just towards itself, charitable towards its neighbor, supreme towards God, loving him above all things, who above all things deserves to be loved.

O Jesus, my king, only Lord of my heart, Thou hast already brought me into the beautiful cellar of Thy love, that is, into Thyself, uniting me to Thee by means of this sacrament of love. Yes, my Lord, I already feel my heart changed. I feel a holy desire, which gives me peace, and makes me loathe all impure affections, and enkindles in me the pure love of Thee. O my Jesus, since Thou hast given me an entrance to this beautiful cellar, let me no more depart from it. Since Thou hast united Thyself to me, do not leave me again. Detach me from the love of all creatures. Unite me to Thee continually more and more on this earth, that I may one day come to be perfectly united to Thee in heaven; where I shall love Thee face to face with all my strength, without interruption and without imperfection throughout all eternity.

### III.

*Dilectus meus descendit ad hortum suum, . . . ut pascatur in hortis, et lilia colligat*<sup>1</sup>—"My Beloved is gone down into His garden . . . to feed in the gardens, and to gather lilies."

My sweet Saviour, since Thou dost descend from heaven to come into my soul, by Thy grace do Thou make it become Thy garden, that Thou mayest gather in it lilies and fruits which are agreeable to Thee. Pardon me, if I have offended Thee. Receive me, if I have left Thee, now that I return penitent to Thee. Give me that purity

<sup>1</sup> *Cant. vi. i.*

which Thou dost desire to see in me. Give me strength to do what Thou desirest. Grant me Thy true love, and then shall I become pleasing to Thee. I sacrifice to Thee all my inclinations, and I desire and wish for nothing but to please Thee.

IV.

*Totus desiderabilis, talis est Dilectus meus*<sup>1</sup>—"He is all lovely; such is my Beloved."

Jesus, to those souls who love him as spouses, makes himself altogether desirable, whether he chastises or consoles them, whether he appears near or distant, because he does it all for love, and that he may be loved.

Treat me, then, O my Jesus, as Thou wilt, I will always love Thee; whether Thou dost give me sweetness or tribulations, I know that all will come to me from Thy loving heart, and that all will be for my greater good. *My heart is ready, O God, my heart is ready.*<sup>2</sup> Behold, my will is ready, O Lord, to accept all that Thou shalt ordain. *I will bless the Lord at all times.*<sup>3</sup> At all times, whether prosperous or adverse, I will bless Thee, and love Thee, O my Creator. I neither seek nor merit any consolation from Thee; for I have given Thee nothing but bitterness by my sins: I seek only Thy good pleasure. Provided Thou art satisfied, I shall be content with any punishment. My Jesus, my Jesus, whether far off or near, Thou shalt always be desirable to me, always dear; whether Thou dost console or afflict me, I will always love Thee, always thank Thee.

V.

*Quæ est ista quæ ascendit de deserto, deliciis affluens, innixa super Dilectum suum?*<sup>4</sup>—"Who is this that cometh up

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* v. 16.

<sup>2</sup> "Paratum cor meum, Deus, paratum cor meum."—*Ps.* lvi. 8.

<sup>3</sup> "Benedicam Dominum in omni tempore."—*Ps.* xxxiii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Cant.* viii. 5.

from the desert flowing with delights, leaning upon her Beloved ? ”

Who, then, are those souls who, living on the earth, esteem it a desert ? so that, detached from visible things, they live only to God ; as if there was no one else but God, whom alone they love and desire to please. And in this way they almost go out of the world, and raise themselves above it ; enjoying the delights which are experienced by those who wish for God alone, and who place in God all their hopes. Who, then, are these faithful souls, if not those who often and with pure love unite themselves to Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament ?

Yes, my God, such do I also desire to be by the means of Thy grace, detached from all things, and to be all Thine. Henceforth the world shall be to me a desert, where, flying from all attachment to creatures, I will think of nothing but Thee ; as if Thou and I were the only persons there. In Thee alone will I put all my confidence, all my love, O God, O beloved God, my hope, my love, my all.

## VI.

*Si murus est, ædificemus super eum propugnacula argentea ; si ostium est, compingamus illud tabulis cedrinis !*<sup>1</sup>—“ If she be a wall, let us build upon it bulwarks of silver ; if she be a door, let us join it together with boards of cedar.”

This is precisely what Jesus does when he comes to a soul in the Holy Communion. He sees that she is a wall too weak to be able to resist the assaults of hell ; therefore, by the virtue of the sacrament, he fortifies her with bulwarks of silver, that is, with his divine light. He sees that she is a door inclined easily to be corrupted, and he renews it, adjusting her with planks of strength and perseverance, as is signified by cedar, which is a strong and incorruptible wood ;

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* viii. 9.

that is, with the gifts of holy fear, with detachment from creatures, with the love of prayer, with supplications, with holy desires, and still more with the gift of divine love, which are the support of holy perseverance: *Bread strengthens man's heart.*<sup>1</sup> Jesus teaches us, that as earthly bread preserves the life of the body, so the heavenly bread of the Holy Communion preserves the life of the soul: *He that eateth Me, the same shall live by Me.*<sup>2</sup> *He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abideth in Me and I in him.*<sup>3</sup> Such are the gracious promises which Jesus makes to him who receives him in the Blessed Sacrament.

Ah, my Jesus! who is weaker and more unfaithful than I? Thou knowest well how many times I have yielded to my enemies, and how many times they have seized the gate, that is, my will, by which they have entered to ruin me by causing me to lose Thy friendship. Oh, fortify me with Thy light and strength, that I may no more lose Thee or drive Thee from me! My Lord and my dear Redeemer, if I am to turn back and offend Thee again, oh, let me die now, while I hope that I am in Thy grace and united to Thee! I trust not myself; no, nor will I ever, my dear Jesus, live without Thee. But as long as I live, I am in danger of changing my will and betraying Thee, as I have done before: do Thou help me. Help me also, most holy Mary; have pity on me: thou who art the Mother of perseverance, obtain for me this gift from thy Jesus. Of thee I seek it, of thee I hope it, of thee I ask it.

VII.

*Inveni, quem diligit anima mea; tenui eum, nec dimittam!*<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Panis cor hominis confirmet."—*Ps.* ciii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui manducat me, et ipse vivet propter me."—*John*, vi. 58.

<sup>3</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem et bibit meum sanguinem, in me manet, et ego in illo."—*Ibid.* 57.

<sup>4</sup> *Cant.* iii. 4.

—"I found Him whom my soul loveth: I held Him, and I will not let Him go."

So ought every soul to say who is united with Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament: Creatures, depart from me; go out altogether from my heart. I loved you once, because I was blind; now I love you not, nor can I ever love you again. I have found another good, infinitely more delightful than you; I have found in myself my Jesus, who has enamoured me by his beauty; to this love I have given myself entirely. He has already accepted me, so that I am no longer my own. Creatures, farewell: I am not, nor shall I ever again be yours; but I am and shall be always Christ's. He, too, is mine, and will always be mine: *I held Him, and I will not let Him go.*<sup>1</sup> Now I have pressed him to my heart, receiving him in the Holy Communion; for the future I will hold him with my love, and will not let him leave me any more.

Permit me, sweet Saviour, to embrace Thee so closely, that I may never more be separated from Thee. Behold, I press Thee to myself, my Jesus; I love Thee, I love Thee; and, oh, that I could love Thee worthily. I wish that my only happiness and repose should be to love Thee and please Thee. Do Thou command all creatures to leave me, and not to disturb me; say to them, *I adjure you, do not arouse or waken My love.*<sup>2</sup> Ah, if I do not wish it, creatures cannot enter in to disturb and divide me from Thee. Strengthen, then, my will, unite my miserable heart to Thy divine heart, that it may always will what Thou wilt. Do this, Lord, by Thy merits. Amen, amen. So do I hope; so may it be.

<sup>1</sup> "Inveni, quem diligit anima mea; tenui eum, nec dimittam."—*Cant.* iii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Adjuro vos, . . . ne suscitetis neque evigilare faciatis dilectam."—*Cant.* viii. 4.



VIII.

*Surge, aquilo, et veni, auster; perfla hortum meum, et fluant aromata illius*<sup>1</sup>—"Arise, O north wind, and come, O south wind, blow through my garden, and let the aromatical spices thereof flow."

Fly from me, O north wind! hurtful and cold wind of earthly affections; and come, thou soft, warm breeze of the sacred love of the Holy Spirit, which comes from the Heart of my Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament. Do thou alone breathe through my soul, which has been chosen by Jesus for his garden of delights. Blow; for by thy breath how many fresh and sweet odors of holy virtues shalt thou draw forth from me! My Jesus, my Jesus, Thou canst do this; and this do I hope from Thee.

IX.

*Messui myrrham meam cum aromatibus meis, comedi favum cum melle meo*<sup>2</sup>—"I have gathered my myrrh, with my aromatical spices: I have eaten the honeycomb with my honey."

A soul which has received Jesus must be careful to gather myrrh, that it may always offer the sweet odor of those virtues which arise from mortification. *I have eaten honeycomb with my honey.* In like manner, the soul that loves God alone is not satisfied with the honey, but will also have the honeycomb; therefore it says to Jesus: O Lord, Thy consolations are not sufficient for me, unless Thou givest me Thyself, who art the fountain of consolation; the fruits of love are not enough for me, if Thou dost not give me also Thyself, who art the object of my love. Truly Thou alone wilt suffice for me; I am ready to renounce all Thy delights, provided I possess Thee alone, my God, and my only good. I love

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> *Cant.* v. 1.

Thee, not to please myself, but to please Thee; for Thou dost desire to be loved by me, and Thou art worthy of all our love, whether Thou dost console or try us.

## X.

*Nihil mihi deerit; in loco pascuæ ibi me collocavit*<sup>1</sup>—"He hath set me in a place of pasture, and I shall want nothing."

Ah, my beloved Jesus! since Thou dost invite me in this feast of love to feed on Thy divine flesh, what more can I ever want? *The Lord is my light and my salvation, whom shall I fear?*<sup>2</sup> Whom shall I fear, if Thou, O God omnipotent, art my light and my salvation? I give myself all to Thee. Accept me, and then do with me what Thou wilt; chastise me, show Thine indignation towards me when Thou wilt; kill me, destroy me, and I will say always, with Job: *Although He should kill me, I will trust in Him.*<sup>3</sup> Whilst I am Thine, and Thou lovest me, I am content to be treated by Thee with every hardship; to be even annihilated, if it so pleases Thee.

## XI.

*In manibus meis descripsi te; muri tui coram oculis meis semper*<sup>4</sup>—"I have graven thee in My hands; thy walls are always before My eyes."

See the loving care that God takes of a soul that he wishes to have to himself. He carries it written in his hands, so that he may never forget it, and says, that sooner would a mother forget her own son than he a soul in grace: *And if she should forget, yet*

<sup>1</sup> *Ps.* xxii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> "Dominus illuminatio mea et salus mea; quem timebo?"—*Ps.* xxvi. 1.

<sup>3</sup> "Etiam si occiderit me, in ipso sperabo."—*Job*, xiii. 15.

<sup>4</sup> *Isa.* xlix. 16.

*will I not forget thee.*<sup>1</sup> *And thy walls are always before My eyes.* His eyes are always open, to watch over that soul, so that its enemies do it not harm: *Thou hast crowned us, as with a shield of Thy good-will.*<sup>2</sup> Our good God surrounds us with the protection of his good-will, wholly solicitous for our good; and so he delivers us from all dangers. Ah, my God! infinite goodness, who more than any other lovest me and desirest my good, I abandon myself entirely to Thee. Should every other hope fall me, Thou wilt never fail me. I know that I also must co-operate by obeying Thy holy will. *Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?*<sup>3</sup> Nothing else can I say; behold me ready and determined, my sweet Saviour, to do what Thou plearest: *Thy will be done.*<sup>4</sup> Nothing else do I desire but to accomplish Thy will. But do Thou help me, otherwise I shall do no good at all. Teach me not only to know, but also to do, all that pleases Thee: *teach me to do Thy will.*<sup>5</sup> Eternal Father, grant that I may be able to say with truth, as Thy Jesus did whilst he was on earth: *I always do the things that are pleasing to Him.*<sup>6</sup> My God! this I desire, this I pray for, and this I hope, through the merits of Thy Son and the most holy Mary.

## XII.

*Præbe, fili mi, cor tuum mihi*<sup>7</sup>—"My son, give Me thy heart."

O my soul, behold this is all that thy Lord asks of thee; when he comes to visit thee, he would have thy

<sup>1</sup> "Et si illa oblita fuerit, ego tamen non obliviscar tui."—*Isa.* xlix. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "Scuto bonæ voluntatis tuæ coronasti nos."—*Ps.* v. 13.

<sup>3</sup> "Domine, quid me vis facere?"—*Acts.* xii. 6.

<sup>4</sup> "Fiat voluntas tua."—*Matt.* vi. 10.

<sup>5</sup> "Doce me facere voluntatem tuam."—*Ps.* cxlii. 10.

<sup>6</sup> "Ego, quæ placita sunt ei, facio semper."—*John.* viii. 29.

<sup>7</sup> *Prov.* xxiii. 26.

heart and thy will. He gives himself to thee without reserve; it is but reasonable that thou shouldst also give him all thyself without reserve, taking care to follow his will in all things: *For the Lord will return to rejoice over thee in all good things.*<sup>1</sup> Act in such a manner as that Jesus, when he comes to thee again, may find that thou hast executed all his designs. My Jesus! I wish to please Thee; help Thou my desire. Give me strength, and do with me whatsoever Thou pleasest.

## XIII.

*Quid est quod debui ultra facere vineæ meæ, et non feci ei?*<sup>2</sup> —“What is there that I ought to do to my vineyard, that I have not done to it?”

My soul, hear what thy God says to thee: What ought I to do more for thee than I have done? For love of thee I became man: *I am the Word made flesh.*<sup>3</sup> Instead of Lord, I have become servant: *taking the form of a servant.*<sup>4</sup> I went so far as to be born in a stable, like a worm—for worms are born in stables: *I am a worm, and no man.*<sup>5</sup> I died for thee, I died upon the tree of shame: *I was made obedient to death, even the death of the Cross.*<sup>6</sup> What remained more for me to do, but to give my life for thee? *Greater love than this no man hath, that he should lay down his life for his friends.*<sup>7</sup> But my love has invented and done more for thee. After my death, I have chosen to leave myself in the Most Blessed Sacrament,

<sup>1</sup> “Revertetur enim Dominus, ut gaudeat super te in omnibus bonis.”—*Deut.* xxx. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Is.* v. 4.

<sup>3</sup> “Verbum caro factum est.”—*John*, i. 14.

<sup>4</sup> “Formam servi accipiens.”—*Phil.* ii. 7.

<sup>5</sup> “Sum vermis et non homo.”—*Ps.* xxi. 7.

<sup>6</sup> “Factus obediens usque ad mortem, mortem autem crucis.”—*Phil.* ii. 8.

<sup>7</sup> “Majorem hac dilectionem nemo habet, ut animam suam ponat quis pro amicis suis.”—*John*, xv. 13.

to give my whole self as food. Tell me what more could I have done to gain thy love?

It is true, my Lord and my Redeemer; what can I answer? I have nothing to say. Thou hast been too good to me, and I have been too ungrateful towards Thee. I wonder at Thy immense goodness; I see my own baseness, and I throw myself at Thy feet, and say: Have pity on me, my Jesus, though I have repaid Thy love with so much ingratitude. Avenge Thyself, therefore, I pray Thee, avenge Thyself upon me, and chastise me; but do not abandon me; chastise me and change me. Let me not live any longer ungrateful to Thee. Grant that I may love Thee at least out of gratitude, and that before I die I may make Thee some recompense for Thy love.

XIV.

*Pone me ut signaculum super cor tuum*<sup>1</sup>—"Put Me as a seal upon thy heart."

Yes, my beloved Jesus, since I have consecrated to Thee my whole heart, it is but just that I should put Thee as a seal of love upon it, to close the entrance against any other affection; and thus to make known to all that my heart is Thine, and that Thou alone possessest dominion over it. But, my Lord, what dost Thou hope from me, if Thou dost not do the work Thyself? I can do nothing but give Thee my poor heart, that Thou mayest dispose of me according to Thy pleasure. Behold, I give it all to Thee, I consecrate it to Thee, I sacrifice it to Thee. Do Thou possess it forever; I will no longer have any part in it. If Thou lovest it, mayest Thou be able to preserve it for Thyself. Leave it no longer in my hands, lest I should again take it from Thee. O God most gracious, O infinite love, since Thou hast so constrained me to

<sup>1</sup> *Cant.* viii. 6.

love Thee, I pray Thee, make Thyself loved, make Thyself loved by me. I only wish to live that I may love Thee, I only wish to love Thee in order to please Thee. Thou who dost work miracles to be able to enter into my heart in this sacrament, work also this one, make my heart all Thine; but all, all, all, without division, without reserve, so that I may say, both in this life and in eternity, that Thou art the only Lord of my heart, and my only treasure: *God is the God of my heart, and my portion forever.*<sup>1</sup>

Most holy Mary, my Mother and my hope, do thou help me, and I shall certainly be heard. Amen, amen. This I wish, this I hope. So be it.

<sup>1</sup> "Deus cordis mei, et pars mea, Deus in æternum."—*Ps.* lxxii. 26.



## HYMNS.

## I.

**Holy Communion.**

MY soul, what dost thou? Answer me—  
Love God, who loves thee well:—  
Love only does he ask of thee,  
Canst thou his love repel?

See, how on earth for love of thee,  
In lowly form of bread,  
The sovereign good and majesty  
His dwelling-place has made.

He bids thee now his friendship prove,  
And at his table eat;  
To share the bread of life and love,  
His own true flesh thy meat.

What other gift so great, so high,  
Could God himself impart?  
Could love divine do more to buy  
The love of thy poor heart?

Though once, in agonies of pain,  
Upon the cross he died,  
A love so great, not even then  
Was wholly satisfied.

Not till the hour when he had found  
The sweet, mysterious way  
To join his heart in closest bond  
To thy poor heart of clay.

How, then, amid such ardent flame,  
 My soul, dost thou not burn?  
 Canst thou refuse, for very shame,  
 A loving heart's return?

Then yield thy heart, at length, to love  
 That God of charity,  
 Who gives his very self to prove  
 The love he bears to thee.

## II.

### To Jesus after Communion.

O bread of heaven! beneath this veil  
 Thou dost my very God conceal;  
 My Jesus, dearest treasure, hail!  
 I love Thee, and adoring kneel:  
 The loving soul by Thee is fed  
 With Thy own self in form of bread!

O food of life! Thou who dost give  
 The pledge of immortality!  
 I live;—no, 'tis not I that live,  
 God gives me life, God lives in me:  
 He feeds my soul, he guides my ways  
 And every grief with joy repays.

O bond of love! that dost unite  
 The servant to his loving Lord!  
 Could I dare live, and not requite  
 Such loving—then death were meet reward:  
 I cannot live, unless to prove  
 Some love for such unmeasured love.

O mighty fire! thou that dost burn  
 To kindle every mind and heart!  
 For Thee my frozen soul doth yearn:  
 Come, Lord of love, Thy warmth impart.  
 If thus to speak too bold appear,  
 'Tis love like Thine has banished fear.

O sweetest dart of love divine !

If I have sinned, then vengeance take :

Come, pierce this guilty heart of mine,

And let it die for his dear sake

Who once expired on Calvary,

His heart pierced through for love of me.

My dearest good ! who dost so bind

My heart with countless chains to Thee !

O sweetest love, my soul shall find

In Thy dear bonds true liberty,

Thyself Thou hast bestowed on me,

Thine, Thine forever I will be !

Beloved Lord ! in heaven above,—

There, Jesus, Thou awaitest me

To gaze on Thee with changeless love.

Yes, thus I hope,—thus shall it be :

For how can he deny me heaven,

Who here on earth himself hath given ?



Visits to the Blessed Sacrament and to the Blessed  
Virgin.

THIS treatise, called the Visits to the Blessed Sacrament and to the Blessed Virgin, is the first work that St. Alphonsus published : this was in the year 1745. This first-born of his pen has met from its appearance with marvellous success, not only in Italy, but in Europe and the whole Catholic world. During the lifetime of the holy author it was translated into nearly every language. After more than a century the reputation that it has enjoyed instead of diminishing has ever increased. Our saint also composed other acts for Visits to the Blessed Sacrament and to the Blessed Virgin. These are to be found in Volume XVI.—ED.



## TO MARY,

THE EVER-IMMACULATE VIRGIN MOTHER OF GOD.

MY most holy Queen,—On the point of publishing the present little work, in which I treat of the love of thy Son, I know not to whom I can better dedicate it than to thee, my most beloved Mother, who, amongst all creatures, art his most tender lover. I believe that by this little offering which I present to thee, and which is composed for the sole purpose of inflaming souls more and more with the love of Jesus Christ,—I believe, I say, that by it I shall greatly please thee, who desirest to see him loved by all as he deserves. To thee, then, I consecrate it, such as it is; do thou graciously accept and protect it; not indeed that I may receive the praises of men, but that all who read it may for the future correspond, by their greater devotion and affection, with the tender and excessive love which our most sweet Saviour has been pleased to show us in his Passion, and in the institution of the Most Holy Sacrament. As such, I place it at thy feet, and beseech thee to accept the gift as wholly thine, as also the giver, who has long since placed all his hopes in thee, and wishes and hopes always to call himself, and to rejoice in being,

Most gracious Lady,

Thy most loving, though most unworthy servant,

ALPHONSUS DE LIGUORI,

*Of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer*

### TO THE READER.

I BEG, my dear reader, that you will not despise this little book, though written with the utmost simplicity. I have composed it in a style very simple, because I believe that it will thus more likely promote devotion amongst all classes of persons. I also beg that whether I am living or dead you will recommend me to the Most Holy Sacrament each time that you use it ; and on my part I promise to pray for all who do me this act of charity, every time I offer up the Most Holy Sacrifice.

## Introduction.

### I.

#### The Visit to the Most Holy Sacrament.

OUR holy faith teaches us, and we are bound to believe, that in the consecrated Host Jesus Christ is really present under the species of bread. But we must also understand that he is thus present on our altars as on a throne of love and mercy, to dispense graces and there to show us the love which he bears us, by being pleased to dwell night and day hidden in the midst of us.

It is well known that the Holy Church instituted the festival of Corpus Christi with a solemn octave, and that she celebrates it with the many usual processions, and so frequent expositions of this Most Holy Sacrament, that men may thereby be moved gratefully to acknowledge and honor this loving presence and dwelling of Jesus Christ in the Sacrament of the Altar, by their devotions, thanksgivings, and the tender affections of their souls. O God ! how many insults and outrages has not this amiable Redeemer had, and has he not daily, to endure in this sacrament on the part of those very men for whose love he remains upon their altars on earth ! Of this he indeed complained to his dear servant Sister Margaret Alacoque, as the author of the *Book of Devotion to the Heart of Jesus* relates. One day, as she was in prayer before the Most Holy Sacrament, Jesus showed her his heart on a throne of flames, crowned with thorns, and surmounted by a cross, and thus addressed her : “Behold that heart which has loved men so much, and which has spared itself nothing ; and has even gone so far as to consume itself, thereby to show them its love ;

but in return the greater part of men only show me ingratitude, and this by the irreverences, tepidity, sacrileges, and contempt which they offer me in this sacrament of love ; and that which I feel the most acutely is, that they are hearts consecrated to me." Jesus then expressed his wish, that the first Friday after the octave of Corpus Christi should be dedicated as a particular festival in honor of his adorable heart ; and that on that day all souls who loved him should endeavor, by their homage, and by the affections of their souls, to make amends for the insults which men have offered him in this sacrament of the Altar ; and at the same time he promised abundant graces to all who should thus honor him.

We can thus understand what our Lord said of old by his prophet, that his delight is to be with the children of men ;<sup>1</sup> since he is unable to tear himself from them even when they abandon and despise him. This also shows us how agreeable all those souls are to the heart of Jesus who frequently visit him, and remain in his company in the churches in which he is, under the sacramental species. He desired St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi to visit him in the Most Blessed Sacrament thirty-three times a day ; and this beloved spouse of his faithfully obeyed him, and in all her visits to the altar approached it as near as she possibly could, as we read in her life.

But let all those devout souls who often go to spend their time with the Most Blessed Sacrament speak ;—let them tell us the gifts, the inspirations which they have received, the flames of love which are there enkindled in their souls, the paradise which they enjoy in the presence of this hidden God.

The servant of God and great Sicilian missionary Fa-

<sup>1</sup> *Prov.* viii. 31.

ther, Louis La Nusa, was, even in his youth and as a layman, so enamoured of Jesus Christ, that he seemed unable to tear himself from the presence of his beloved Lord. Such were the joys which he there experienced, that his director commanded him, in virtue of obedience, not to remain there for more than an hour. The time having elapsed, he showed in obeying (says the author of his life), that in tearing himself from the bosom of Jesus Christ he had to do himself just such violence as a child that has to detach itself from its mother's breast in the very moment in which it is satiating itself with the utmost avidity; and when he had to do this, we are told that he remained standing with his eyes fixed on the altar, making repeated inclinations, as if he knew not how to quit his Lord, whose presence was so sweet and gracious to him. To St. Aloysius it was also forbidden to remain in the presence of the Most Blessed Sacrament; and as he used to pass before it, finding himself drawn, so to speak, by the sweet attractions of his Lord, and almost forced to remain there, he would, with the greatest effort, tear himself away, saying, with an excess of tender love: *Depart from me, O Lord, depart!*<sup>1</sup> There it was also that St. Francis Xavier found refreshment in the midst of his many labors in India; for he employed his days in toiling for souls, and his nights in the presence of the Most Blessed Sacrament. St. John Francis Regis did the same thing; and sometimes finding the church closed, he endeavored to satisfy his longings by remaining on his knees outside the door, exposed to the rain and cold, that at least at a distance he might attend upon his comforter concealed under the sacramental species. St. Francis of Assisi used to go to communicate all his labors and undertakings to Jesus in the

<sup>1</sup> "Recede a me, Domine, recede!"

Most Holy Sacrament. But tender indeed was the devotion of St. Wenceslaus, duke of Bohemia, to the Most Holy Sacrament. This holy king was so enamoured of Jesus there present, that he not only gathered the wheat and grapes, and made the hosts and wine with his own hands, and then gave them to be used in the Holy Sacrifice, but he used, even during the winter, to go at night to visit the church in which the Blessed Sacrament was kept. These visits enkindled in his beautiful soul such flames of divine love, that their ardor imparted itself even to his body, and took from the snow on which he walked its wonted cold ; for it is related that the servant who accompanied him in these nightly excursions, having to walk through the snow, suffered much from the cold. The holy king, on perceiving this, was moved to compassion, and commanded him to follow him, and only to step in his footmarks ; he did so, and never afterwards felt the cold.

In the visits you will read other examples of the tender affection with which souls inflamed with the love of God loved to dwell in the presence of the Most Holy Sacrament. But you will find that all the saints were enamoured of this most sweet devotion ; since, indeed, it is impossible to find on earth a more precious gem, or a treasure more worthy of all our love, than Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament. Certainly amongst all devotions, after that of receiving the sacraments, that of adoring Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament holds the first place, is the most pleasing to God, and the most useful to ourselves. Do not then, O devout soul, refuse to begin this devotion ; and forsaking the conversation of men, dwell each day, from this time forward, for at least half or quarter of an hour, in some church, in the presence of Jesus Christ under the sacramental species. *Taste and see how sweet is the Lord.*<sup>1</sup> Only try this de-

<sup>1</sup> "Gustate, et videte quoniam suavis est Dominus."—*Ps.* xxxiii. 9.



votion, and by experience you will see the great benefit that you will derive from it. Be assured that the time you will thus spend with devotion before this most divine Sacrament will be the most profitable to you in life, and the source of your greatest consolation in death and in eternity. You must also be aware, that in a quarter of an hour's prayer spent in the presence of the Blessed Sacrament, you will perhaps gain more than in all the other spiritual exercises of the day. It is true, that in every place God graciously hears the petitions of those who pray to him, having promised to do so : *Ask, and you shall receive* ;<sup>1</sup> yet the disciple tells us that Jesus dispenses his graces in greater abundance to those who visit him in the Most Holy Sacrament. Blessed Henry Suso used also to say that Jesus Christ hears the prayers of the faithful more graciously in the sacrament of the altar than elsewhere. And where, indeed, did holy souls make their most beautiful resolutions, but prostrate before the Most Holy Sacrament ? Who knows but that you also may one day, in the presence of the tabernacle, make the resolution to give yourself entirely to God ? In this little book I feel myself bound, at least out of gratitude to my Jesus in the Holy Sacrament, to declare, that through the means of this devotion of visiting the Most Blessed Sacrament, which I practised, though with so much tepidity and in so imperfect a manner, I abandoned the world, in which, unfortunately, I lived until I was six-and-twenty years of age. Fortunate indeed will you be if you can detach yourself from it at an earlier period, and give yourself without reserve to that Lord who has given himself without reserve to you. I repeat it, that indeed you will be blessed, not only in eternity, but even in this life. Believe me, all is folly : feasts, theatres, parties of pleasure, amusements,—these are the

<sup>1</sup> “ *Petite et accipietis.*—*John*, xvi. 24.



goods of the world, but goods which are filled with the bitterness of gall and with sharp thorns. Believe me, who have experienced this and now weep over it. Be also assured that Jesus Christ finds means to console a soul that remains with a recollected spirit before the Most Blessed Sacrament, far beyond what the world can do with all its feasts and pastimes. Oh, how sweet a joy it is to remain with faith and tender devotion before an altar, and converse familiarly with Jesus Christ, who is there for the express purpose of listening to and graciously hearing those who pray to him; to ask his pardon for the displeasures which we have caused him; to represent our wants to him, as a friend does to a friend in whom he places all his confidence; to ask him for his graces, for his love, and for his kingdom; but above all, oh, what a heaven is it there to remain making acts of love towards that Lord who is on the very altar praying to the Eternal Father for us, and is there burning with love for us. Indeed that love it is which detains him there, thus hidden and unknown, and when he is even despised by ungrateful souls! But why should we say more? “Taste and see.”

## II.

### The Visit to the Blessed Virgin.

And now as to the visits to the Most Blessed Virgin, the opinion of St. Bernard is well known, and generally believed: it is, that God dispenses no graces otherwise than through the hands of Mary: “God wills that we should receive nothing that does not pass through Mary’s hands.”<sup>1</sup> Hence Father Suarez declares that it is now the sentiment of the universal Church, that “the intercession of Mary is not only useful, but even necessary to

<sup>1</sup> “Nihil nos Deus voluit habere, quod per Mariæ manus non transiret.”—*In Vig. Nat. Dom.* s. 3.

obtain graces.”<sup>1</sup> \* And we may remark that the Church gives us strong grounds for this belief, by applying the words of the Sacred Scripture to Mary, and making her say: *In me is all hope of life and of virtue. Come over to me, all ye that desire me.*<sup>2</sup> Let all come to me; for I am the hope of all that you can desire. Hence she then adds: *Blessed is the man that heareth me, and that watcheth daily at my gates, and waiteth at the posts of my doors.*<sup>3</sup> Blessed is he who is diligent in coming every day to the door of my powerful intercession; for by finding me he will find life and eternal salvation: *He that shall find me shall find life, and shall have salvation from the Lord.*<sup>4</sup> Hence it is not without reason that the Holy Church wills that we should all call her our common hope, by saluting her, saying, “Hail, our hope!”

“Let us then,” says St. Bernard (who went so far as to call Mary “the whole ground of his hope”), “seek for graces, and seek them through Mary.”<sup>5</sup> Otherwise, says St. Antoninus, if we ask for graces without her intercession, we shall be making an effort to fly without wings, and we shall obtain nothing: “He who asks without her as his guide, attempts to fly without wings.”<sup>6</sup>

In Father Auriemma’s little book, *Affetti Scambievoli*,<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “Sentit Ecclesia Virginis intercessionem esse utilem et necessariam.”—*De Inc.* p. 2, q. 37, a. 4, d. 23.

<sup>2</sup> “In me omnis spes vitæ et virtutis. Transite ad me omnes.”—*Ecclus.* xxiv. 25.

<sup>3</sup> “Beatus homo qui audit me, et qui vigilat ad fores meas quotidie, et observat ad postes ostii mei.”—*Prov.* viii. 34.

<sup>4</sup> “Qui me invenerit, inveniet vitam, et hauriet salutem a Domino.”—*Ibid.* 35.

<sup>5</sup> “Quæramus gratiam, et per Mariam quæramus.”—*De Aquæd.*

<sup>6</sup> “Qui petit sine ipsa duce, sine alis tentat volare.”—P. 4, tit. 15, c. 22.

<sup>7</sup> *Affetti Scamb.* p. 2, c. 3.

---

\* This question is treated at length in the *Glories of Mary*, Part I. ch. 5.

we read of innumerable favors granted by the Mother of God to those who practised this most profitable devotion of often visiting her in her churches or before some image. We read of the graces which she granted in these visits to Blessed Albert the Great, to the Abbot Rupert, to Father Suarez, especially when she obtained for them the gift of understanding, by which they afterwards became so renowned throughout the Church for their great learning: the graces which she granted to the Venerable John Berchmans of the Society of Jesus, who was in the daily habit of visiting Mary in a chapel of the Roman college; he declared that he renounced all earthly love, to love no other after God than the Most Blessed Virgin, and had written at the foot of the image of his beloved Lady: "I will never rest until I shall have obtained a tender love for my Mother:"<sup>1</sup> the graces which she granted to St. Bernardine of Sienna, who in his youth also went every day to visit her in a chapel near the city-gate, and declared that that Lady had ravished his heart. Hence he called her his beloved, and said that he could not do less than often visit her; and by her means he afterwards obtained the grace to renounce the world, and to become what he afterwards was, a great saint and the apostle of Italy.

Do you, then, be also careful always to join to your daily visit to the Most Blessed Sacrament a visit to the most holy Virgin Mary in some church, or at least before a devout image of her in your own house. If you do this with tender affection and confidence, you may hope to receive great things from this most gracious Lady, who, as St. Andrew of Crete says, always bestows great gifts on those who offer her even the least act of homage.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Nunquam quiescam, donec obtinero tenerum amorem erga Matrem meam."

<sup>2</sup> "Solet maxima pro minimis reddere."—*In Dorm. B. V. s. 3.*

Mary, Queen of sweetest hope,  
Who can e'er forget thee?  
By thy mercy, by thy love,  
Have pity, Queen, on me?

## III.

**Spiritual Communion.**

As in all the following visits to the Most Blessed Sacrament a spiritual Communion is recommended, it will be well to explain what it is, and the great advantages which result from its practice. A spiritual Communion, according to St. Thomas,<sup>1</sup> consists in an ardent desire to receive Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament, and in lovingly embracing him as if we had actually received him.

How pleasing these spiritual Communions are to God, and the many graces which he bestows through their means, was manifested by our Lord himself to Sister Paula Maresca, the foundress of the convent of St. Catharine of Sienna in Naples, when (as it is related in her life) he showed her two precious vessels, the one of gold, the other of silver. He then told her that in the gold vessel he preserved her sacramental Communions, and in the silver one her spiritual Communions. He also told Blessed Jane of the Cross that each time that she communicated spiritually she received a grace of the same kind as the one that she received when she really communicated. Above all, it will suffice for us to know that the holy Council of Trent<sup>2</sup> greatly praises spiritual Communions, and encourages the faithful to practise them.

Hence all devout souls are accustomed often to practise this holy exercise of spiritual Communion. Blessed Agatha of the Cross did so two hundred times a day.

<sup>1</sup> P. 3, q. 80, a. 1.<sup>2</sup> *Sess.* xiii. c. 8.

And Father Peter Faber, the first companion of St. Ignatius, used to say that it was of the highest utility to make spiritual Communions, in order to receive the sacramental Communion well.

All those who desire to advance in the love of Jesus Christ are exhorted to make a spiritual Communion at least once in every visit that they pay to the Most Blessed Sacrament, and at every Mass that they hear; and it would even be better on these occasions to repeat the Communions three times, that is to say, at the beginning, in the middle, and at the end. This devotion is far more profitable than some suppose, and at the same time nothing can be easier to practise. The above-named Blessed Jane of the Cross used to say, that a spiritual Communion can be made without any one remarking it, without being fasting, without the permission of our director, and that we can make it at any time we please: an act of love does all.

### Manner of Making the Visits.\*

ACTS TO BE MADE BEFORE EACH VISIT TO THE MOST  
BLESSED SACRAMENT.

My Lord Jesus Christ, who, for the love which Thou bearest to men, remainest night and day in this Sacrament full of compassion and of love, awaiting, calling, and welcoming all who come to visit Thee: I believe that Thou art present in the Sacrament of the Altar: I adore Thee from the abyss of my nothingness, and I thank Thee for all the graces which Thou hast bestowed upon me, and in particular for having given me Thyself in this Sacrament, for having given me Thy most holy Mother Mary for my advocate, and for having called me to visit Thee in this church.

I now salute Thy most loving Heart; and this for three ends: 1. In thanksgiving for this great gift; 2. To make amends to Thee for all the outrages which Thou receivest in this Sacrament from all Thine enemies; 3. I intend by this visit to adore Thee in all the places on earth in which Thou art present in this Sacrament, and

---

\* His Holiness, Pius IX., by an autograph rescript, September 7, 1854, confirmed August 8 and September 23, 1859, attached to each of the two prayers of St. Alphonsus, beginning with the words, *My Lord Jesus Christ,—Most Holy Immaculate Virgin*,—an indulgence of three hundred days each time that one recites with, at least contrite heart, either the first before the Blessed Sacrament, or the second before an image of the Blessed Virgin. His Holiness granted, besides, a *plenary indulgence*, once a month, to persons who during this time recite every day both those prayers in the manner indicated, provided they confess and communicate and pray for some time to the intention of the Sovereign Pontiff.—ED.



in which Thou art the least revered and the most abandoned.

My Jesus, I love Thee with my whole heart. I grieve for having hitherto so many times offended Thy infinite goodness. I purpose by Thy grace never more to offend Thee for the time to come; and now, miserable and unworthy though I be, I consecrate myself to Thee without reserve; I give Thee and renounce my entire will, my affections, my desires, and all that I possess. From henceforward do Thou dispose of me and of all that I have as Thou pleasest. All that I ask of Thee and desire is Thy holy love, final perseverance, and the perfect accomplishment of Thy will.

I recommend to Thee the souls in purgatory; but especially those who had the greatest devotion to the Most Blessed Sacrament and to the Most Blessed Virgin Mary. I also recommend to Thee all poor sinners.

In fine, my dear Saviour, I unite all my affections with the affections of Thy most loving Heart; and I offer them, thus united, to Thy Eternal Father, and beseech him in Thy name to vouchsafe, for Thy love, to accept and grant them.

#### AN ACT OF SPIRITUAL COMMUNION.

My Jesus, I believe that Thou art truly present in the Most Blessed Sacrament. I love Thee above all things, and I desire to possess Thee within my soul. Since I am unable now to receive Thee sacramentally, come at least spiritually into my heart. I embrace Thee as being already there, and unite myself wholly to Thee; never permit me to be separated from Thee.

#### A SHORTER ACT.

I believe that Thou, O Jesus, art in the Most Holy Sacrament! I love Thee and desire Thee! Come into my heart. I embrace Thee; oh, never leave me!



"May the burning and most sweet power of Thy love, O Lord Jesus Christ, I beseech Thee, absorb my mind, that I may die through love of Thy love, who wast graciously pleased to die through love of my love."<sup>1</sup>—

*St. Francis of Assisi.*

"O love not loved! O love not known!"—*St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi.*

"O my spouse, when wilt Thou take me to Thyself?"—*St. Peter of Alcantara.*

Jesus, my good, my sweetest love,  
Strike and inflame this heart of mine,  
Make it all fire for love of Thee!

Hail to the love of Jesus, our life, and our all! Hail to Mary, our hope! Amen.

After the spiritual Communion, you will then make a visit to some image of the Blessed Virgin Mary.

#### VISIT TO THE BLESSED VIRGIN.

Read the visit of the day, and finish by the following prayer, thereby to obtain the most powerful patronage of Mary:

Most holy Immaculate Virgin and my Mother Mary, to thee who art the Mother of my Lord, the Queen of the world, the advocate, the hope, the refuge of sinners, I have recourse to-day,—I, who am the most miserable of all. I render thee my most humble homages, O Great Queen, and I thank thee for all the graces thou hast conferred on me until now, particularly for having delivered me from hell, which I have so often deserved. I love thee, O most amiable Lady; and for the love which I bear thee, I promise to serve thee always, and to do all in my power to make others love thee also. I place in

<sup>1</sup> "Absorbeat, quæso, Domine Jesu Christe, mentem meam ignita et melliflua vis amoris tui, ut amore amoris tui moriar, qui amore amoris mei dignatus es mori!"

thee all my hopes; I confide my salvation to thy care. Accept me for thy servant, and receive me under thy mantle, O Mother of mercy. And since thou art so powerful with God, deliver me from all temptations, or rather obtain me the strength to triumph over them until death. Of thee I ask a perfect love for Jesus Christ. From thee I hope to die a good death. O my Mother, by the love which thou bearest to God, I beseech thee to help me at all times, but especially at the last moment of my life. Leave me not, I beseech thee, until thou seest me safe in heaven, blessing thee, and singing thy mercies for all eternity. Amen. So I hope. So may it be.

## Visits to the Blessed Sacrament, and to the Blessed Virgin.

FOR EACH DAY OF THE MONTH.

### FIRST VISIT.\*

#### To the Blessed Sacrament.

Say preliminary prayer, *My Lord Jesus Christ*, etc., page 123.

Behold the source of every good, Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament, who says, *If any man thirst, let him come to Me.*<sup>1</sup> Oh, what torrents of grace have the saints drawn from the fountain of the Most Blessed Sacrament! for there Jesus dispenses all the merits of his Passion, as it was foretold by the Prophet: *You shall draw waters with joy out of the Saviour's fountains.*<sup>2</sup> The Countess of Feria, that illustrious disciple of the Venerable Father John d'Avila, afterwards a poor Clare, and surnamed the spouse of the Most Blessed Sacrament from her long and frequent visits to it, on being asked how she employed the many hours thus passed in the presence of the Holy of holies, answered: "I could remain there for all eternity. And is not there present the very essence of God, who will be the food of the blessed? Good God! am I asked what I do in his presence? Why am I not rather asked, what is not done there? We love, we ask, we praise, we give thanks. We ask, what does a poor man do in the presence of one who is rich? What does a sick man do in the presence of his physician? What does a man do who is parched with thirst in the

<sup>1</sup> "Qui sitit, veniat ad me."—*John*, vii. 37.

<sup>2</sup> "Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus Salvatoris."—*Isa.* xii. 3.

---

\* See manner of making the Visits, page 123.

presence of a clear fountain? What is the occupation of one who is starving, and is placed before a splendid table?"

O my most amiable, most sweet, most beloved Jesus, my life, my hope, my treasure, the only love of my soul; oh, what has it cost Thee to remain thus with us in this Sacrament! Thou hadst to die, that Thou mightest thus dwell amongst us on our altars; and then, how many insults hast Thou not had to endure in this Sacrament, in order to aid us by Thy presence! Thy love, and the desire which Thou hast to be loved by us, have conquered all.

Come then, O Lord! come and take possession of my heart; close its doors forever, that henceforward no creature may enter there, to divide the love which is due to Thee, and which it is my ardent desire to bestow all on Thee. Do Thou alone, my dear Redeemer, rule me; do Thou alone possess my whole being; and if ever I do not obey Thee perfectly, chastise me with rigor, that thenceforward I may be more watchful to please Thee as Thou willest. Grant that I may no longer seek for any other pleasure than that of giving Thee pleasure; that all my pleasure may be to visit Thee often on Thy altar; to entertain myself with Thee, and to receive Thee in Holy Communion. Let all who will, seek other treasures; the only treasure that I love, the only one that I desire, is that of Thy love; for this only will I ask at the foot of the altar. Do Thou make me forget myself, that thus I may only remember Thy goodness. Ye blessed seraphim, I envy you, not for your glory, but for the love which you bear to your and my God; oh, do you teach me what I must do to love him, and to please him.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I will love Thee only; Thee only do I desire to please.

Then follows the Spiritual Communion, page 124, after which the visit should be paid to the ever-blessed Mary, the Mother of God, before her image.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.\*

In our Mother Mary we have another fountain, which is indeed fruitful to us. She is so rich in good things and in graces, says St. Bernard, that there is no one in the world who does not participate in them: "Of

---

\* We have two kinds of Visits to the Blessed Virgin, one of which is found in several editions published at Naples, and the other in those editions that have appeared elsewhere. Both kinds, however, were without doubt written by St. Alphonsus. This is the reason why we publish them in his complete works. It may, perhaps, be asked why two kinds of Visits have been published, and which of the two was published first? To this no positive answer can be given, though we may venture on a conjecture. The Visits to the Blessed Sacrament appeared about the year 1745, with those Visits to the Blessed Virgin that we have put in the first place, and that were soon spread all over Europe. About five years after this publication, in 1750, the work called *Glories of Mary* was published, and excited comment on the part of some critics. An anonymous writer dared to reproach St. Alphonsus with having exaggerated certain prerogatives attributed to the Mother of God; but the saint at once replied to this attack and triumphantly repelled it. It is very probable that St. Alphonsus then replaced the first twenty-two Visits that he had composed in honor of the Blessed Virgin by prayers drawn from different authors of great celebrity—prayers that had already been inserted in his book, the *Glories of Mary*, "to show the high idea that the saints had of the power and mercy of the Mother of God." The nine other Visits, joined to these prayers, appear to have been chosen with some modifications in the text which we regard as the first published. But this change was made only in the Naples editions; everywhere else the first prevailing text, or translations therefrom, have continued to be printed, with the exception of the first French translation which was made in 1773, from the fifteenth Naples edition.—ED.

her fulness we have all received.”<sup>1</sup> The Most Blessed Virgin Mary was filled by God with grace, and as such was saluted by the angel, “Hail, full of grace;” not for herself alone, but also for us. St. Peter Chrysologus adds, that she received that great abyss of grace, that she might then impart it to all who are devout to her: “The Blessed Virgin received this grace, that she might give in return salvation to all.”<sup>2</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Cause of our joy, pray for us!<sup>3</sup>

(From the Naples Edition.)

*Prayer of St. Ephrem.*

Most pure and immaculate Virgin! divine Mary, Mother of God! thou art elevated in dignity above all the saints; thou art the hope of our fathers and the joy of the elect. Through thee, as the Mother of Jesus, we have been reconciled with God. O great Queen! have compassion on us, and grant us an asylum in the arms of thy mercy. We dedicate and consecrate ourselves to thy service; suffer not the devil to draw us with him into eternal flames.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Cause of our joy, pray for us.<sup>4</sup>

The usual prayer, page 125.

## SECOND VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

The devout Father Nieremberg says, that bread being a food which is consumed by eating, and which keeps when preserved for use, Jesus was pleased to dwell on earth under its species, that he might thus not only be consumed by uniting himself to the souls of his lovers by

<sup>1</sup> “De plenitudine ejus accepimus omnes.”—*De Laud. V. M. hom.*

2.

<sup>2</sup> “Hanc gratiam accepit Virgo, salutem sæculis redditura.”—*Serm. 143.*

<sup>3</sup> “Causa nostræ lætitiæ! ora pro nobis.”

<sup>4</sup> “Causa nostræ lætitiæ! ora pro nobis.”

means of the Holy Communion, but also that he might be preserved in the tabernacle, and be present with us, and thus remind us of the love which he bears us. St. Paul says: *He emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant.*<sup>1</sup> But what must we say when we see him “taking the form of bread”? “No tongue would suffice,” says St. Peter of Alcantara, “to proclaim the greatness of the love which Jesus bears to every soul that is in a state of grace. In order, therefore, that his absence might not be to them an occasion of forgetting him, this most sweet Spouse, when he was pleased to quit this life, left as a memorial this Most Blessed Sacrament, in which he himself remained. He did not wish that between these souls and himself any other pledge but himself should remain, whereby to keep alive their remembrance of him.”

Since, then, my Jesus, Thou art enclosed in this tabernacle to receive the supplications of miserable creatures who come to seek an audience of Thee, listen this day to the petition addressed to Thee by the most ungrateful sinner living on earth. I come repentant to Thy feet; for I now know the evil which I have committed in giving Thee displeasure. My first prayer and desire, then, is, that Thou wilt be pleased to pardon me all the sins that I have committed against Thee. Ah, my God, would that I had never offended Thee! After this I must tell Thee my next desire. Now that I have found out Thy sovereign goodness, I have become enamoured of Thee; I feel an ardent desire to love Thee and to please Thee; but I have not the strength to do this unless Thou helpest me. Manifest, O great Lord, Thy supreme power, and Thy immense goodness to the whole court of heaven; change me from a great rebel, such as I have hitherto been to Thee, into a great lover of Thee. Thou

<sup>1</sup> “Semetipsum exinanivit, formam servi accipiens.”—*Phil* ii. 7.



canst do so, and I know that such is Thy will ; supply all that is wanting in me, that thus I may be enabled to love Thee much—at least that I may love Thee as much as I have offended Thee. I love Thee, my Jesus ; I love Thee above all things ; I love Thee more than my life, my God, my love, my all !

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My God and my all.

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

*Let us go with confidence to the throne of grace : that we may obtain mercy, and find grace in seasonable aid.*<sup>1</sup> St. Antoninus says,<sup>2</sup> that Mary is this throne, from which God dispenses all graces.

O most amiable Queen, since thou hast so great a desire to help sinners, behold a great sinner who has recourse to thee ; help me much, and help me without delay !

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* Sole refuge of sinners, have mercy on me.<sup>3</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

### *Prayer of St. Ephrem.*

O Queen of the universe and most bountiful sovereign ! thou art the great advocate of sinners, the sure port of those who have suffered shipwreck, the resource of the world, the ransom of captives, the solace of the weak, the consolation of the afflicted, the refuge and salvation of every creature. O full of grace ! enlighten my understanding, and loosen my tongue, that I may recount thy praises, and sing to thee the angelical salutation, which thou so justly deservest. Hail, thou who art the peace, the joy, the consolation of the whole world ! Hail, para-

<sup>1</sup> “Adeamus cum fiducia ad thronum gratiæ, ut misericordiam consequamur, et gratiam inveniamus in auxilio opportuno.”—*Heb.* iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> P. 4, tit. 15, c. 14.

<sup>3</sup> “Unicum Refugium peccatorum ! miserere mei !”—*St. Aug.*

dise of delight, the assured asylum of all who are in danger, the source of grace, the mediatrix between God and man!

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* Refuge of sinners, take pity on me.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

### THIRD VISIT.

#### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ*, etc., page 123.

*And My delights were to be with the children of men.*<sup>1</sup> Behold our Jesus, who, not satisfied with dying on earth for our love, is pleased even after his death to dwell with us in the Most Holy Sacrament, declaring that he finds his delights among men. "O men," exclaims St. Teresa, "how can you offend a God who declares that it is with you that he finds his delights!" Jesus finds his delights with us; and shall we not find ours with Jesus? And we especially who have had the honor to dwell in his palace? How greatly do those vassals esteem themselves honored to whom the king assigns an abode in his own residence! Behold the palace of the King; it is this house in which we dwell with Jesus Christ. Let us, then, learn to thank him for it, and to avail ourselves of conversing with Jesus Christ.

Behold me, then, O my Lord and God, before this altar, on which Thou dost reside night and day for my sake. Thou art the source of every good; Thou art the healer of every ill; Thou art the treasure of every poor creature. Behold now at Thy feet a sinner, who is of all the poorest and most infirm, and who asks Thy mercy; have pity upon me! Now that I see Thee in this Sacrament, come down from heaven upon earth only to do me good; I will not be disheartened at the sight of my misery. I praise Thee, I thank Thee, I love Thee; and if

<sup>1</sup> "Deliciæ meæ, esse cum filiis hominum."—*Prov.* viii. 31.

Thou willest that I should ask Thee for an alms, I will ask for this. O listen to me: I desire never more to offend Thee; and I desire that Thou shouldst give me light and grace to love Thee with all my strength. Lord, I love Thee with my whole soul; I love Thee with all my affections. Do Thou grant that I may thus speak with truth; and that I may speak in the same way during life and for all eternity. Most holy Virgin Mary, my holy patron saints, ye angels and all ye blessed spirits of paradise, help me to love my most amiable God.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O Good Shepherd, true bread, Jesus, have mercy on us: do Thou feed us; do Thou guard us; do Thou show us good things in the land of the living!<sup>1</sup>

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

*Her bands are a healthful binding.*<sup>2</sup> The devout Pelbart says<sup>3</sup> that devotion to Mary is a chain of predestination. Let us beseech our sovereign Lady to bind us always more closely by the chains of love to confidence in her protection.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O clement, O pious, O sweet Virgin Mary.<sup>4</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

#### *Prayer of St. Germanus of Constantinople.*

Most holy Virgin! who art the greatest consolation that I receive from God, thou who art the heavenly dew which assuages

<sup>1</sup> " Bone Pastor, Panis vere,  
Jesu ! nostri miserere :  
Tu nos pasce, nos tuere ;  
Tu nos bona fac videre  
In terra viventium."

<sup>2</sup> " Vincula illius, alligatura salutaris."—*Ecclus.* vi. 31.

<sup>3</sup> *Stellar.* l. 12, p. 1, a. 2.

<sup>4</sup> " O clemens, o pia, o dulcis Virgo Maria."

all my pains, thou who art the light of my soul when it is enveloped in darkness, thou who art my guide in unknown paths, the support of my weakness, my treasure in poverty, my remedy in sickness, my consolation in trouble, my refuge in misery, and the hope of my salvation; hear my supplications, have pity on me, as becomes the mother of so good a God, and obtain for me a favorable reception of all my petitions at the throne of mercy.<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O merciful, O pious, O sweet Virgin Mary.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

#### FOURTH VISIT.

##### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Her conversation hath no bitterness, nor her company any tediousness.*<sup>2</sup> Friends on earth find such pleasure in being together, that they lose entire days in each other's company: with Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament, those who love him not, get weary. After her death, St. Teresa, who was already in heaven, said to a nun: "Those who are in heaven and those who are on earth should be one and the same in purity and in love; we enjoying, and you suffering; and that which we do in heaven with the divine Essence, you should do on earth with the Most Blessed Sacrament."<sup>3</sup> Behold, then, our paradise on earth;—the Most Blessed Sacrament.

O immaculate Lamb, sacrificed for us upon the cross, remember that I am one of those souls that Thou hast redeemed by so many sufferings, and by Thy death. Grant that Thou mayest be mine, and that I may never lose Thee, since Thou hast given Thyself to me, and

<sup>1</sup> *Encom. in S. Deip.*

<sup>2</sup> "Non habet amaritudinem conversatio illius, nec tedium convictus illius, sed lætitiā et gaudium."—*Wis.* viii. 16.

<sup>3</sup> *Rib.* l. 5, c 4.

givist Thyself every day, sacrificing Thyself for my love on the altar; and grant that I may be all Thine. I give myself to Thee without reserve, that Thou mayest dispose of me as Thou pleasest. I give Thee my will; chain it with the sweet bonds of Thy love, that it may forever be the slave of Thy most holy will. I wish no longer to live for the satisfaction of my desires, but only to please Thy goodness. Destroy in me all that does not please Thee; grant me the grace never to have any other thought than to please Thee, any other desire than that which Thou desirest. I love Thee, O my dear Saviour, with my whole heart; I love Thee because Thou desirest that I should love Thee; I love Thee because Thou art indeed worthy of my love. I grieve that I love Thee not as much as Thou deservest. I desire, Lord, to die for Thy love; accept my desire and give me thy love. Amen.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O good pleasure of my God, I sacrifice myself all to Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Mary says: *I am the Mother of fair love*; <sup>1</sup> that is to say, she is the Mother of that love which beautifies souls. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi saw the Most Blessed Virgin Mary going about dispensing a sweet liquid, which was divine love. This gift is dispensed only by Mary; from Mary let us seek it.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* My Mother, my hope, make me belong wholly to Jesus.

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Germanus of Constantinople.*

O sovereign Queen! thou art our defence and our joy. Make me worthy to share with thee the happiness which thou enjoy-

<sup>1</sup> "Ego mater pulchræ dilectionis."—*Ecclus.* xxiv. 24.

est in heaven. Yes, my refuge, my defence, my strength, my hope, obtain for me, by thy powerful intercession, a place with thee in paradise. Being the mother of God, thou canst obtain it if thou pleasest.<sup>1</sup> O Mary! thou art all-powerful in saving sinners, and, being the Mother of mercy, thou canst want no inducement to save them by thy intercession.<sup>2</sup>

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O my Mother and my hope! obtain for me the grace to be devoted entirely to Jesus.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## FIFTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*The sparrow hath found herself a house, and the turtle a nest for herself, where she may lay her young ones! Thy altars, O Lord of hosts, my King and my God.*<sup>3</sup> The sparrow, says David, finds a dwelling in houses; turtle-doves in nests; but Thou, my king and my God, hast made Thyself a nest and found a dwelling on earth on our altars, that we might find Thee, and that Thou mightest dwell amongst us.

Lord, we cannot but say, that Thou art too much enamoured of men; Thou no longer knowest what to do to gain their love. But do Thou, my most amiable Jesus, give us the grace that we also may be passionately enamoured of Thee. It would indeed be unreasonable were we cold in our love towards a God who loves us with such affection. Draw us to Thee by the sweet attractions of Thy love; make us understand the endearing claims which Thou hast on our love.

O infinite Majesty and infinite Goodness, Thou lovest

<sup>1</sup> *Encom. in S. Deip.*

<sup>2</sup> *In Dorm. V. M. s. 2.*

<sup>3</sup> “*Passer invenit sibi domum, et turtur nidum sibi, ubi ponat pullos suos: altaria tua, Domine virtutum, Rex meus et Deus meus.*”—*Ps. lxxxiii. 4.*



men so much, Thou hast done so much that Thou mightest be loved by men: how is it, then, that amongst men there are so few who love Thee? I will no longer be as I have hitherto been, of the unhappy number of those ungrateful creatures: I am resolved to love Thee as much as I can, and to love no other than Thee: Thou deservest it; Thou commandest me with so much earnestness to do so, I am resolved to satisfy Thee. Grant, O God of my soul, that I may fully satisfy Thee. I entreat Thee to grant me this favor by the merits of Thy Passion, and I confidently hope for it. Bestow the goods of the earth on those who desire them; I desire and seek the great treasure of Thy love alone. I love Thee, my Jesus; I love Thee, infinite Goodness. Thou art all my riches, my whole satisfaction, my entire love.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* My Jesus, Thou hast given Thy whole self to me; I give my whole self to Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

My Lady, St. Bernard calls thee "the ravisher of hearts."<sup>1</sup> He says that thou goest about stealing hearts by the charms of thy beauty and goodness. Steal also my heart and will, I beseech thee: I give them wholly to thee; offer them to God with thine own.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* Mother most amiable, pray for me!<sup>2</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

#### *Prayer of St. Bernard.*

We look up to thee, O Queen of the world, for protection. After a life of so much sin and ingratitude, we have to appear before our Judge, and who shall appease his wrath? No one is so well qualified to do this as thyself, who didst love him so tenderly, and was so tenderly loved by him. O Mother of mercy,

<sup>1</sup> "Raptrix cordium."—*Med. in Salve Reg.*

<sup>2</sup> "Mater amabilis! ora pro me."



open then thy ears to our sighs and prayers. Thou dost not look with disdain on the sinner, however enormous his crimes may have been; if with sincere repentance he cries out to thee and entreats thy intercession, thou despisest him not. Thou animatest and consolest him, and dost not abandon him, until thou hast reconciled him with his Judge.<sup>1</sup>

We fly, therefore, to thy protection, entreating thee to appease the indignation of thy Son, and to restore us to His grace.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O Mary! show thyself a mother to us.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## SIXTH VISIT

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.*<sup>2</sup>  
—Jesus Christ says, that where a person esteems his treasure to be, there also he keeps his affections. Therefore the saints, who neither esteem nor love any other treasure than Jesus Christ, centre their hearts and all their love in the Most Blessed Sacrament.

My most amiable Jesus, hidden under the sacramental veils, who for the love which Thou bearest me remainest night and day imprisoned in this tabernacle, draw, I beseech Thee, my whole heart to Thee, that I may think of none but Thee, that I may love and seek and hope for Thee alone. Do this by the merits of Thy Passion, through which I seek and hope for it.

Ah, my sacramental Lord and divine Lover, how amiable and tender are the inventions of Thy love to gain the love of souls! O Eternal Word, Thou, in becoming man, wast not satisfied with dying for us; Thou hast also given us this sacrament as a companion, as food, and as

<sup>1</sup> *Depr. ad glor. V.*

<sup>2</sup> “Ubi thesaurus vester est, ibi et cor vestrum erit.”—*Luke*, xii. 34.

a pledge of heaven. Thou reducest Thyself so as to appear amongst us, at one time as an infant in a stable, at another as a poor man in a workshop, then as a criminal on a gibbet, and now as bread on an altar. Tell me, couldst Thou invent other means to win our love?

O infinite goodness, when shall I really begin to correspond with such refinements of love? Lord, I will only live to love Thee alone. And of what use is life to me, if I do not spend it wholly in loving and pleasing Thee, my beloved Redeemer, who hast poured out Thy whole life for me? And what have I to love, if it is not Thee, who art all beauty, all condescension, all goodness, all loving, all worthy of love? May my soul live only to love Thee; may the sole remembrance of Thy love dissolve my soul with love; may the very names of crib, and cross, and sacrament inflame it with the desire to do great things for Thee, O my Jesus, who hast indeed done and suffered great things for me!

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* Grant, my Lord, that before I die I may do something for Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### **Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

*As a fair olive-tree in the plain.*<sup>1</sup> I am, says Mary, the beautiful olive-tree from which the oil of mercy always flows. And I stand in the plain, that all may see me, and that all may have recourse to me. "Remember (let us say in the words of the prayer of St. Bernard), O most compassionate Mary, that it has never been heard of in any age, that any one having recourse to thy protection was abandoned by thee."<sup>2</sup> Most merciful Queen, such a thing was never heard of, that any one having recourse

<sup>1</sup> "Quasi oliva speciosa in campis."—*Ecclus.* xxiv. 19.

<sup>2</sup> "Memorare, piissima Maria, a sæculo non esse auditum, quemquam ad tua præsidia confugientem esse derelictum."

to thy aid was abandoned: I will not be the first unfortunate creature who, having recourse to thee, was abandoned.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* O Mary, grant me the grace always to have recourse to thee !

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Bernard.*

O Mary ! thou art the only woman on whom the Saviour of the world has poured the treasures of his grace without measure ; hence we are taught to honor thy chaste womb as the temple of God, wherein he was pleased to begin the great work of our redemption, the reconciliation of God with man. Thou, O mother of God, art that spiritual garden, whose fruit is never gathered by the hands of sinners. Thou art that hallowed soil where God has planted all the flowers which adorn his church, and amongst the rest, the holy virtues of humility, purity, and charity, which are greater ornaments to the souls of men than violets, lilies, and roses are to the earth. Thou art the paradise of God, whence flows the stream of living water to moisten the earth. Oh, what benefits were bestowed on the world through thee, when thou wast selected to be the fortunate channel of so many graces !

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* Hail ! our life, our sweetness, and our hope.<sup>1</sup>

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## SEVENTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Behold I am with you all days, even to the consummation of the world.*<sup>2</sup> Thus our loving shepherd, who has given his life for us who are His sheep, would not separate himself from us by death. Behold me, he says, beloved sheep; I am always with you; for you I have remained

<sup>1</sup> "Vita, Dulcedo, Spes nostra, salve !"

<sup>2</sup> "Ecce vobiscum sum omnibus diebus usque ad consummationem sæculi."—*Matt. xxviii. 20.*

on earth in this Sacrament; here you find me whenever you please, to help and console you by my presence: I will not leave you until the end of the world, as long as you are on earth. The Bridegroom, says St. Peter of Alcantara, wished to leave his bride company, that she might not remain alone during so long an absence; and therefore he left this Sacrament, in which he himself, the best companion he could leave her, remains.

My sweetest Lord, my most amiable Saviour, I am now visiting Thee on this altar; but Thou returnest me the visit with far other love when Thou enterest my soul in the Holy Communion. Thou art then not only present to me, but Thou becomest my food; Thou unitest and givest Thy whole self to me, so that I can then say with truth, My Jesus, Thou art now all mine. Since, then, Thou givest Thyself all to me, it is reasonable that I should give myself all to Thee. I am a worm, and Thou art God. O God of love! O love of my soul! when shall I find myself all Thine, in deeds, and not only in words? Thou canst do this; by the merits of Thy blood increase my confidence, that I may at once obtain this grace of Thee, that I may find myself all Thine, and in nothing mine own. Thou graciously hearest, O Lord, the prayers of all; hear now the prayers of a soul that indeed desires really to love Thee. I desire to love Thee with all my strength, I desire to obey Thee in all that Thou willest, without self-interest, without consolations, without reward. I wish to serve Thee through love, only to please Thee, only to content Thy heart, which is so passionately enamoured of me. My reward will be to love Thee. O beloved Son of the eternal Father, take possession of my liberty, of my will, of all that I possess, and of my entire self, and give me Thyself. I love Thee, I seek after Thee, I sigh after Thee; I desire Thee, I desire Thee, I desire Thee!

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, make me all Thine own!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

O our own most amiable Lady, the whole Church proclaims and salutes thee as “our hope”! Thou, then, who art the hope of all, be also my hope. St. Bernard called thee “the whole ground of his hope,”<sup>1</sup> and said: “Let him who despairs hope in thee.”<sup>2</sup> Thus also will I address thee: My own Mary, thou savest even those who are in despair; in thee I place all my hope.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Mary, Mother of God, pray to Jesus for me!

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Bernard.*

O Blessed Queen! it is of thee the prophet speaks when he says, “Who is she that riseth like the day-star, beautiful as the moon, brilliant as the sun?”<sup>3</sup> Yes, thou didst appear in the world like the bright day-star, preceding by the light of thy sanctity the coming of the Sun of Justice. The day on which thou camest into the world may well be styled a day of salvation and a day of grace. Thou art beautiful as the moon; because as none of the celestial bodies so nearly resembles the sun as it does, so there is no creature whose perfections so nearly approach to those of God as thy own. The moon enlightens the night by reflecting the rays of the sun, and thou enlightenest our darkness by the splendor of those virtues with which God has adorned thee. But thou art even more beautiful than the moon, because in thee is found neither spot nor shade; thou art brilliant like the sun; I mean that divine Sun who created the one which enlightens the earth, for, as he in his humanity is the most resplendent among men, so art thou the brightest amongst women.<sup>4</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners.<sup>5</sup>

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

<sup>1</sup> “Tota ratio spei meæ.”—*De Aquæd.*

<sup>2</sup> “In te speret, qui desperat.”—*Med. in Salve Reg.*

<sup>3</sup> *Cant.* vi. 9.

<sup>4</sup> *Depr. ad glor. V.*

<sup>5</sup> “Sancta Maria, Mater Dei, ora pro nobis peccatoribus!”

## EIGHTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

To every soul that visits Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament, he addresses the words which he said to the Sacred Spouse: *Arise, make haste, my love, my dove, my beautiful one, and come.*<sup>1</sup> Thou, O soul, that visitest me, "arise" from thy miseries; I am here to enrich thee with graces. "Make haste," approach, come near me; fear not my majesty, which has humbled itself in this Sacrament in order to take away thy fear, and to give thee confidence. "My beloved," thou art no longer my enemy, but my friend; since thou lovest me and I love thee. "My beautiful one," my grace has made thee fair. "And come," draw near and cast thyself into my arms, and ask me with the greatest confidence for whatever thou wilt.

St. Teresa says that this great king of glory has disguised himself in the Sacrament under the species of bread, and that he has concealed his majesty to encourage us to approach his divine heart with greater confidence. Let us, then, draw near to Jesus with great confidence and affection; let us unite ourselves to him, and let us ask him for graces.

O Eternal Word made man, and present for my sake in this Sacrament, what joy should be mine now that I stand in Thy presence, who art my God, who art infinite majesty and infinite goodness, and hast so tender an affection for my soul! Ye souls who love God, wherever you may be, either in heaven or on earth, love him for me also. Mary, my Mother, help me to love him. And Thou, most beloved Lord, make Thyself the object of

<sup>1</sup> "Surge, propera, amica mea, columba mea, formosa mea, et veni."—*Cant.* ii. 10.



all my love. Make Thyself the Lord of my entire will; possess my entire self. I consecrate my whole mind to Thee, that it may always be occupied with the thought of Thy goodness; I also consecrate my body to Thee, that it may help me to please Thee; I consecrate my soul to Thee, that it may be all Thine. Would, O beloved of my soul, that all men could know the tenderness of the love which Thou bearest them, that all might live only to honor Thee and to please Thee, as Thou desirest and deservest. Grant that at least I may always live enamoured of Thy infinite beauty. From this day forward my desire is to do all that I can to be pleasing to Thee. I now resolve to abandon everything, be it what it may, as soon as I perceive that it displeases Thee, however much it may cost me, even should it be necessary for this purpose to lose all, or even to lay down my life. Fortunate indeed shall I be, if I lose all to gain Thee, my God, my treasure, my love, my all!

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Jesus, my love, take all that I have; take full possession of me!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

*Whoever is a little one, let him come to me.*<sup>1</sup> Mary invites all children who need a mother to have recourse to her, as to the most loving of all mothers. The devout Nieremberg says, that the love of all mothers is a shadow in comparison with the love which Mary bears to each one of us.<sup>2</sup> My Mother, mother of my soul, thou who lovest me, and desirest my salvation more than any other after God, O Mother, "show thyself a Mother."<sup>3</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Mother, grant that I may always remember thee!

<sup>1</sup> "Si quis est parvulus, veniat ad me."—*Prov.* ix. 4.

<sup>2</sup> *De Affect. erga B. V.* c. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Monstra te esse Matrem."

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Bernard.*

Sweet and amiable Mary, no one can pronounce thy name without feeling the greatest desire of loving thee; and they who love thee cannot call thee to mind without being animated to love thee more. Pray for us to thy divine Son that he would vouchsafe to strengthen our weakness: no one is better entitled to speak in our favor to thy God and ours, than thyself, who art nearest to him. Intercede, then, for us, O blessed Mother, because thy Son hears thee, and thou canst obtain whatever thou askest.<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, obtain for me the grace to have continual recourse to thee.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## NINTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, page 123.*

St. John says that he saw our Lord girt up with a golden girdle, which supported his breasts: *I saw the Son of Man girt about the paps with a golden girdle.*<sup>2</sup> Thus also is Jesus in the Sacrament of the Altar, with his breasts all filled with milk; that is to say, with the graces which, in his mercy, he desires to bestow upon us. And as a mother, whose breasts are overcharged with milk, goes about seeking for children who may draw it off, and relieve her of its weight,\* so also does he call out to us, *You shall be carried at the breasts.*<sup>3</sup>

The Venerable Father Alvarez saw Jesus in the Blessed

<sup>1</sup> *Depr. ad glor. V.*

<sup>2</sup> "Vidi . . . præinctum ad mamillas zona aurea."—*Apoc. i. 12.*

<sup>3</sup> "Ad ubera portabimini."—*Isa. lxvi. 13.*

---

\* St. Francis de Sales, in his treatise *The Love of God*, B. I, ch. 15, uses the same comparison in explaining it, to show us that the divine goodness takes greater pleasure in giving us his graces than we do in receiving them.—ED.

Sacrament with his hands filled with graces, and seeking to whom he might dispense them. Of St. Catharine of Sienna it is related, that when she approached the Most Holy Sacrament, she did so precisely with the same loving avidity with which a child flies to its mother's breast.

O most beloved and only-begotten Son of the Eternal Father, I know that Thou art the object most worthy of being loved. I desire to love Thee as much as Thou deservest to be loved, or at least as much as a soul can ever desire to love Thee. I fully understand that I, who am a traitor, and so great a rebel to Thy love, deserve not to love Thee, neither do I deserve to approach Thee so near as I now am in this church. But I feel that Thou, for all this, seekest my love; I hear Thee say, *My son, give me thy heart.*<sup>1</sup> *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart.*<sup>2</sup> I understand that it is for this end that Thou hast spared my life, and not sent me to hell, that I might be converted and turn all my affections to Thee. Since, then, Thou art pleased that even I should love Thee, oh, yes, my God, I will do so. Behold me: to Thee I yield myself up; I give myself to Thee; I love Thee. O God! all goodness, all love, I choose Thee for the only king and lord of my poor heart. Thou desirest it, and my will is to give it to Thee: it is cold, it is loathsome; but if Thou acceptest it, Thou wilt change it. Change me, my Lord, change me; I no longer have courage to live as I have hitherto done, ungrateful, and with so little love towards Thy infinite goodness, which loves me so much, and deserves an infinite love. Enable me to supply from this day forward for all the love which I have hitherto failed to bear Thee.

<sup>1</sup> "Præbe, fili mi, cor tuum mihi."—*Prov.* xxiii. 26.

<sup>2</sup> "Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo."—*Matt.* xxii.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* My God, my God, I will love Thee, I will love Thee, I will love Thee !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

In all things like to her Son Jesus is his Mother Mary; and as she is the Mother of mercy, she is thrice happy when she helps and consoles the miserable. So great is the desire of this Mother to bestow graces on all, that Bernardine de Bustis says, that “she desires more to do us good, and to impart to us graces, than we can desire to receive them.”<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Hail, our hope !<sup>2</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. John Damascene.*

Hail! Mary, the hope of Christians. Hear the petition of a sinner, who wishes to love thee with the greatest tenderness, and to honor thee as thou deservest, and who reposes in thee, next to God, his hope of salvation. Being indebted to thee for the preservation of my life, I entreat thee to restore me to the grace of thy divine Son. Thou art the surest pledge of my salvation; deliver me, then, by thy prayers, from the heavy load of my sins. Disperse the darkness of my understanding; banish every inordinate affection from my heart; repress the temptations of my spiritual enemies, and so order my life that, under thy protection, I may arrive at eternal repose in heaven.<sup>3</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O my Mother, obtain for me the grace that I may always remember thee.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

<sup>1</sup> “Plus enim desiderat ipsa facere tibi bonum et largiri gratiam, quam tu accipere concupiscas.”—*Mar.* p. 2, s. 5.

<sup>2</sup> “Spes nostra ! salve.”

<sup>3</sup> *In Nat. B. M. V. s. I.*

## TENTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

O foolish ones of the world, says St. Augustine, miserable creatures, where are you going to satisfy your hearts? Come to Jesus; for by him alone can that pleasure which you seek be bestowed. "Unhappy creatures, whither are you going? The good you seek for comes from him."<sup>1</sup> My soul, be not of the number of these foolish ones; seek God alone: "seek for that one good in which are all good things."<sup>2</sup> And if thou desirest soon to find him, behold, he is close to thee; tell him what thou desirest, since for this end it is that he is in the ciborium, to console thee, and to grant thy prayer. St. Teresa says that all are not allowed to speak to their king: the most that can be hoped for is to communicate with him through a third person. To converse with Thee, O King of glory, no third person is needed; Thou art always ready in the Sacrament of the Altar to give audience to all. All who desire Thee always find Thee there, and converse with Thee face to face. And even if any one at length succeeds in speaking with a king, how many difficulties has he had to overcome before he can do so! Kings grant audiences only a few times in the year; but Thou, in this Sacrament, grantest audience to all night and day, and whenever we please.

O Sacrament of love, Thou who, whether Thou givest Thyself in the Communion, or dwellest on the altar, knowest, by the tender attractions of Thy love, how to draw so many hearts to Thyself, who, enamoured of

<sup>1</sup> "Miseri, quo itis? Bonum quod amatis, ab illo est."—*Conf.* l. 4, c. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Ama unum bonum, in quo sunt omnia bona."—*Man.* c. 34.

Thee, and filled with amazement at the sight of such love, burn with joy, and think always of Thee ; draw also my miserable heart to Thyself ; for it desires to love Thee, and to live enslaved by Thy love. For my part, I now and henceforward place all my interests, all my hopes, and all my affections, my soul, my body,—I place all in the hands of Thy goodness. Accept me, O Lord, and dispose of me as Thou pleasest. I will never again complain, O my love, of Thy holy dispensations ; I know that, as they all take their source in Thy loving heart, they all will be full of love, and for my good. It is enough for me to know that Thou willest them ; I will them also in time and in eternity. Do all that Thou willest in me and with me ; I unite my entire self to Thy will, which is all holy, all good, all beautiful, all perfect, all loving. O will of my God, how dear art thou to me ! My will is ever to live and die united to and bound up with Thee. Thy pleasure is my pleasure. I will that Thy desires shall also be my desires. My God, my God, help me ; make me henceforward live for Thee alone ; make me will only what Thou willest, and make me live only to love Thy amiable will. Grant that I may die for Thy love, since Thou hast died and become food for me. I curse those days in which I did my own will, so much to Thy displeasure. I love thee, O will of God, as much as I love God, since thou art one with him. I love Thee, then, with my whole heart, and give myself all to Thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O will of God, thou art my love !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

The great Queen says, *With me are riches . . . that I may enrich them that love me.*<sup>1</sup> Let us love Mary, if we

<sup>1</sup> "Mecum sunt divitiæ, . . . ut ditem diligentes me."—*Prov.* xviii. 8.



would be rich in graces. The writer who calls himself "the Idiot" styles her "the treasurer of graces."<sup>1</sup> Blessed is he who has recourse to Mary with love and confidence. My Mother, my hope, thou canst make me a saint; from thee I hope for this favor.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Mother most amiable, pray for me!<sup>2</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Andrew of Jerusalem.*

Hail! Mary, full of grace: the Lord is with thee. Hail! source of our joy. Through thee, as the Mother of Jesus, the sentence of our condemnation has been revoked, and changed into a judgment of benediction. Hail, temple of the Deity's glory, sacred dwelling of the King of Heaven; thou art the reconciliation of God with man. Hail, Mother of our bliss; thou art truly blessed, because thou wast the only one amongst women found worthy to be the Mother of thy Creator. All nations call thee blessed.<sup>3</sup> If I place my confidence in thee I shall be saved. Under thy protection I have nothing to fear, because, in being devoted to thee, I hold in my hand the most assured arms of salvation, which the Almighty grants only to those whom he wishes in a special manner to save.

*Ejaculatory Prayer.* We fly to thy protection, O sacred Mother of God!

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## ELEVENTH VISIT.

To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

"Let us be careful," says St. Teresa, "never to be at a distance from Jesus our beloved Shepherd, nor to lose sight of him; for the sheep which are near their shep-

<sup>1</sup> "Thesaurus gratiarum."—*Cont. de V. M. c. i.*

<sup>2</sup> "Mater amabilis! ora pro me."

<sup>3</sup> *In S. Deip. Ann.*

<sup>4</sup> "Sub tuum præsidium confugimus, sancta Dei genetrix!"

herd are always more caressed and better fed, and always receive some choice morsels of that which he himself eats. If by chance the shepherd sleeps, still the lamb remains near him, and either waits until his slumber ends, or itself awakens him; and it is then caressed with new favors."

My Redeemer, present in this Most Holy Sacrament, behold me near Thee: the only favor which I ask of Thee is, fervor and perseverance in Thy love. I thank thee, O holy faith; for thou teachest and assurest me that in the divine Sacrament of the Altar, in that heavenly bread, bread does not exist; but that my Lord Jesus Christ is all there, and that he is there for love of me. My Lord and my all, I believe that Thou art present in the Most Holy Sacrament; and though unknown to eyes of flesh, by the light of holy faith I discern Thee in the consecrated Host, as the monarch of heaven and earth, and as the Saviour of the world. Ah, my most sweet Jesus! as Thou art my hope, my salvation, my strength, my consolation, so also I will that Thou shouldst be all my love, and the only subject of all my thoughts, of my desires, and of my affections. I rejoice more in the supreme happiness which Thou enjoyest, and wilt enjoy forever, than in any good thing which I could ever have in time or in eternity. My supreme satisfaction is, that Thou, my beloved Redeemer, art supremely happy, and that Thy happiness is infinite. Reign, reign, my Lord, over my whole soul; I give it all to Thee; do Thou ever possess it. May my will, my senses, and my faculties be all servants of Thy love, and may they never in this world serve for anything else than to give Thee satisfaction and glory. Such was thy life, O first lover and Mother of my Jesus! Most holy Mary, do thou help me; do thou obtain for me the grace to live henceforward, as thou didst always live, in the happiness of belonging to God alone.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, may I be all Thine, and be Thou all mine!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

*Blessed is the man . . . that watcheth daily at my gates, and waiteth at the posts of my doors.*<sup>1</sup> Blessed is he who, like the poor who stand before the gates of the rich, is careful to seek for the alms of graces before the doors of the mercy of Mary! And thrice blessed is he who moreover seeks to imitate the virtues which he remarks in Mary, and more especially her purity and humility!

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My hope, help me!

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Andrew of Crete or of Jerusalem.*

Mother of mercy! appease the anger of thy Son. Whilst thou wast upon earth, thou didst occupy only a small portion of it: but being now seated in the highest heavens, we look up to thee as the general mediatrix of all nations. We entreat thee, O sacred Virgin! to grant us the assistance of thy prayers, which are more desirable and more precious than all the treasures of the earth. Thy prayers move the Almighty to pardon our sins, and obtain for us the most abundant graces, to enable us to practise the virtues of a Christian life; they arrest the progress of our enemies, frustrate their designs, and triumph over the efforts of their malice.<sup>2</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Mary! thou art my consolation, and, after Jesus, the foundation of my hope.<sup>3</sup>

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

<sup>1</sup> "Beatus homo . . . qui vigilat ad fores meas quotidie, et observat ad postes ostii mei."—*Prov.* viii. 34.

<sup>2</sup> *In Dorm. S. M.* s. 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Hæc tota mea fiducia, hæc tota ratio spei meæ."—*S. Bern. De Aquæd.*

## TWELFTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*God is charity; and he that abideth in charity, abideth in God, and God in him.*<sup>1</sup> He who loves Jesus dwells with Jesus, and Jesus with him. *If any one love Me . . . My Father will love him; and We will come to him, and will make Our abode with him.*<sup>2</sup> When St. Philip Neri received the Holy Communion as Viaticum, on seeing the Most Blessed Sacrament enter his room, he exclaimed: "Behold my love! behold my love!" Let each one of us, then, say, here in the presence of Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament: Behold my love! behold the object of all my love for my whole life and for all eternity!

Since, then, my Lord and my God, Thou hast said in the Gospel that he who loves Thee will be beloved by Thee, and that Thou wilt come and dwell in him, and never more leave him, I love Thee above every other good: do Thou, then, also love me; for I, indeed, esteem being loved by Thee above all the kingdoms of the world. Come and fix Thy dwelling in the poor house of my soul in such a way that Thou mayest no more depart from me; or rather, so that I may never more drive Thee from me. Thou dost not go, if Thou art not expelled; but as I have already done this, so I might do again. Ah, never allow such a fresh act of wickedness, such horrible ingratitude, to be perpetrated in the world, as that I, who have been so especially favored by Thee, and who have received so many graces, should again drive Thee from my soul! But this might happen. I

<sup>1</sup> "Deus charitas est; et qui manet in charitate in Deo manet, et Deus in eo."—I *John*, iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> "Si quis diligit me, . . . et Pater meus diligit eum; et ad eum veniemus, et mansionem apud eum faciemus."—*John*, xiv. 23.

therefore, my Lord, desire death, if it so pleases Thee ; that by dying united to Thee, I may live united to Thee forever. Yes, my Jesus ; for this I hope. I embrace Thee ; I press Thee to my poor heart ; grant that I may always love Thee, and always be beloved by Thee. Yes, my most amiable Redeemer, I will always love Thee ; and Thou wilt always love me. I trust that our love will ever be mutual, O God of my soul, and this for all eternity. Amen.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I desire always to love Thee, and always to be beloved by Thee.

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

*They that work by me shall not sin.*<sup>1</sup> He, says Mary, who endeavors to honor me shall persevere to the end. *They that explain me shall have life everlasting ;*<sup>2</sup> and those who endeavor to make me known and loved by others will be of the number of the elect. Promise, then, that whenever you can, be it in public or in private, you will speak of the glories of Mary, and of devotion to her.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Vouchsafe that I may praise Thee, most sacred Virgin !<sup>3</sup>

[According to the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Ildefonsus.*

O my Sovereign, and Mother of my God, thou art blessed amongst all women, pure amongst all virgins, and queen of all the heavenly host ; all nations pronounce thee blessed. Vouchsafe that I may publish as much as possible thy greatness, that I may love thee to the utmost of my power, and that I may serve thee with all the capacity of my soul.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Vouchsafe that I may praise thee, O blessed Virgin.<sup>3</sup>

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

<sup>1</sup> " Qui operantur in me non peccabunt."—*Eclus.* xxiv. 30.

<sup>2</sup> " Qui elucidant me, vitam æternam habebunt."—*Ibid.* 31.

<sup>3</sup> " Dignare me laudare te, Virgo sacrata !"

## THIRTEENTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*My eyes and my heart shall be there always.*<sup>1</sup> Behold, Jesus has verified this beautiful promise in the Sacrament of the Altar, wherein he dwells with us night and day.

My Lord, would it not have been enough hadst Thou remained in this Sacrament only during the day, when Thou couldst have had adorers of Thy presence to keep Thee company; but why remain also the whole night, when the churches are all closed, and when men retire to their homes, leaving Thee quite alone? Ah, yes! I already understand Thee: love has made Thee our prisoner; the excessive love which Thou bearest us has so bound Thee down on earth, that neither night nor day canst Thou leave us. Ah, most amiable Saviour, this refinement of love alone should oblige all men ever to stay with Thee in the sacred ciboriums, and to remain with Thee until forcibly compelled to leave Thee; and when they do so, they should all leave at the foot of the altar their hearts and affections inflamed with love towards an Incarnate God, who remains alone and enclosed in a tabernacle, all eyes to see and provide for them in their necessities, and all heart to love them, and who awaits the coming day to be again visited by his beloved souls.

Yes, my Jesus, I will please Thee; I consecrate my whole will and all my affections to Thee. O infinite Majesty of God, Thou hast left Thyself in this divine Sacrament, not only that Thou mightest be present with us and near us, but principally to communicate Thyself to Thy beloved souls. But, Lord, who will presume to ap-

<sup>1</sup> "Et erunt oculi mei et cor meum ibi cunctis diebus."—3 *Kings*, ix. 3.



proach Thee to feed upon Thy flesh? and who, on the other hand, can keep at a distance from Thee? For this purpose Thou concealest Thyself in the consecrated Host, that Thou mayest enter into us and possess our hearts. Thou burnest with the desire of being received by us, and Thou rejoicest in being there united with us. Come, then, my Jesus, come; I desire to receive Thee within myself, that Thou mayest be the God of my heart and of my will. All that is within me I yield, my dear Redeemer, to Thy love; satisfactions, pleasures, self-will, all I give up to Thee. O Love, O God of love, reign, triumph over my entire self; destroy and sacrifice all in me which is mine and not Thine. Permit not, O my Love, that my soul, which, having received Thee in the Holy Communion, is filled with the Majesty of God, should again attach itself to creatures. I love Thee, my God, I love Thee; and I will love Thee alone and forever.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Draw me by the chains of Thy love!<sup>1</sup>

*Spiritual Communion*, page 125.

Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

St. Bernard exhorts us, saying: "Let us seek for grace, and let us seek it by Mary."<sup>2</sup> "She," says St. Peter Damian, "is the treasure of divine graces."<sup>3</sup> She can enrich us, and she desires to do so. She therefore invites and calls us, saying: *Whosoever is a little one, let him come to me.*<sup>4</sup> Most amiable Lady, most exalted Lady, most gracious Lady, look on a poor sinner who recommends himself to Thee, and who places all his confidence in Thee.

<sup>1</sup> "Trahe me vinculis amoris tui."

<sup>2</sup> "Quæramus gratiam et per Mariam quæramus."—*De Aquad.*

<sup>3</sup> "Thesaurus divinarum gratiarum."

<sup>4</sup> "Si quis est parvulus, veniat ad me."—*Prov.* ix. 4.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* We fly to thy patronage, O holy Mother of God !<sup>1</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Ildefonsus.*

Most humble handmaid of thy divine Son ! I prostrate myself before thee, conjuring thee to obtain pardon of my sins, that I may be cleansed from all the imperfections of my life. I entreat thee to procure me the grace of being always united to God and to thee, and to be ever a faithful servant of thy Son and of thee : of thy Son, as my Lord and my Redeemer ; and of thee, as the cause of my redemption : for if he has paid the price of my redemption, it was with the body which he received from thee.<sup>2</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary ! obtain for me confidence in thy intercession, and the grace that I may continually have recourse to thee.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

#### FOURTEENTH VISIT.

##### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

Most amiable Jesus, I hear Thee say from this tabernacle in which Thou art present, *This is my rest forever and ever ; here will I dwell, for I have chosen it.*<sup>3</sup> Since, then, Thou hast chosen Thy dwelling on our altars in the midst of us, remaining there in the Most Holy Sacrament, and since Thy love for us makes Thee there find Thy repose, it is but just that our hearts also should ever dwell with Thee in affection, and should find all pleasure and repose in Thee. Blessed are you, O loving souls, who can find no sweeter repose in the world than in remaining near to your Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament ! And blessed should I be, my Lord, did I from this time

<sup>1</sup> "Sub tuum præsidium confugimus, sancta Dei genitrix !"

<sup>2</sup> *De Virg. perp. S. M. c. 12.*

<sup>3</sup> "Hæc requies mea in sæculum sæculi ; hic habitabo, quoniam elegi eam."—*Ps. cxxx. 14.*

forward find no greater delight than in remaining always in Thy presence, or in always thinking of Thee, who in the Most Holy Sacrament art always thinking of me and of my welfare.

Ah, my Lord ! and why have I lost so many years, in which I have not loved Thee ? O miserable years, I curse you ; and I bless Thee, O infinite patience of my God, for having for so many years borne with me, though so ungrateful to Thy love. And still, notwithstanding this ingratitude, Thou waitest for me : and why, my God, why ? It is, that one day, overcome by Thy mercies and by Thy love, I may yield wholly to Thee. Lord, I will no longer resist, I will no longer be ungrateful. It is but just that I should consecrate to Thee the time, be it long or short, which I have still to live. I hope for Thy help, O my Jesus, to become entirely Thine. Thou didst favor me so much when I fled from Thee and despised Thy love ; how much more may I now hope that Thou wilt favor me, now that I seek and desire to love Thee ! Give me, then, the grace to love Thee, O God, worthy of infinite love. I love Thee with my whole heart ; I love Thee above all things ; I love Thee more than myself, more than my life. I am sorry for having offended Thee, O infinite goodness : pardon me ; and with Thy pardon grant me the grace to love Thee much in this life until death, and in the next life for all eternity. O Almighty God, show the world the greatness of Thy power, in the prodigy of a soul ungrateful as mine has been becoming one of Thy greatest lovers. Do this by Thy merits, my Jesus. It is my ardent desire, and I resolve thus to love Thee during my whole life : do Thou, who inspirest me with this desire, give me also the strength to accomplish it.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I thank Thee for having waited for me until now !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

St. Germanus, addressing the Most Blessed Virgin Mary, says: "No one is saved but through thee; no one is delivered from evils but through thee; there is no one on whom any gift is bestowed but through thee."<sup>1</sup> Therefore, my Lady and my hope, if thou dost not help me I am lost, and shall be unable to bless thee in heaven. But, Lady, I hear all the saints say that thou never abandonest those who have recourse to thee. He only is lost who has not recourse to thee. I, then, miserable creature that I am, have recourse to thee, and in thee place all my hopes.

*Ejaculatory prayer, in the words of St. Bernard.* Mary is my whole confidence; she is the whole ground of my hope!<sup>2</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Anselm.*

We entreat thee, most Sacred Virgin, by that fulness of grace, whereby thou wast elevated to the highest degree of dignity and glory which a pure creature can possibly attain, that thou wouldst procure for us a fellowship with thee in glory. Pray for us, that we may obtain that happiness, to purchase which for us God vouchsafed to become man in thy immaculate womb. Be not deaf to our supplications; whatever thou askest of thy Son, he will grant to us: if thou desirest our salvation, and prayest for it, we are sure to be saved. But if thou dost shut the bowels of thy mercy against us; if thou, who art the Mother of clemency, dost not take pity on us, what will be our lot when thy Son shall appear in judgment?

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary! behold our danger, and have compassion on us.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

<sup>1</sup> "Nullus est qui salvus fiat, nisi per te; nemo qui liberetur a malis, nisi per te; nemo cui donum concedatur, nisi per te."—*De Zona Deip. ap. Sur. 31 Aug.*

<sup>2</sup> "Hæc tota mea fiducia, hæc tota ratio spei meæ."—*S. Bern. De Aquæd.*

# FIFTEENTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*I am come to cast fire on the earth; and what will I but that it be kindled?*<sup>1</sup> Father Francis Olimpio, the Theatine, used to say that there was nothing on earth which enkindled so ardent flames of divine love in the hearts of men as the Most Holy Sacrament of the Altar. Hence our Lord showed himself to St. Catharine of Sienna in this Blessed Sacrament as a furnace of love, from which issued forth torrents of divine flames, spreading themselves over the whole earth : so much so, indeed, that the saint, in perfect astonishment, wondered how it was possible that men could live without burning with love for such love on the part of God towards them.

My Jesus, make me burn with the desire of Thee ; grant that all my thoughts, and sighs, and desires, and seekings, may be for Thee alone. Oh, happy should I be, did this Thy heavenly fire fully possess me, and as I advance in years, gradually consume all earthly affections in me !

O divine Word ! O my own Jesus ! I see Thee all sacrificed, all annihilated, and so to say destroyed on the altar, for my love. It is, then, but right that, as Thou sacrificest Thyself as a victim of love for me, I at least should consecrate myself wholly to Thee. Yes, my God and my sovereign Lord, I now sacrifice to Thee my whole soul, my entire self, my whole will and my whole life. I unite this poor sacrifice of mine, O Eternal Father, to the infinite sacrifice of himself which Jesus, Thy Son and my Saviour, once offered to Thee on the cross, and which

<sup>1</sup> “*Ignem veni mittere in terram ; et quid volo, nisi ut accendatur ?*”  
—*Luke*, xii. 49.

he now offers to Thee so many times every day on our altars. Accept it, then, through the merits of Jesus; and grant me the grace to renew it every day of my life, and to die sacrificing my whole self to Thy honor. I desire the grace granted to so many martyrs, to die for Thy love. But if I am unworthy of so great a grace, grant at least, my Lord, that I may sacrifice my life to Thee, together with my entire will, by accepting the death which Thou sendest me. Lord, I desire this grace; I desire to die with the intention of honoring and pleasing Thee thereby: and from this moment I sacrifice my life to Thee; and I offer Thee my death, when or wheresoever it may take place.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I desire to die in order to please Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Allow me also, my most sweet Queen, to call thee, with thine own St. Bernard, "the whole ground of my hope,"<sup>1</sup> and to say with St. John Damascene, "I have placed my whole hope in thee."<sup>2</sup> Thou hast to obtain for me the forgiveness of my sins; thou, perseverance until death; thou, deliverance from purgatory. All who are saved obtain salvation through thee: thou, then, O Mary, hast to save me: "He will be saved whom thou willest."<sup>3</sup> Will, then, my salvation, and I shall be saved. But thou savest all who invoke thee; behold, then, I invoke thee, and say:

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O salvation of those who invoke Thee, save me!<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Tota ratio spei meæ."—*De Aquæd.*

<sup>2</sup> "Totam spem meam in te collocavi."—*Carmina.*

<sup>3</sup> "Quem vis, salvus erit."—*Cant. post Psalt.*

<sup>4</sup> "O Salus te invocantium, salva me!"



[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Anselm.*

Help us, O Queen of mercy ! without regarding the multitude of our sins. Remember, that our Creator assumed from thee a human body, not to condemn, but to save sinners. Hadst thou been chosen to be the Mother of God for thy own benefit alone, thou mightest then be said to have no particular interest in our salvation ; but God clothed himself in thy form for the sake of all mankind. Help us, therefore, and protect us : thou knowest the need which we have of thy assistance, and we earnestly recommend ourselves to thy prayers. Pray that we may not be eternally lost, but with thee may serve and love Jesus Christ forever.<sup>1</sup>

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

#### SIXTEENTH VISIT.

**To the Blessed Sacrament.**

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

Had men but always recourse to the Most Blessed Sacrament to seek from it the remedy for their ills, they certainly would not be so miserable as they are. The prophet Jeremias, lamenting, exclaimed: *Is there no balm in Galaad? or is there no physician there?*<sup>2</sup> Galaad, a mountain of Arabia, rich in aromatical spices, according to venerable Bede, is a figure of Jesus Christ, who in this Sacrament keeps in readiness all the remedies for our woes. Why, then, our Redeemer seems to ask, do you complain of your misfortunes, O sons of Adam, when you have the physician and the remedy for them all in this Sacrament? *Come to Me, and I will refresh you.*<sup>3</sup> I will, then, address Thee in the words of the sisters of Lazarus: *Behold, he whom Thou lovest is sick.*<sup>4</sup> Lord, I am

<sup>1</sup> *De Excell. B. M.* c. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Numquid resina non est in Galaad? aut medicus non est ibi?"—*Jer.* viii. 22.

<sup>3</sup> "Venite ad me omnes . . . et ego reficiam vos."—*Matt.* xi. 28.

<sup>4</sup> "Ecce, quem amas, infirmatur."—*John*, xi. 3.

that miserable creature whom Thou lovest; my soul is all wounded by the sins which I have committed; my divine physician, I come to Thee, that Thou mayest heal me; if Thou wilt, Thou canst cure me: *Heal my soul; for I have sinned against Thee.*<sup>1</sup> Draw me wholly to Thyself, my most sweet Jesus, by the all-winning attractions of Thy love. Far rather would I be bound to Thee than become the Lord of the whole earth. I desire nothing else in the world but to love Thee. I have but little to give Thee; but could I gain possession of all the kingdoms of the world, I would do so, that I might renounce them all for Thy love. For Thee, then, I renounce what I can; I give up all relatives, all comforts, all pleasures, and even spiritual consolations: for Thee I renounce my liberty and my will. On Thee I desire to bestow all my love. I love Thee, infinite goodness; I love Thee more than myself, and I hope to love Thee for all eternity.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I give myself to Thee: do Thou accept me!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

My Lady, though didst say to St. Bridget: "However much a man sins, if he returns to me with a real purpose of amendment, I am instantly ready to welcome him: neither do I pay attention to the greatness of his sins, but to the intention alone with which he comes. I do not disdain to anoint and heal his wounds; for I am called, and truly am, the Mother of mercy."<sup>2</sup> Since, then, thou hast both the power and the will to heal me,

<sup>1</sup> "Sana animam meam quia peccavi tibi."—*Ps.* xl. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Quantumcumque homo peccet, si ex vera emendatione ad me reversus fuerit, statim parata sum recipere revertentem; nec attendo quantum peccaverit, sed cum quali voluntate venit: nam non dedignor ejus plagas ungere et sanare, quia vocor (et vere sum) Mater misericordiæ."—*Rev.* l. 2, c. 23; *et* l. 6, c. 117.

behold, I have recourse to thee, O heavenly physician; heal the many wounds of my soul: with a single word addressed by thee to thy Son I shall be restored.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, have pity on me !

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Peter Damian.*

O holy Virgin ! come to the assistance of those who call upon thee: cast a look of pity on us. Hast thou, in the close alliance thou holdest with the Deity, forgotten thy fellow-creatures? Ah ! certainly not. Thou knowest too well the misery of our condition, and the dangers to which we are exposed, and it would ill become clemency and compassion like thine to forget us. Exert thy influence in our behalf. Nothing is impossible to thee, and thou canst, by thy prayers, obtain for the most grievous sinner, the sweet hope of salvation. The greater thy power is, the greater ought also to be thy mercy.<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary ! thou canst by thy intercession cleanse me from my sins, and I look for this favor from thee.

*The usual prayer,* page 125.

## SEVENTEENTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc.,* page 123.

Loving souls can find no greater delight than to be in the company of those whom they love. If we, then, love Jesus Christ much, behold we are now in his presence. Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament sees us and hears us : shall we, then, say nothing to him ? Let us console ourselves in his company; let us rejoice in his glory, and in the love which so many enamoured souls bear him in the Most Holy Sacrament. Let us desire that all should love Jesus in the Holy Sacrament, and consecrate their hearts to him; at least let us consecrate all our affections to him. He should be all our love and our whole desire.

<sup>1</sup> *In Nat. B. M. V. s. I.*

Father Salesius, of the Society of Jesus, felt consolation in only speaking of the Most Blessed Sacrament; he could never visit it enough. When called to the parlor, on returning to his room, when going about the house, he always profited by these occasions to repeat his visits to his beloved Lord; so much so, that it was remarked that scarcely an hour of the day passed without his visiting him. At length he obtained the favor to die by the hands of heretics while defending the truth of the real presence in the Blessed Sacrament.

Oh, had I but the happiness to die for so noble a cause as the defence of this Sacrament, in which, O most amiable Jesus, Thou hast taught us the tenderness of the love which Thou bearest us! But since, my Lord, Thou workest so many miracles in this Sacrament, work this one also: draw my entire self to Thee. Thou indeed desirest that I should be all Thine, and Thou dost also indeed deserve that I should be so. Give me the strength to love Thee with all the affection of my soul. Give the goods of this world to whomsoever Thou willest. I renounce them all: I sigh after and desire Thy love alone; this alone do I now and will always seek. I love Thee, my Jesus; grant me the grace always to love Thee, and grant me this alone.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, when shall I really love Thee?

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

My most sweet Queen, how pleasing to me is that beautiful name by which thy devout clients address thee: "Most amiable Mother!"<sup>1</sup> Yes, my Lady, thou art truly and indeed amiable. Thy beauty has captivated thy Lord himself: *And the king shall greatly desire thy*

<sup>1</sup> "Mater amabilis."

*beauty.*<sup>1</sup> St. Bernard says that thy very name is so amiable to thy lovers, that when they pronounce or hear it they are inflamed with a fresh desire to love thee: "O sweet, O pious, O exceedingly amiable Mary! Thou canst not be named without inflaming, neither can thy name be heard without enkindling, the affections of those who love thee."<sup>2</sup> It is, then, reasonable, my most amiable Mother, that I should love thee. But I am not satisfied with only loving thee: I desire in the first place on earth, and then in heaven, to be, after God, thy greatest lover. If my desire is presumptuous, it is thou thyself who art to blame, on account of thy amiability, and the special love which thou hast shown me. If thou wert less amiable, my desire to love thee would be less. Accept, then, O Lady, this my desire; and in token that thou hast accepted it, do thou obtain me from God this love for which I ask thee, since he is so well pleased with the love which is borne thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My most amiable Mother, I love thee much.

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Damian.*

O Mother of God! cast upon us one look of compassion. I know that thou art full of goodness, and that thou lovest us in a measure that surpasses all other love. How often dost thou appease the anger of our Judge, when the hand of his justice is raised to strike us? All the treasures of mercy are in thy hands, and thou seekest every opportunity to save miserable sinners and to make them partakers of thy glory. Ah! never cease to interest thyself in our regard, that we may one day arrive at the happiness of seeing Thee in heaven; as the greatest good that we can enjoy, next to that of seeing God, is to see thee, to love thee, and to be under thy protection. Since thy

<sup>1</sup> "Concupivit Rex speciem tuam."—*Ps.* xliv. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "O dulcis, o pia, o multum amabilis Maria! tu nec nominari potes, quin accendas, nec cogitari, quin recrees affectus diligentium te."—*Spec. B. V.* c. 9.

Son desires to honor thee by refusing nothing that thou askest, hear our prayer, and intercede in our behalf.<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary! I love thee as the most amiable of the works of God, and place my confidence in thee.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

## EIGHTEENTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ*, etc., page 123.

One day Jesus will be seated on a throne of majesty in the valley of Josaphat; but now, in the Most Blessed Sacrament, he is seated on a throne of love. Did a king, to show his love for a poor shepherd, go and live in his village, how great would be the ingratitude of this peasant did he not often go to visit him, knowing the king's wish to see him, and that for this purpose he had come to reside there!

Ah, my Jesus, for love of me Thou dwellest in the Sacrament of the Altar. Could I, then, do so, my desire would be to remain night and day in Thy presence. If the angels, O my Lord, filled with astonishment at the love which Thou bearest us, remain always around Thee, it is but reasonable that I, seeing Thee for my sake on this altar, should endeavor to please Thee, at least by remaining in Thy presence, to praise the love and goodness which Thou hast for me: *I will sing praise to Thee in the sight of the angels; I will worship towards Thy holy temple, and I will give glory to Thy name: for Thy mercy and for Thy truth.*<sup>2</sup>

O God, present in this Most Holy Sacrament, O bread of angels, O heavenly food, I love Thee; but Thou art not, neither am I, satisfied with my love. I love Thee;

<sup>1</sup> *In Nat. B. V. M. s. i.*

<sup>2</sup> "In conspectu Angelorum psallam tibi, adorabo ad templum sanctum tuum, et confitebor nomini tuo, super misericordia tua et veritate tua."—*Ps. cxxxvii. 1, 2.*



but I love Thee too little. Do Thou, my Jesus, make known to me the beauty, the immense goodness which I love: make my heart banish from itself all earthly affections, and give place to Thy divine love. To fill me with Thy love, and to unite Thyself all to me, Thou descendest every day from heaven on our altars: it is, then, but just that I should think of nothing else but of loving, adoring, and pleasing Thee. I love Thee with my whole soul, I love Thee with all my affections. If Thou art graciously pleased to make me a return for this love, increase my love; render its flames more ardent; that thus I may always love Thee more, and desire more and more to please Thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Jesus, my love, give me love !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

As poor sick persons, who on account of their miseries are abandoned by all, find shelter in the public hospitals; so also do the most miserable sinners, who, although discarded by all, find protection in the mercy of Mary, by whom they are never rejected; for God has placed her in the world as a receptacle and as a public hospital for sinners, as St. Basil of Seleucia gives us to understand.<sup>1</sup> Hence St. Ephrem also calls her "the asylum of sinners."<sup>2</sup> Therefore, my Queen, if I have recourse to thee, thou canst not reject me on account of my sins; nay, even the more wretched I am, the greater is the claim which I have upon thy protection, since God has created thee as the refuge of the most miserable. Therefore to thee I have recourse, O Mary ; I place myself under thy mantle. Thou art the refuge of sinners; thou art, then, my refuge, the hope of my salvation. If thou reject me, to whom shall I have recourse?

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Mary, my refuge, save me !

<sup>1</sup> "Aperuit Deus peccatoribus publicum valetudinarium."

<sup>2</sup> "Diversorium peccatorum."—*De Laud. Dei Gen.*

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of St. Bernard.*

O sovereign queen ! on thee the Almighty has bestowed the perfection of all graces. Thou art styled full of grace, because the Holy Ghost has given it to thee in its greatest plenitude. We entreat thee to impart to us a portion of the fulness which thou hast received. Remember our necessities, and hear our prayers. Make us partakers of the riches and abundance which thou possessest. All nations call thee blessed ; the whole hierarchy of heaven sings thy praises, and we, who are upon earth, cry out to thee. Receive our homage, O full of grace ! Mother of God, our sovereign and our queen, the Lord is with thee ; make intercession for us.<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary ! look down upon us, and draw our hearts to God.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## NINETEENTH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

It is sweet to every one to be in the company of a dear friend ; and shall we not find it sweet, in this valley of tears, to remain in the company of the best friend we have, and who can do us every kind of good ; who loves us with the most tender affection, and therefore dwells always with us ? Behold, in the Most Blessed Sacrament we can converse at pleasure with Jesus, we can open our hearts to him, we can lay our wants before him, and we can ask him for his graces ; in a word, in this Sacrament we can treat with the King of Heaven, in all confidence and without restraint. Joseph was only too happy when, as the sacred Scripture tells us, God descended by his grace into his prison to comfort him : *She went down with him into the pit, and in bands she left him not.*<sup>2</sup> But we are

<sup>1</sup> *In Annunt. Deip.*

<sup>2</sup> “ Descendit cum illo in foveam, et in vinculis non dereliquit illum.”—*Wisd. x. 13.*

yet more highly favored; for we have always with us in this land of miseries our God made Man, who, by his real presence, is with us all the days of our life, and comforts and helps us with the greatest affection and compassion. What a consolation it is to a poor prisoner to have an affectionate friend, who keeps him company, consoles him, gives him hope, succors him, and thinks of relieving him in his misery! Behold our good friend Jesus Christ, who in this Sacrament encourages us, saying: *Behold, I am with you all days.*<sup>1</sup> Behold me, he says, all thine: I am come from heaven into thy prison expressly to console thee, to help thee, to deliver thee. Welcome me, and do so always; cling to me and thus thou wilt never feel thy miseries; and afterwards thou wilt come with me to my kingdom, where I shall make thee perfectly happy.

O God, O incomprehensible ocean of love, since Thy condescension towards us is so great, that in order to dwell near us Thou descendest upon our altars, I propose often to visit Thee; I am determined, as often as I possibly can, to enjoy Thy most sweet presence, which is the beautitude of the saints in heaven. Oh, could I but always remain in Thy presence, to adore Thee and to make Thee acts of love! Arouse, I beseech Thee, my soul, when through tepidity or worldly affairs it neglects to visit Thee. Enkindle in me a great desire always to remain near Thee in this Sacrament. Ah, my loving Jesus, would that I had always loved Thee! would that I had always pleased Thee! I console myself that I still have time to do so, not only in the next life, but also in this. I am determined to do so; I am determined to love Thee indeed, my sovereign good, my love, my treasure, my all. I will love Thee with all my strength.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My God, help me to love Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

<sup>1</sup> "Ecce ego vobiscum sum omnibus diebus."—*Matt.* xxviii. 20.

**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

The devout Bernardine de Bustis says: "O sinner, whoever you may be, despair not; but with confidence have recourse to this Lady: you will find her hands filled with mercies and graces."<sup>1</sup> "And know also," he adds, "that this most compassionate Queen has a greater desire to do you good than you can have to be succored by her."<sup>2</sup> I will ever, O my Lady, thank God for having taught me to know thee. Unfortunate indeed should I be, did I not know thee, or did I forget thee. Ill would it fare with my salvation. But, my Mother, I bless thee, I love thee; and so great is my confidence in thee, that I place my whole soul in thy hands.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, blessed is he who knows thee, and puts his trust in thee!

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of the Abbot of Celles.*

Draw me after thee, O Virgin Mary! that I may run in the odor of thy perfumes. Draw me because I am impeded by the weight of my sins, and by the malice of my enemies. As no one can go to thy divine Son who is not conducted by his heavenly Father, so I presume also to say, that no one can approach this same Jesus but through thy intercession. Thou art the teacher of true wisdom: through thee sinners obtain grace because thou art their advocate; thou promisest to obtain help for those who honor thee, because thou art the treasure of God and the depository of all his graces.<sup>3</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O thou, who art the salvation of those who invoke thee, save me.<sup>4</sup>

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

<sup>1</sup> "O peccator! non diffidas, sed secure ad istam Dominam recurras; invenies eam in manibus plenam misericordia et largitate."—*Mar. p. 2, s. 5.*

<sup>2</sup> "Plus enim ipsa desiderat facere tibi bonum, quam tu accipere concupiscas."

<sup>3</sup> *Cont. de V. M. c. I.*

<sup>4</sup> "O Salus te invocantium!"—*S. Bonav.*

## TWENTIETH VISIT.

## To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

The prophet Zacharias says: *In that day there shall be a fountain open to the house of David, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, for the washing of the sinner.*<sup>1</sup> Jesus in the Holy Sacrament is the fountain foretold by the prophet as open to all, and to which we can go whenever we please, to wash our souls from all the stains of sin which are daily contracted. When any one falls into some fault, what more beautiful remedy is there than to have immediate recourse to the Most Blessed Sacrament?

Yes, my Jesus, I resolve always to do this; for I know that the waters of this fountain of Thine not only cleanse me, but also give me light, and strengthen me not to fall, and enable me cheerfully to bear contradictions, and also inflame me with Thy love. I know that for this end it is that Thou awaitest my visits, and recompensest those of Thy lovers with so many graces. My Jesus, delay not; but wash me now from all the defects that I have committed this day, and for which I am grieved because they have displeased Thêe; strengthen me against relapse by giving me a great desire to love Thee much. Oh, could I but always dwell near Thee, as did Thy faithful servant Mary Diaz, who lived in the time of St. Teresa, and had permission from the Bishop of Avila to inhabit the tribune of a church, where she remained almost always in the presence of the Most Blessed Sacrament, which she called her neighbor, and which she only left to go to confession and Communion. When the Venerable Brother Francis of the Infant Jesus, of the

<sup>1</sup> "In die illa erit fons patens domui David et habitantibus Jerusalem, in ablutionem peccatoris."—*Zach.* xiii. 1.

Order of the Discalced Carmelites, passed before a church in which the Blessed Sacrament was kept, he could not refrain from entering to visit it, saying: "That it was not becoming for a friend to pass before the door of a friend without entering, at least to salute him and exchange a word." But a word did not satisfy him; he always remained as long as obedience allowed him in the presence of his beloved Lord.

My only and infinite good, I see that Thou hast instituted this Sacrament, and that Thou remainest on this altar, to be loved by me; and that for this end Thou hast given me a heart capable of loving Thee much. Why is it, then, that I am so ungrateful as not to love Thee? or that I love Thee so little? Now it is not just that such goodness as Thou art should be so little loved. The love, at least, which Thou bearest me, deserves other and greater love on my part. Thou art an infinite God, and I am a miserable worm. It would be little, did I die for Thee, or wear myself out for Thee, who didst die for me, and dost sacrifice Thy entire self for me every day on the altar. Thou deservest to be much loved; I will love Thee much: help me, my Jesus, help me to love Thee, and to do that which pleases Thee so much, and which Thou so earnestly seekest of me.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Beloved to me, and I to my Beloved! <sup>1</sup>

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

My most sweet, most compassionate, most amiable Queen, oh, how great is the confidence with which St. Bernard inspires me when I have recourse to thee! He says that thou dost not go examining the merits of those who have recourse to thy compassion; but that thou

<sup>1</sup> "Dilectus meus mihi, et ego illi."—*Cant.* ii. 16.



offerest thyself to help all who pray to thee: "Mary does not discuss merits, but shows herself ready to hear and welcome all."<sup>1</sup> Therefore, if I pray to thee, thou dost graciously hear me. Well, then, listen to what I have to ask thee: I am a poor sinner, deserving of a thousand hells. I wish to change my life; I wish to love my God, whom I have so greatly offended. I dedicate myself to thee as thy slave; to thee I give myself, miserable as I am; save, then, a poor creature who is no longer his own, but thine. My Lady, dost thou understand me? Yes; I trust that thou hast understood me, and graciously heard my prayer.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, I am thine; save me!<sup>2</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of the Abbot of Celles.*

Most sweet Virgin, thou hast found grace and favor with God, in having been preserved from original sin, filled with the Holy Ghost, and chosen to be the Mother of the Son of God. Thou holdest in thy hands all the treasures of grace, not only for thy own benefit, but also for ours; and thou failest not to distribute them according to our necessities. Thou assistest the good, by obtaining for them grace to persevere, and thou helpest the wicked by preparing them to receive the divine mercy; thou aidest the dying by defending them against the snares of the devil, and, after death, thou receivest their souls, and conductest them to the mansions of the blessed.<sup>3</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary! happy is he who serves thee and trusts in thee.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

<sup>1</sup> "Maria non discutit merita, sed omnibus se exorabilem præbet."  
—*In Sign. magn.*

<sup>2</sup> "O Maria, tuus sum ego, salvum me fac!"

<sup>3</sup> "Contempl. de V. M. c. 6.

TWENTY-FIRST VISIT.

To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Wheresoever the body shall be, thither will the eagles also be gathered together.*<sup>1</sup> The saints generally understand by this body that of Jesus Christ; and by the eagles, souls who, being detached from creatures, rise above the things of the earth, and fly towards heaven, after which they always sigh in thought and affection, and where they constantly dwell. These eagles also find their paradise on earth wherever they find Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament; so much so, indeed, that they seem never to tire hovering around him. If eagles, says St. Jerome,<sup>2</sup> on scenting a dead body go from afar to seek it, how much more should we run and fly to Jesus in the Most Blessed Sacrament, as to the most delicious food of our hearts! Hence saints in this valley of tears have always as parched harts run to this fountain of paradise. Father Balthasar Alvarez, of the Society of Jesus, in whatever occupation he was engaged, used often to cast his eyes towards the place in which he knew that the Blessed Sacrament was; he often visited it, and even spent entire nights before it. He used to weep when he saw the palaces of the great ones of this world filled with people, who courted a man from whom they hoped for some miserable earthly good, and the churches so abandoned, in which the supreme sovereign of the world dwells, and remains with us as on a throne of love, rich in immense and eternal treasures. He used also to say, that religious persons were indeed fortunate, because in the very houses in which they reside, they can, whenever

<sup>1</sup> "Ubicumque fuerit corpus, illic congregabantur et aquilæ."—*Matt.* xxiv. 23.

<sup>2</sup> *In Matt. loco cit.*

they please, either night or day, visit this great Lord in the Most Blessed Sacrament; and this lay people cannot do.

Since, then, my most loving Lord, notwithstanding that Thou seest me as a leper, and so ungrateful to Thy love, Thou invitest me to approach Thee, I will not be discouraged at the sight of my miseries: I come and approach Thee; but do Thou wholly change me. Drive from me every love which is not for Thee, every desire which displeases Thee, every thought which does not tend toward Thee. My Jesus, my love, my treasure, my all, I am determined to please Thee alone. I will give pleasure only to Thee. Thou alone deservest all my love; Thee only will I love with my whole heart. Detach me from everything, my Lord, and bind me to Thyself alone; but bind me so firmly, that I may never more be able to separate myself from Thee, either in this life or in the next.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My most sweet Jesus, never allow me to be separated from Thee! <sup>1</sup>

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Denis, the Carthusian, calls the Most Blessed Virgin "the advocate of all the wicked who have recourse to her." <sup>2</sup>

Since, then, O great Mother of God, thy office is to defend the causes of the most guilty criminals who have recourse to thee, behold me now at thy feet; to thee I have recourse, and I address thee in the words of St. Thomas of Villanova: "O gracious advocate, fulfil thy charge." <sup>3</sup> Now quickly enter upon thy office, under-

<sup>1</sup> "Jesu mi dulcissime ! ne permittas me separari a te."

<sup>2</sup> "Advocata omnium iniquorum ad eam confugientium."—*De Laud. V. M.* l. 2, a. 23.

<sup>3</sup> "Eja ergo, Advocata nostra ! officium tuum imple."—*In Nat. B. V. conc.* 3.

take my cause : it is true that I have indeed been guilty before my Lord, having offended him, after the many benefits and graces he has conferred upon me; but the evil is done; thou canst save me. Thou hast only to tell thy God that thou defendest me, and then I shall be forgiven, and shall be saved.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My dear Mother, thou hast to save me !

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of William Bishop of Paris.*

I address my petitions to thee, O Mother of God ! whom the whole Church styles the Mother of mercy. Canst thou, whose prayers are always acceptable to God, refuse thy intercession in behalf of sinners ? Justly does St. Bernard say, that we may cease to call thee the Mother of Mercy, if any one ever invokes thee in the hour of need, without experiencing thy assistance. Thou wilt not, therefore, exclude me from a share in thy compassion. Thou wilt intercede for me with more earnestness than I can for myself ; and thou wilt procure more abundant graces than I could presume to ask. O Mother of mercy ! can that clemency, which never abandoned any one, refuse me its assistance in the danger to which I am exposed of being eternally lost ?<sup>1</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary ! I am thine : save me.<sup>2</sup>

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

TWENTY-SECOND VISIT.

To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

The Spouse in the sacred Canticles went about seeking for her Beloved; and not finding him, she asked all whom she met: *Have you seen Him whom my soul loveth ?*<sup>3</sup> Jesus was not then on earth; but now, if a soul that loves

<sup>1</sup> *De Rhet. div. c. 18.*

<sup>2</sup> "O Maria ! tuus sum ego, salvum me fac."

<sup>3</sup> "Num quem diligit anima mea vidistis ?"—*Cant. iii. 3.*

him seeks him, she can always find him in the Most Blessed Sacrament. The Venerable Father John Avila used to say, that amongst all sanctuaries he could neither find nor desire a more delightful one than a church in which the Most Blessed Sacrament is reserved.

O infinite love of my God, worthy of infinite love ! And how couldst Thou, my Jesus, ever abase Thyself so far as, in order to dwell amongst men, and to unite Thyself to their hearts, to humble Thyself to such a degree as to conceal Thyself under the species of bread ? O incarnate Word, Thou art supreme in Thy humility, because Thou art supreme in Thy love ! How can I do otherwise than love Thee with my entire self, knowing as I do how much Thou hast done to captivate my love ? I love Thee much ; and therefore I give Thy good pleasure the preference above every interest and every satisfaction of my own. My pleasure is to give Thee pleasure, my Jesus, my God, my love, my all. Make me hunger to be continually in Thy presence in the Blessed Sacrament, to receive Thee into myself, and to keep Thee company. I should be indeed ungrateful did I not accept so sweet and gracious an invitation. Ah, Lord, annihilate in me all affection for created things ! Thou willest that Thou alone, my Creator, shouldst be the object of all my sighs, of all my love. I love Thee, most amiable goodness of my God. I ask nothing of Thee but Thyself. I desire not my own pleasure ; Thy pleasure is all my desire, and sufficient for me. Accept, my Jesus, this good desire of a sinner who wishes to love Thee. Help me by Thy grace. Grant that I, a miserable slave of hell, may from this day forward be the happy slave of Thy love.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* I love Thee, Jesus, my treasure, above every other treasure !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

**Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.**

My most sweet Lady and Mother, I am a vile rebel to thy great Son; but I come repentant to thy mercy, that thou mayest obtain for me pardon. Say not that thou canst not do so; for St. Bernard calls thee "the minister of propitiation."<sup>1</sup> To thee also it belongs to succor those who are in dangers, St. Ephrem calling thee "the helper of those in peril."<sup>2</sup> My Lady, who is in greater danger than I am? I have lost God: it is certain that I have been condemned to hell. I know not whether God has yet pardoned me. I may again lose him. But thou canst obtain me all; and from thee I hope for every good, for forgiveness, perseverance, and heaven. I hope to be one of those who, in the kingdom of the blessed, will most praise thy mercies, O Mary, for having saved me by thy intercession.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* I will sing the mercies of Mary for all eternity; I will sing them forever and ever! Amen, amen.<sup>3</sup>

[From the Naples Edition.]

*Prayer of William, Bishop of Paris.*

O Mother of God! thy goodness never despises the sinner who recommends himself to thy patronage, however enormous his crimes may have been: and hence the Church justly calls thee her advocate and the refuge of sinners. Let not, then, my crimes prevent thee from fulfilling this office of mercy, whereby thou becomest the mediatrix of peace, the hope and secure asylum of all who are in affliction. Let it not be said that the Mother of God, who, for the sake of the world, brought forth the source of mercy, can refuse to look down with pity on any wretch that flies to her for assistance. Thou art employed as the mediatrix between God and man: let me experience a share of thy great compassion."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Ministra propitiationis."—*In Sign. magn.*

<sup>2</sup> "Opitulatrix periclitantium."—*De Laud. Dei Gen.*

<sup>3</sup> "Misericordias Mariæ in æternum cantabo, in æternum cantabo. Amen, Amen."

<sup>4</sup> *De Rhet. div.* c. 18.



*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, my loving Mother, may I, under God, owe my salvation to thee!

*The usual prayer,* page 125.

#### TWENTY-THIRD VISIT.

##### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc.,* page 123.

Many Christians submit to great fatigue, and expose themselves to many dangers, to visit the places in the Holy Land where our most loving Saviour was born, suffered, and died. We need not undertake so long a journey, or expose ourselves to so many dangers; the same Lord is near us, and dwells in the church, only a few steps distant from our houses. If pilgrims, says St. Paulinus,<sup>1</sup> consider it a great thing to bring back a little dust from the crib, or from the holy sepulchre in which Jesus was buried, with what ardor should not we visit the Most Blessed Sacrament, where the same Jesus is in person, and where we can go without encountering so much fatigue and so many dangers! A religious person, to whom God had given great love for the Most Blessed Sacrament, amongst other things wrote as follows in a letter: "I see that every good thing that I have comes to me from the Most Blessed Sacrament. I have given and consecrated my whole self to Jesus in this Sacrament. I see innumerable graces, which are not granted because people do not go to this divine Sacrament. I see the great desire that our Lord has to dispense his graces in the Sacrament. O holy mystery! O sacred Host! Where is it that God manifests his power the most, if it is not in this Host? For this Host contains all that God has ever done for us. Let us not envy the blessed who are in heaven, since on earth we have the same Lord, with greater wonders of his love. Induce all with whom you

<sup>1</sup> *Epist. 36 ad Mac.*

speak to devote themselves to the Most Blessed Sacrament. I speak thus because this Sacrament enraptures my soul. Nor can I cease to speak of the Most Blessed Sacrament, which deserves so greatly to be loved. I know not what to do for Jesus in this Sacrament." Thus the letter ends.

O ye Seraphim, who remain sweetly burning with love around your and my Lord; though it is not indeed for love of you but of me that this King of Heaven is pleased to be present in this Sacrament—O loving Angels, let me also burn with love; and do you enkindle your love in me, that with you I also may burn! O my Jesus, teach me to know the greatness of the love which Thou bearest to men, that at the sight of so great love my desire to love Thee and please Thee may go on always increasing! I love Thee, most amiable Lord, and will always love Thee; and this alone to please Thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, I believe in Thee, I hope in Thee, I love Thee, and I give myself to Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Most amiable Virgin, St. Bonaventure calls thee, "the Mother of orphans;"<sup>1</sup> and St. Ephrem, moreover, calls thee "the receiver of orphans."<sup>2</sup> Alas, these wretched orphans are no others than poor sinners who have lost God! Behold, then, I have recourse to thee, most holy Mary. I have lost my Father; but thou art my Mother, who must enable me to recover him. In this my so great misfortune I call thee to my aid; do thou succor me. Shall I remain disconsolate? No; for Innocent III., speaking of thee, asks, "Whoever called upon her, and was not graciously heard by her?"<sup>3</sup> And whoever prayed

<sup>1</sup> "Mater orphanorum."—*Psalt. min. B. V.*

<sup>2</sup> "Susceptio orphanorum."—*De Laud. Dei Gen.*

<sup>3</sup> "Quis invocavit eam, et non est exauditus ab ipsa?"—*De Ass. B. V. s. 2.*

to thee, and was not heard and helped by thee? Who was ever lost who had recourse to thee? He alone is lost who has not recourse to thee. Then, my Queen, if thou desirest my salvation, enable me always to invoke and confide in thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My own most holy Mary, give me confidence in thee!

[From the Naples Edition.]

I shall say with St. Augustine, Remember, O Mary, full of goodness! that no sinner has ever been heard of that has had recourse to thy protection and been abandoned by thee. Let us, then, says St. Bernard, seek for grace through the means of Mary, because she can obtain what she asks, and her demands never meet with a refusal.<sup>1</sup> O Mother of God! thou prayest for all; vouchsafe to pray for me, who am the greatest of sinners, and therefore have the greatest need of thy intercession.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* I fly to thy protection, O sacred Mother of God!

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## TWENTY-FOURTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Verily Thou art a hidden God.*<sup>3</sup> In no other work of divine love are these words so fully verified as in this adorable mystery of the Most Holy Sacrament, where our God is entirely hidden. When the Eternal Word took flesh, he hid his divinity, and appeared as a man on earth; but remaining with us in this Sacrament, he hides even his humanity, and, as remarks St. Bernard, appears only under the form of bread, to show thereby the tenderness of the love which he bears us: "The divinity is

<sup>1</sup> "Quæramus gratiam et per Mariam quæramus; quia quod quærit, invenit, et frustrari non potest."—*De Aquæd.*

<sup>2</sup> "Sub tuum præsidium confugimus, sancta Dei genitrix!"

<sup>3</sup> "Vere tu es Deus absconditus."—*Isa. xlv. 15.*

---

See the Sixth and the Thirteenth Visit, page 139 and 156.

hid, the humanity is hid; the bowels of charity alone appear.”<sup>1</sup> O my Beloved Redeemer, at the sight of the excessive tenderness Thou hast for men, I am beside myself, my Lord, and know not what to say. In this Sacrament Thou goest so far for their love as to hide Thy majesty and lower Thy glory; Thou goest so far as even to consume and annihilate Thy divine life. And whilst Thou art on the altar Thou seemest to have nothing else to do than to love men, and to show them the love which Thou bearest them. And what gratitude do they show Thee in return, O great Son of God?

O Jesus, O too great a lover of men, allow me to say so, for I see that Thou preferrest their advantage to Thine own glory. And didst Thou not know to how much contempt this loving design of Thine would expose Thee? I see, and before me Thou didst see it full well Thyself, that the greater part of men adore Thee not, neither will they acknowledge Thee for what Thou art in this Sacrament. I know that these very men have gone so far as to trample on the consecrated Hosts, that they have thrown them on the ground, into water, and into fire. And I see the greater part even of those who believe in Thee, O God, who, so far from repairing so many outrages by the homage of their devotion, either come to the church to offend Thee still more by their irreverences, or else abandon Thee on Thy altar, and sometimes even leave it unprovided with a lamp or the necessary ornaments!

Oh, could I, my most sweet Saviour, but wash with my tears, or even with my blood, those unhappy places in which, in this Sacrament, Thy love and Thy enamoured heart have been so greatly outraged! But if so much is not granted me, I desire at least, my Lord, and determine, to visit Thee often, in order to adore Thee as I now adore Thee, and this in compensation for the insults which

<sup>1</sup> “Latet divinitas, latet humanitas; sola patent viscera charitatis.”

Thou receivest in this most divine mystery. Accept, O Eternal Father, this scanty honor, which I, the most miserable of men, now offer Thee in reparation of the outrages offered to Thy Son in the Most Holy Sacrament; accept it in union with that infinite honor which Jesus Christ gave Thee on the cross, and which he daily gives Thee in the Most Blessed Sacrament. O my Sacramental Jesus, would that I could fill all men with love for the Most Blessed Sacrament !

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O amiable Jesus, make Thyself known, make Thyself loved !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

My most powerful Lady, in the midst of my misgivings as to my eternal salvation, how great is the confidence which I feel when I have recourse to thee; and when I think that thou, my Mother, art, on the one hand, so rich in graces, that St. John Damascene calls thee “a sea of graces;”<sup>1</sup> St. Bonaventure, “the assemblage of graces,”<sup>2</sup> that is, the source in which all graces are congregated; St. Ephrem, “a fountain of grace and of all consolation;”<sup>3</sup> and St. Bernard, “the fulness of every good;”<sup>4</sup>—and when, on the other hand, I reflect that thy desire to do us good is so great, that thou esteemest thyself offended, as St. Bonaventure says, by him who does not ask thee for thy graces: “they sin against thee, O Lady,” he says, “who do not ask of thee;”<sup>5</sup>—O most rich, O most wise, and most merciful Queen, I see that thou knowest far better than I do the wants of my soul, and that thou lovest me far more than I can love thee! Know, then,

<sup>1</sup> “Pelagus gratiarum.”—*In Nat. V. M. or. i.*

<sup>2</sup> “Congregatio gratiarum.”—*Spec. B. V. c. 7.*

<sup>3</sup> “Fons gratiæ et totius consolationis.”—*De Laud. Dei Gen.*

<sup>4</sup> “Plenitudo totius boni.”—*De Aquad.*

<sup>5</sup> “In te, Domina, peccant, qui te non rogant.”

the grace for which I now ask thee; obtain me the grace which thou knowest to be the most expedient for my soul. Ask this favor from God, and I am satisfied.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My God, grant me the graces which Mary asks Thee for me!

[From the Naples Edition.]

Let us go, says St. Paul, to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy in the time of need,<sup>1</sup> Thou, divine Mary, art this throne of grace,<sup>2</sup> from which God dispenses all his blessings. Most amiable Queen, thy delight is to assist those who are in the wretched state of sin: behold, then, at thy feet a grievous sinner, imploring the aid of thy prayers. Help me to the utmost of thy power, and without delay: the wonders of thy mercy will be enhanced by saving one that has deserved a thousand hells. Thy Son cannot withstand thy intercession. I entreat thee, therefore, by the love which thou entertainest for Jesus, to procure pardon for me for the past, and grace to lead a holy life for the future. O Mary, thou art my strength, and the ground of my hope.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, cast a look of compassion on me.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## TWENTY-FIFTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

St. Paul praises the obedience of Jesus Christ, saying, that he obeyed his Eternal Father even to death: *becoming obedient even unto death.*<sup>3</sup> But in this sacrament he has gone still farther; for here he has been pleased to become

<sup>1</sup> "Adeamus cum fiducia ad thronum gratiæ, ut misericordiam consequamur, et gratiam inveniamus in auxilio opportuno."—*Heb. iv.* 16.

<sup>2</sup> *St. Antoninus.*—P. 4, tit. 15, c. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Factus obediens usque ad mortem."—*Phil. ii.* 8.

---

\* See the Second Visit, page 130.



obedient, not only to his Eternal Father, but also to man; and not only to death, but as long as the world shall last; so that we can say: "He has become obedient even unto the consummation of the world." He, the King of Heaven, comes down from heaven in obedience to man, and then seems to dwell and converse there, in order to obey men: *And I do not resist.*<sup>1</sup> There he remains without moving himself; he allows himself to be placed where men will, be it for exposition in the remonstrance, or to be enclosed in the tabernacle. He allows himself to be carried wheresoever he is borne, be it into houses or through the streets; he allows himself to be given in Communion to whomsoever he is administered, be they just or sinners. St. Luke says that whilst he dwelt on earth he obeyed the Most Blessed Virgin Mary and St. Joseph; but in this Sacrament he obeys as many creatures as there are priests on earth: *and I do not resist.*

Permit me now to address Thee, O most loving Heart of my Jesus, from which indeed all the Sacraments flowed forth, but principally this Sacrament of love. I would gladly give Thee as much glory and honor as Thou givest in the Holy Sacrament in our churches to the Eternal Father. I know that on this altar Thou still lovest me with that same love with which Thou didst love me when Thou didst close Thy divine life in the midst of so much anguish on the cross. O divine Heart, enlighten all those who know Thee not with the knowledge of Thyself! Through Thy merits deliver from purgatory, or at least relieve, the pains of the afflicted souls, who are already Thy spouses for all eternity. I adore Thee, I thank Thee, I love Thee, in union with all souls who at this moment love Thee, be they on earth or in heaven. O most pure Heart, purify my heart from all

<sup>1</sup> "Ego autem non contradico."—*Isa.* l. 5.

attachment to creatures, and fill it with Thy holy love ! O most sweet Heart, possess my whole heart, so that henceforward it may be all Thine, and always be enabled to say: *Who, then, shall separate us from the love of God, which is in Jesus Christ our Lord?*<sup>1</sup> Write, O most sacred Heart, upon my heart all the bitter sorrows, which for so many years Thou didst endure on earth with so much love for me, that, on seeing them, I may henceforward desire, or at least endure with patience, all the sorrows of this life. Most humble Heart of Jesus, give me a share of Thy humility. Most meek Heart, impart Thy sweetness to me. Take from my heart all that displeases Thee; convert it wholly to Thee, so that I may no longer will or desire other than what Thou willest. In a word, grant that I may live only to obey Thee, only to love Thee, only to give Thee pleasure. I know that I, indeed, owe Thee much; and that Thou hast indeed placed me under great obligations: it will be but little if I consume and wear myself out for Thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Heart of Jesus, Thou art the sole Lord of my heart !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

St. Bernard says, that Mary is that heavenly ark, in which if we take timely refuge, we shall certainly be delivered from the shipwreck of eternal damnation: "She is the ark in which we escape shipwreck."<sup>2</sup> The ark in which Noe escaped from the general wreck of the world was indeed a type of Mary. But Hesychius says, that Mary is a more spacious, stronger, and more compassionate ark.<sup>3</sup> Only a few men and a few beasts were received

<sup>1</sup> "Neque mors, neque vita, . . . poterit nos separare a charitate Dei, quæ est in Christo Jesu."—*Rom.* viii. 39.

<sup>2</sup> "Arca in qua naufragium evadimus."—*S. de B. M. Deip*

<sup>3</sup> "Arca Noe largior."—*De S. M. Deip. hom. 2.*

and saved by the former; but Mary, our ark, receives all who take refuge under her mantle, and with certainty saves them all. Unfortunate should we be had we not Mary! But still, my Queen, how many are lost! and why? Because they have not recourse to thee. And who would ever be lost had he recourse to thee?

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Grant, most holy Mary, that we may all and always have recourse to thee!

[From the Naples Edition.]

O my sovereign Queen! thou art the treasure of God,<sup>1</sup> and in thy hands are deposited those stores of mercy which he wishes to bestow upon us. Thou hast said, by the mouth of the prophet, that thou holdest in thy hands the treasures of heaven, to enrich those who love thee.<sup>2</sup> My loving Mother, I am an unfortunate sinner, and in the greatest need of help. Remember that I love thee with all my heart; yes, next to God, there is no object that I love so much as thee, because I know that this is due to thy unrivalled perfections. Have pity on me, and forsake me not; help me during life, and help me at the hour of death, that I may one day arrive at the enjoyment of thy happy society in the kingdom of heaven.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary! all my hopes are directed towards thee.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## TWENTY-SIXTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Rejoice, and praise, O thou habitation of Sion; for great is He that is in the midst of thee, the Holy One of Israel.*<sup>3</sup> O God, and what joy ought not we men to conceive, what

<sup>1</sup> "Thesaurus et Thesauraria gratiarum."—*Idiot. Cont. de V. M.* c. i.

<sup>2</sup> "Mecum sunt divitiæ, . . ut ditem diligentes me."—*Prov.* xviii. 8.

<sup>3</sup> "Exsulta et lauda, habitatio Sion; quia Magnus in medio tui, Sanctus Israel."—*Isa.* xii. 6.

\* See the Tenth Visit, page 149.

hopes and what affections, in knowing that in the midst of our land, in our churches, near our houses, the Holy of holies, the true God, dwells and lives in the Most Holy Sacrament of the Altar! He who by his presence alone renders the saints in heaven blessed! He who is love itself. "It is not so much that he has love, as that he is love itself,"<sup>1</sup> says St. Bernard. This Sacrament is not only a sacrament of love, but is love itself; it is God himself, who, for the immense love which he bears his creatures, calls himself, and is, love itself: *God is love.*<sup>2</sup>

But I hear Thee complain, O my Sacramental Jesus: *I was a stranger, and you took Me not in;*<sup>3</sup> that Thou camest on earth to be our guest for our good, and that we have not welcomed Thee. Thou art right, Lord, Thou art right; and I am one of these ungrateful creatures who have left Thee alone, without even visiting Thee. Chastise me as Thou plearest; but not by depriving me of Thy presence, which is the chastisement I deserve: no, I will repair my fault, and the indignities which I have heaped upon Thee. From this day forward I will not only visit Thee often, but will remain with Thee for as long a time as I can. O most compassionate Saviour, be pleased to make me faithful to Thee; and grant that I may also, by my example, excite others to keep Thee company in the Most Blessed Sacrament. I hear the Eternal Father, who says: *This is my beloved Son: in whom I am well pleased.*<sup>4</sup> A God, then, finds all his complacency in Thee; and shall not I, a miserable worm, find mine in dwelling with Thee in this valley of tears! O consuming fire, destroy in me all affections for earthly things; for they alone can render me unfaithful, and take me

<sup>1</sup> "Amorem non tam habet, quam ipse est."—*In Cant.* s. 59.

<sup>2</sup> "Deus charitas est."—*I John*, iv. 16.

<sup>3</sup> "Hospes eram, et non collegistis me."—*Matt.* xxv. 43.

<sup>4</sup> "Hic est Filius meus dilectus, in quo mihi complacui."—*Matt.* iii. 17.

away from Thee. Thou canst do so, if Thou wilt: *Lord, if Thou wilt, Thou canst make me clean.*<sup>1</sup> Thou hast already done so much for me, do this also: banish from my heart all love which does not tend towards Thee. Behold, I give myself all to Thee: I now dedicate the whole remainder of my life to the love of the Most Blessed Sacrament. Thou, O Sacramental Jesus, hast to be my comfort, my love in life, and at the hour of my death, when Thou wilt come to be my Viaticum and my guide to Thy blessed kingdom. Amen, amen. So do I hope; so may it be!

*Ejaculatory prayer.* When, O my Jesus, shall I behold Thy beautiful face!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

In thee, our own most holy Mother, we find the remedy for all our woes; in thee we find strength in our weakness; for St. Germanus calls thee the “strength itself of our weakness.”<sup>2</sup> In thee we find a door by which to make our exit from the slavery of sin; for St. Bonaventure calls thee “the gate of liberty.”<sup>3</sup> In thee we find our certain peace; for the same saint calls thee “the safe repose of men.”<sup>4</sup> In thee we find relief in our miserable life. Thou art “the solace of our pilgrimage,”<sup>5</sup> as St. Laurence Justinian calls thee. In thee, in a word, we find divine grace and God himself, for St. Bonaventure calls thee “the throne of God’s grace;”<sup>6</sup> and St. Proclus, “the bridge by which God descends to men;”<sup>7</sup> that happy

<sup>1</sup> “Domine, si vis, potes me mundare.”—*Matt.* viii. 2.

<sup>2</sup> “Potentia debilitatis nostræ.”—*Enc. Deiparæ.*

<sup>3</sup> “Porta libertatis.”—*Psalt. min. B. V.*

<sup>4</sup> “Quies tuta hominum.”

<sup>5</sup> “Solatium perigrinationis nostræ.”—*S. in Nat. V. M.*

<sup>6</sup> “Thronus gratiæ Dei.”

<sup>7</sup> “Pons per quem Deus ad homines descendit.”—*Or. 1 in Dei gen.*

bridge by which God, who had been driven to a distance by our sins, returns to dwell by his grace in our souls.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, thou art my strength, my deliverance, my peace, and salvation !

[From the Naples Edition.]

O Mary ! I will say to thee in the words of thy servant St. Bernard :<sup>1</sup> thou art the queen of mercy. And who are the subjects of thy mercy but such as are in misery and affliction ? Yes, thou art truly the queen of mercy, and I, the most wretched of sinners, am thy subject. I, therefore, of all, am the best entitled to thy compassion. Turn then, O my advocate, those eyes of mercy towards me, and after my days of exile, show me Jesus, the blessed fruit of thy womb.<sup>2</sup>

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, my refuge, pray for me to Jesus.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

## TWENTY-SEVENTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ*, etc., page 123.

The holy Church sings in the Office of the Most Blessed Sacrament: "There is no other country, however great, whose gods are nigh it as our God is nigh to us."<sup>3</sup> When the Gentiles heard how far our God carried his works of love, they exclaimed: Oh, how good a God is this God of the Christians ! And, indeed, although the Gentiles imagined their gods according to their own caprices,—yet, if you read history, you will never find in all their fables, and among the many gods they invented, that they went so far as even to imagine a god as enamoured

<sup>1</sup> "Tu es Regina misericordiæ; et qui subditi, nisi miseri ? Tu Regina misericordiæ, et ego miserrimus peccator, subditorum maximus. Rege nos ergo, o Regina misericordiæ."

<sup>2</sup> "Eja ergo, Advocata nostra ! illos tuos misericordiæ oculos ad nos converte."

<sup>3</sup> "Non est alia natio tam grandis, quæ habeat deos appropinquantes sibi, sicut Deus noster adest nobis."—*Resp.* 7.—*Deut.* iv. 7.



of men as is our true God; who, to show his love for his adorers, and to enrich them with graces, has worked such a prodigy of love as to become their constant companion, and to remain night and day concealed on their altars, seeming as if he knew not how to separate himself from them, even for a moment: *He hath made a remembrance of His wonderful works.*<sup>1</sup>

Thou, then, my most sweet Jesus, hast been pleased to work the greatest of Thy miracles in order to satisfy the excessive desire which Thou hast to remain always near and present to us. Why, then, do men fly from Thy presence? And how can they live for so long a time at a distance from Thee, or visit Thee so seldom? How is it that when in Thy presence they get so weary that a quarter of an hour appears an age? Oh, patience of my Jesus, how great art Thou! Yes, my Lord, I understand Thee; Thy patience is great, because the love Thou bearest to men is great: and this it is which, so to say, forces Thee to dwell always in the midst of creatures so ungrateful.

Ah, my God, who, because Thou art infinite in perfections art also infinite in love, permit not that I should for the future be, as I have hitherto been, of the number of these ungrateful ones. Grant me a love equal to Thy merits and to my own obligations. At one time I also was weary in Thy presence, either because I loved Thee not, or because I loved Thee too little; but if by Thy grace I am enabled to love Thee much, I shall no longer find it tedious to remain even for whole days and nights at Thy feet in the Most Holy Sacrament. O Eternal Father, I offer Thee Thine own Son himself; accept him for me, and through his merits give me so ardent and tender a love towards the Most Blessed Sacrament, that, constantly turning towards some church in which he

<sup>1</sup> “Memoriam fecit mirabilium suorum.”—*Ps.* cx. 4.

dwells, I may think of, and desire with longing anxiety, the time when I may be able to go and entertain myself in his presence.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My God, for the love of Jesus, give me a great love towards the Most Blessed Sacrament !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Mary is that tower of David, of which the Holy Ghost says in the sacred Canticles: *It is built with bulwarks; a thousand bucklers hang upon it, all the armor of valiant men.*<sup>1</sup> A tower built with a thousand fortresses, and containing a thousand shields and weapons, for the benefit of those who have recourse to it. Thou art, then, according to an expression of St. Ignatius, martyr, O most holy Mary, a most powerful defence for all those who are engaged in battle.<sup>2</sup> Oh, how constantly are my enemies attacking me, in order to deprive me of the grace of God and of thy protection, my most dear Lady! But thou art my strength. Thou, indeed, dost not disdain to battle for those who trust in thee; for St. Ephrem calls thee "the bulwark of all who confide in thee."<sup>3</sup> Do thou, then, defend and fight for me, who have such great hope and confidence in thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Mary, Mary, thy name is my defence !

[From the Naples Edition.]

My queen ! thou hast said to thy servant St. Bridget, that as often as a man sins, if he returns to thee with sincere repentance, thou wilt receive him and restore him to the friendship of God ; that thou dost not consider the greatness of his crimes, but the sincerity of his repentance ; and that thou art ever ready to apply

<sup>1</sup> "Ædificata est cum propugnaculis; mille clypei pendent ex ea, omnis armatura fortium."—*Cant.* iv. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Propugnaculum munitissimum in bello versantibus."

<sup>3</sup> "Propugnatrix confidentium in te."

a cure to his wounds, because thou art in reality, as in name, the Mother of mercy.<sup>1</sup> Since, therefore, thou rejectest no sinner who approaches thee with a sincere detestation of his crimes, and since thou hast both the power and the will to heal him, behold, I present myself before thee, and beseech thee to apply thy celestial remedies to the deep wounds of my soul. Thy Son can refuse thee nothing: entreat him, then, to pardon me and to grant me his love.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary! my hope, I expect all through thee.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## TWENTY-EIGHTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

God, having given us his own Son, says St. Paul, what good thing is there that we can fear he might deny us! *How hath He not also with Him given us all things?*<sup>2</sup> We know, indeed, that all that the Eternal Father has he has given to Jesus Christ. *The Father has given Him all things into His hands.*<sup>3</sup> Let us, then, ever thank the goodness, the mercy, the liberality of our most loving God, who has been pleased to make us rich in all good things, and in every grace, by giving us Jesus in the Sacrament of the Altar: *In all things you are made rich in Him, . . . so that nothing is wanting to you in any grace.*<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Quantumcumque homo peccet, si ex vera emendatione ad me reversus fuerit, statim parata sum recipere revertentem; nec attendo quantum peccaverit, sed cum quali voluntate venit: nam non dedignor ejus plagas ungere et sanare, quia vocor (et vere sum) Mater misericordiæ."—*Rev.* l. 2, c. 23; l. 6, c. 117.

<sup>2</sup> "Quomodo non etiam cum illo omnia nobis donavit?"—*Rom.* viii. 32.

<sup>3</sup> "Omnia dedit ei Pater in manus."—*John.* xiii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> "In omnibus divites facti estis in illo, . . . ita ut nihil vobis desit in ulla gratia."—*I Cor.* i. 5, 7.

\* See the Sixteenth Visit, page 163.

Therefore, O Saviour of the world, O Incarnate Word, if I desire to have Thee, I can really think that Thou art mine, and all mine. But can I at the same time say that I am all Thine, as Thou desirest? Ah, my Lord, prevent it ; and never let the world witness such disorder and such ingratitude, as that I should not be Thine when Thou desirest me ! Ah, no; let it never be ! If it has been so hitherto, let it never be so again. I now, with the utmost determination, consecrate myself entirely to Thee; for time and eternity I consecrate my life, my will, my thoughts, my actions, my sufferings, to Thee. Behold me Thine; as a victim consecrated to Thee, I bid farewell to all creatures, and offer my whole self to Thee. Consume me with the flames of Thy divine love. No, I am determined that creatures shall no longer share my heart. The proofs which Thou hast given me of the love which Thou bearest me, even at a time when I did not love Thee, make me hope that Thou certainly acceptest me now that I love Thee, and out of love give myself to Thee.

Eternal Father, I now offer Thee all the virtues, the actions, the affections, of the Heart of Thy dear Jesus. Accept them, and by his merits, which are all mine,—for he has given them to me,—grant me the graces which Jesus asks Thee for me. With these merits I thank Thee for the many mercies which Thou hast shown me; with these I satisfy for what I owe Thee for my sins; through these I hope for every grace from Thee,—pardon, perseverance, Paradise, and above all, the crowning gift of Thy pure love. I well see that to all these gifts I myself place impediments ; but do Thou also remedy this. I ask it of Thee in the name of Jesus Christ, who has promised: *Whatsoever you shall ask the Father in My name, that will I do.*<sup>1</sup> Then Thou canst not refuse me.

<sup>1</sup> "Si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis."—*John*, xvi. 23.

Lord, my only desire is to love Thee, to give myself to Thee without reserve, and no longer to be ungrateful to Thee, as I have hitherto been. Behold me, and graciously hear me; grant that this may be the day of my entire conversion to Thee, so that I may never more cease to love Thee. I love Thee, my God! I love Thee, Infinite Goodness! I love Thee, my love, my paradise, my good, my life, my all!

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, who art all mine, Thou desirest me, and I desire Thee!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

What relief do I feel in my miseries, and what consolation in my tribulations, what strength do I not find in the midst of temptations, when I remember and call thee to my aid, O my most sweet and most holy Mother Mary! Yes, indeed, you were right, O ye saints, in calling my Lady “the haven of those who are in tribulation,”<sup>1</sup> with St. Ephrem; “the repairer of our calamities,”<sup>2</sup> and “the solace of the miserable,”<sup>3</sup> with St. Bonaventure; and “the rest from our mournings,”<sup>4</sup> with St. Germanus. My own Mary, do thou console me. I see myself loaded with sins, and surrounded by enemies; without virtue, and cold in my love towards God. Comfort me, comfort me; and let my consolation be to make me begin a new life—a life which will be really pleasing to thy Son and to thee.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Change me, O Mary my Mother: change me; thou canst do it.

[From the Naples Edition.]

O Mary, how lovely is the name given to thee by thy faithful

<sup>1</sup> “Portus vexatorum.”—*Or. ad Deip.*

<sup>2</sup> “Restauratio calamitatum nostrarum.”

<sup>3</sup> “Solatium miserorum.”—*Cant. post Psalt.*

<sup>4</sup> “Requies gemituum nostrorum.”—*Enc. Deiparæ.*

servants : *most amiable Mother*.<sup>1</sup> Yes, thou art truly amiable : thy beauty and thy goodness have won the heart of the King of kings, even of God himself. He has said to thee, *How beautiful thou art, my beloved ;* and again, *Thou art all beautiful, and there is no spot in thee*.<sup>2</sup> If, then, thou art so dear to God, how can I, a miserable sinner, and indebted to thee for so many benefits, refuse to love thee? I love thee, therefore, my most amiable Queen, and I desire to be of the number of thy most devoted lovers. Accept my desire, and obtain for me from God the love which I ask, since nothing is more pleasing to him than to love thee.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O my amiable Mother, grant that I may love thee with the greatest ardor.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

## TWENTY-NINTH VISIT.

### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc., page 123.*

*Behold, I stand at the gate, and knock*.<sup>3</sup> O most loving shepherd, who, not satisfied with sacrificing Thyself once to death on the altar of the cross for the love of Thy sheep, hast moreover been pleased to hide Thyself in this divine Sacrament on the altars of our churches, to be always near, and to knock at the doors of our hearts, and thus obtain Thy admission ! Ah, did I but know how to enjoy Thy nearness to me as did the Sacred Spouse in the Canticles, who says : *I sat down under His shadow, whom I desired*.<sup>4</sup> Ah, did I but love Thee, did I but really love Thee, my most amiable Sacrament, I also should wish never to leave the foot of a

<sup>1</sup> "Mater amabilis."

<sup>2</sup> "Concupivit Rex speciem tuam. Quam pulchra es, Amica mea! quam pulchra es!—Tota pulchra es, Amica mea, et macula non est in te."—*Cant.* iv. 1, 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Sto ad ostium, et pulso."—*Apoc.* iii. 20.

<sup>4</sup> "Sub umbra illius, quem desideraveram, sedi."—*Cant.* ii. 3.

---

\* See the Seventeenth Visit, page 165.



tabernacle either night or day; and fixing myself near Thy Majesty, concealed under the apparent shadow of the sacred species, I also should find those divine sweetnesss and that happiness which souls enamoured of Thee there find. Ah, do Thou be graciously pleased to draw me by the odor of Thy beauties, and of the immense love which Thou manifestest in this Sacrament: *Draw me: we will run after Thee to the odor of Thy ointments.*<sup>1</sup> Yes, my Saviour, I will leave creatures and all earthly pleasures, to run after Thee in this Sacrament: *As olive-plants, round about Thy table.*<sup>2</sup> Oh, what abundant fruits of virtues do those happy souls, like olive-plants, bring forth to God, who assist with love before the sacred tabernacle! But I am ashamed to appear before Thee, O my Jesus, so naked and so devoid of all virtues. Thou hast commanded that all who approach the altar to honor Thee should present a gift: *Thou shalt not appear empty before Me.*<sup>3</sup> What, then, am I to do? Am I no more to appear before Thee? Ah, no; this would not please Thee. Poor as I am, I will approach Thee; and do Thou provide me with the gifts which Thou desirest. I see that Thou dwellest in the Sacrament, not only to reward Thy lovers, but also to provide for the poor out of Thy riches.

Be it so, then; let us now begin. I adore Thee, O King of my heart, and true lover of men. O shepherd, loving Thy sheep beyond all bounds, to this throne of Thy love I now approach; and having nothing else to present to Thee, I offer Thee my miserable heart, that it may be entirely consecrated to Thy love and to Thy good pleasure. With this heart I can love Thee, and I will love Thee as much as I can. Draw it, then, to Thy-

<sup>1</sup> "Trahe me: post te curremus in odorem unguentorum tuorum."  
—*Cant.* i. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Sicut novellæ olivarum in circuitu mensæ tuæ."—*Ps.* cxxvii. 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Non apparebis in conspectu meo vacuus."—*Exod.* xxiii. 15.

self, and bind it wholly to Thy will, so that, filled with consolation, it may be able from henceforth to say, as Thy dear disciple said, that it is bound by the chains of Thy love : *I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ.*<sup>1</sup> Unite me, my Lord, entirely to Thyself, and make me forget myself, that I may have the happiness one day to lose all things, and even myself, to find Thee alone, and to love Thee forever. I love Thee, my Sacramental Lord ; to Thee do I bind myself, to Thee do I unite myself ; make me find Thee, make me love Thee, and never more separate Thyself from me.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My Jesus, Thou alone art sufficient for me !

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

St. Bernard calls Mary "the royal road of the Saviour ;"<sup>2</sup> the safe road by which to find the Saviour and salvation. Since, then, it is true, O Queen, that thou art, as the same saint says, "the chariot in which our souls go to God,"<sup>3</sup>—the one who guides us to him,—ah, Lady, thou must not suppose that I shall advance towards God, if thou dost not carry me in thine arms ! Carry me, carry me ; and if I resist, carry me by main force ; do all the violence that thou canst by the sweet attractions of thy charity to my soul and to my rebellious will, that they may leave creatures, to seek for God alone and his divine will. Show the court of heaven the greatness of thy power. After so many wonders of thy mercy, show this one more: make a poor creature who is far from God wholly his.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, thou canst make me a saint ; I hope for this grace from thee !

<sup>1</sup> "Ego Paulus, vinctus Christi Jesu."—*Eph.* iii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> "Via regia Salvatoris."—*De Adv. Dom.* s. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Vehiculum ad Deum animarumstrarum."

[From the Naples Edition.]

O charitable Queen, thou art styled by thy servants *the advocate of sinners*.<sup>1</sup> Since, then, thou art employed in defending sinners, who place themselves under thy protection, I fly to thee, and address thee in the language of one of thy most devoted servants, St. Thomas of Villanova: O loving advocate, exercise thy office in my behalf; undertake my defence.<sup>2</sup> It is true that I have been a rebel to thy beloved Son; but the evil is committed: save me, then, from the dreadful consequence of my rebellion. If thou tell thy divine Son that thou hast taken me under thy protection, I shall be pardoned and saved.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O my Mother, my dear Mother, save me.  
*The usual prayer,* page 125.

### THIRTIETH VISIT.

#### To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ, etc.,* page 123.

*Why hidest Thou Thy face?*<sup>3</sup> Job feared when he saw that God hid his face: but to know that Jesus Christ veils his majesty in the Most Blessed Sacrament should not inspire us with fear, but rather with greater love and confidence; since it is precisely to increase our confidence, and with greater evidence to manifest his love, that he remains on our altars concealed under the appearance of bread. Novarinus says "that whilst God hides his face in this Sacrament, he discloses his love."<sup>4</sup> And who would ever dare approach him with confidence,

<sup>1</sup> "Advocata omnium iniquorum ad eam confugientium."—*De Laud. V. M.* l. 2, a. 23.

<sup>2</sup> "Eja ergo, Advocata nostra! officium tuum imple."—*In Nat. B. V. conc.* 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Cur faciem tuam abscondis?"—*Job*, xiii. 24.

<sup>4</sup> "Dum Deus in hoc Sacramento faciem suam abscondit, amorem suum detegit."

---

\* See the Twenty-first Visit, page 176.

and lay bare before him his affections and desires, did this King of heaven appear on our altars in the splendor of his glory?

Ah, my Jesus! what loving invention was this of the Most Blessed Sacrament, to hide Thyself under the appearance of bread, in order to make Thyself loved and that Thou mightest be found on earth by all who desire Thee! The prophet was right in saying that men should speak and raise their voices throughout the world, in order to make known to all men to what an excess the inventions of the love of our good God go for us: *Make His works known among the people.*<sup>1</sup> O most loving Heart of my Jesus, worthy to possess the hearts of all creatures,—Heart all and ever full of flames of most pure love! O consuming fire, consume me all, and give me a new life of love and grace! Unite me to Thyself in such a way that I may never more be separated from Thee. O Heart open to be the refuge of souls, receive me! O Heart, which on the cross was so agonized for the sins of the world, give me true sorrow for my sins! I know that in this Sacrament Thou preservest the same sentiments of love for me which Thou hadst for me when dying on Calvary; and therefore Thou hast an ardent desire to unite me wholly to Thyself. And is it possible that I should any longer resist yielding up my entire self to Thy love and to Thy desire? Ah, by Thy merits, my beloved Jesus, be pleased Thyself to wound me, to bind me, to force me, to unite me in all things to Thy Heart. I am now determined by Thy grace to give Thee all the pleasure that I possibly can, by trampling under foot all human respect, inclinations, repugnances, all my tastes and conveniences, which may prevent me from entirely pleasing Thee. Do Thou, my Lord, so help me, that I may execute this determination in such

<sup>1</sup> “Notas facite in populis adinventiones ejus.”—*Isa.* xii. 4.

a way, that henceforward all my works, opinions, and affections, may be all in conformity with Thy good pleasure. O love of God, do Thou drive all other loves from my heart ! O Mary, my hope, thou art all-powerful with God, obtain me the grace to be a faithful servant of the pure love of Jesus until death. Amen, amen. So I hope : so may it be in time and in eternity !

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Who shall separate me from the love of Christ !<sup>1</sup>

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

St. Bernard affirms, that the love of Mary towards us cannot be greater or more powerful than it is ; hence by her affection she is always abundant in her compassion for us, and by her power she is plentiful in the relief she affords us : “The most powerful and compassionate charity of the Mother of God abounds in tender compassion, and in kind relief : she is equally rich in both.”<sup>2</sup>

So that, my most pure Queen, thou art rich in power, and rich in compassion ; thou art able to save, and desirest to save all. I therefore beseech thee, now and always, in the words of the devout Blossius, saying : “O Lady ! protect me in my combats, and confirm me when I am wavering.”<sup>3</sup> O most holy Mary, in this great battle in which I am now engaged with hell, do thou always help me ; but when thou seest me wavering and likely to fall, O my Lady ! do thou then extend thy hand with greater promptitude, and sustain me with greater vigor. O God ! how many temptations have I

<sup>1</sup> “Quis me separabit a charitate Christi ?”—*Rom.* viii. 35.

<sup>2</sup> “Potentissima et piissima charitas Dei Matris, et affectu compatiendi, et subveniendi abundat effectu : æque locuples in utroque.”—*In Assumpt.* s. 4.

<sup>3</sup> “O Domina ! me pugnantem protege, me vacillantem confirma.”—*Par. an.* p. 2. c. 4.

still to overcome before my death ! Mary, my hope, my refuge, my strength, do thou protect me, and never allow me to lose the grace of God. And on my part I resolve always and instantly to have recourse to thee in all temptations, saying :

*Ejaculatory prayer.* Help me, Mary ! Mary, help me !

[From the Naples Edition.]

O Mary, we are taught by thy servant St. Bonaventure to regard thee as *the Mother of orphans*.<sup>1</sup> Those unfortunate sinners, who have lost God, their Father, are orphans indeed. I fly then to thee, O merciful Mother : I have by my sins lost my Father ; all my hope rests in thee, who still remainest as my Mother. I feel fresh confidence arise within me when I hear Innocent III. ask, Who has ever called on Mary without being heard ?<sup>2</sup> Who was ever lost that had sincere recourse to her ? I fly, therefore, to thy holy protection ; have compassion on me ; help me, and do not forsake me.\*

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mother of my God, augment daily my confidence in thee.

*The usual prayer*, page 125.

### THIRTY-FIRST VISIT.

To the Blessed Sacrament.

*My Lord Jesus Christ*, page 123.

Oh, how beautiful a sight was it to behold our sweet Redeemer on that day when, fatigued by his journey, he sat down, all engaging and loving, beside the well to await the Samaritan woman, that he might convert and

<sup>1</sup> "Mater orphanorum."—*Psalt. min. B. V.*

<sup>2</sup> "Quis invocavit eam, et non est exauditus ab ipsa?"—*De Ass. B. V. s. 2.*

---

\* See the Twenty-third Visit, page 181.



save her ! *Jesus, therefore, sat thus on the well.*<sup>1</sup> It is precisely thus that this same Lord seems sweetly to dwell with us all the day long, having come down from heaven upon our altars as upon so many fountains of graces, where he awaits and invites souls to keep him company, at least for a while, that he may thus draw them to his perfect love. From every altar on which Jesus remains in the Most Holy Sacrament he seems to speak and address all, saying : O men ! why do you fly my presence ? Why do you not come and draw near to me, who love you so much, and who remain thus annihilated for your sake ? Why do you fear ? I am not now come on earth to judge ; but I have hid myself in this Sacrament of love only to do good, and to save all who have recourse to me : *I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.*<sup>2</sup>

Let us, then, understand, that as Jesus Christ in heaven is *always living to make intercession for us*,<sup>3</sup> so in the Sacrament of the Altar he is continually, both night and day, exercising the compassionate office of our Advocate ; offering himself as a victim for us to the Eternal Father, thus to obtain for us his mercies and innumerable graces. Therefore the devout Thomas à Kempis says, that we ought to approach and converse with Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament without the fear of chastisement, and unrestrained, as to a beloved friend, “as one who loves speaks to his beloved, as a friend to a friend.”<sup>4</sup>

Since, then, Thou thus givest me permission, let me, O my hidden King and Lord, now open my heart to Thee with confidence, and say : O my Jesus ! O enamoured

<sup>1</sup> “Jesus ergo, fatigatus ex itinere, sedebat sic supra fontem.”—*John*, iv. 6.

<sup>2</sup> “Non veni ut judicem mundum, sed ut salvificem mundum.”—*John*, xii. 47.

<sup>3</sup> “Semper vivens ad interpellandum pro nobis.”—*Heb.* vii. 25.

<sup>4</sup> “Sicut solet dilectus ad dilectum loqui, et amicus cum amico convivari.”—*Imit. Chr.* B. 4, c. 13.

of souls, I well know the injustice that men do Thee. Thou lovest them, and art not beloved by them; Thou doest good, and receivest contempt; Thou desirest to make them hear Thy voice, and they give Thee no ear; Thou offerest them Thy graces, and they refuse them. Ah, my Jesus! and is it true that I also at one time joined these ungrateful creatures in thus displeasing Thee? O God, it is but too true? But I am determined to amend, and to endeavor during the time that I still have to live, to make up for the displeasure which I have caused Thee, by doing all that I possibly can to please Thee and to give Thee pleasure. Tell me, Lord, what Thou askest of me, I will execute all without any reserve: make it known to me by the means of holy obedience, and I hope to do it. My God, I now resolutely promise Thee that I will never, from this day forward, omit anything which I know to be, rather than another, pleasing to Thee, even were I thereby to lose all—parents, friends, esteem, health, and even life. Let all perish, provided Thou art pleased. Happy is that loss, when all is lost and sacrificed to satisfy Thy heart, O God of my soul! I love Thee, O sovereign good, worthy of love above every other good; and in loving Thee I unite my poor heart to all the hearts with which the seraphim love Thee; I unite it to the heart of Mary, to the Heart of Jesus. I love Thee with my entire self; Thee alone will I love, and Thee alone will I always love.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* My God, my God! I am Thine, and Thou art mine!

*Spiritual Communion*, page 124.

#### Visit to the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Blessed Amadeus says that our most blessed Queen, Mary, is always in the divine presence, acting as our ad-

vocate, and interposing with God by her prayers, which are most powerful: "The most blessed Virgin stands before the face of her Creator, interceding with her most powerful prayers for us. For," he adds, "she well sees our miseries and our dangers, and the most clement and sweet Lady compassionates and succors us with a mother's love."<sup>1</sup>

Thou, my advocate and my most loving Mother, thou even now seest the miseries of my soul; thou seest my dangers, and prayest for me. Pray, pray, and cease not to pray, until thou seest me saved and thanking thee in heaven. The devout Blossius tells me that thou, O most sweet Mary, art, after Jesus, the certain salvation of those who are thy faithful servants.<sup>2</sup> Ah! this grace I now ask thee: grant me the happy lot of being thy faithful servant until death; that after death I may go to bless thee in heaven, where I shall be certain never more, as long as God is God, to leave thy sacred feet.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, my Mother, grant that I may be ever thine!

[From the Naples Edition.]

O Mary, thou art the tower of David, and therefore art able to defend those who take refuge under thee. Protect all who are engaged in the contest. I experience continual assaults from my enemies, who are striving to deprive me of the grace of God, and to withdraw me from thy protection. But thou art the fortress and the bulwark of our hope; thou dost not disdain to fight in behalf of those who trust in thee. O Mary, defend me, then, against all my enemies, and fight my battles for me, because I rely with confidence on thee.\*

<sup>1</sup> "Adstat Beatissima Virgo vultui Conditoris, prece potentissima semper interpellans pro nobis. Videt enim nostra discrimina, nostrique clemens ac dulcis Domina materno affectu miseretur."—*De Laud. B. V. hom.* 8.

<sup>2</sup> "Tu post Unigenium tuum certa fidelium salus."—*Par. an.* p. 2, c. 4.

---

\* See the Twenty-seventh Visit, page 192.

*Ejaculatory prayer.* O Mary, thou art my protectress.

*The usual prayer, page 125.*

My Good, my God, all mine Thou art;  
Myself I give Thee, all my heart;  
For Thee, and Thee alone, I sigh.

*What have I in heaven? and besides Thee, what do I desire upon earth? Thou art the God of my heart, and the God that is my portion forever.*<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Quid enim mihi est in cœlo? et a Te quid volui super terram? Deus cordis mei, et pars mea Deus in æternum."—*Ps.* lxxii. 25, 26.

## HYMNS.

## I.

**Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament enclosed in the Tabernacle.**

O FLOWERS, O happy flowers, which day and night  
So near to my own Jesus silent stay,  
And never leave him, till before his sight  
At length your life in fragrance fades away!  
Could I, too, always make my dwelling-place  
In that dear spot to which your charms you lend.  
Oh, what a blessed lot were mine ! what grace,  
Close to my truest Life, my life to end !

O lights ! O happy lights, which burn away,  
The presence of our Jesus to proclaim ;  
Ah ! could I see my heart become one day  
Like you, all fire of love and burning flame,  
Then, as you waste away, so would I die,  
Like you, consumed with fire of love divine ;  
Oh ! how I envy you ! How blest were I  
Could I but change your happy lot with mine !

O sacred pyx ! thou art more favored still,  
For thou my love concealed dost here enclose ;  
What nobler, happier part could creature fill ?  
In thee thy very God deigns to repose !  
Ah ! were thy office but for one brief day  
On this my poor and frozen breast bestow'd,  
Then would my heart be melted all away,  
Of love and fire become the blest abode !

But ah, sweet flowers, bright lights, and pyx so blest !  
 Far, far more fortunate than you am I,  
 When my Belovèd comes within my breast,  
 All loving like a tender lamb to lie ;  
 And I, poor worm, in this frail host receive  
 My good, my all, the God of Majesty !  
 Why then not burn ? my life why then not give,  
 Since here my treasure gives himself to me ?

Away, like fluttering moth around the light,  
 My raptured soul, about thy Jesus fly,  
 Inflamed with faith and love ; and at the sight  
 Of thy belovèd ever burn and sigh !  
 And when the hour arrives, and he is thine  
 Whose very sight make Paradise above,  
 Oh, press him to thy heart with fire divine,  
 And say thou wilt but love, love, only love !

## II.

**The Visit to Jesus on the Altar.**

WHEN the loving Shepherd,  
 Ere he left the earth,  
 Shed, to pay our ransom,  
 Blood of priceless worth,—  
 These his lambs so cherish'd,  
 Purchased for his own,  
 He would not abandon  
 In the world alone.

Ere he makes us partners  
 Of his realm on high,  
 Happy and immortal  
 With him in the sky,—  
 Love immense, stupendous,  
 Makes him here below  
 Partner of our exile  
 In this world of woe.



Lest one heart that loves him  
E'er should sigh with pain,  
Pining for his presence,  
Seeking him in vain,—  
He on earth would tarry  
Near to every one,  
That each heart might find him  
On his altar-throne.

Yes, upon that altar,  
Captive in his cell,  
Burning with affection,  
Jesus deigns to dwell.  
Thence he seeks to kindle  
With his heavenly fires  
Every heart that truly  
To his love aspires.

How that fire enkindles,  
Piercing like a dart,  
He alone is witness  
Who has felt its smart ;  
Though the heart approaches  
Cold as falling snow,  
Soon it melts and kindles  
From the furnace glow.

Say, ye souls enamour'd,  
What blest flames you feel :  
Say, what fiery arrows  
Pierce you as you kneel,  
When you come to worship  
Where your Jesus lies,  
All your love awaiting,  
Hid from mortal eyes.

Jesus, food of angels !  
Monarch of the heart,  
Oh, that I could never  
From Thy face depart !

Yes, Thou ever dwellest  
Here for love of me,  
Hidden Thou remainest,  
God of Majesty !

Soon I hope to see Thee,  
And enjoy Thy love,  
Face to face, sweet Jesus,  
In Thy heaven above.  
But on earth an exile  
My delight shall be,  
Ever to be near Thee,  
Veiled for love of me.

## Meditations for the Octave of Corpus Christi.

### MEDITATION I.

#### The Love of Jesus in the Most Holy Sacrament.

OUR most loving Redeemer, knowing that he must leave this earth and return to his Father as soon as he should have accomplished the work of our redemption by his death, and seeing that the hour of his death was now come,—*Jesus knowing that His hour was come, that He should pass out of this world unto the Father,*<sup>1</sup>—would not leave us alone in this valley of tears, and therefore what did he do? He instituted the Most Holy Sacrament of the Eucharist, in which he left us his whole self. “No tongue,” said St. Peter of Alcantara, “is able to declare the greatness of the love that Jesus bears to every soul: and therefore this Spouse, when he would leave this earth, in order that his absence might not cause us to forget him, left us as a memorial this Blessed Sacrament, in which he himself remained; for he would not that there should be any other pledge to keep alive our remembrance of him than he himself.” Jesus, therefore, would not be separated from us by his death; but he instituted this Sacrament of love in order to be with us even to the end of the world: *Behold I am with you even to the consummation of the world.*<sup>2</sup> Behold him, then, as faith teaches us,—behold him on so many altars shut up as in so many prisons of love, in order that he may be found by every one that

<sup>1</sup> “Sciens Jesus quia venit hora ejus, ut transeat ex hoc mundo ad Patrem.”—*John*, xiii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> “Ecce ego vobiscum sum omnibus diebus, usque ad consummationem sæculi.”—*Matt.* xxviii. 20.

seeks him. But, O Lord, says St. Bernard, this does not become Thy majesty. Jesus Christ answers, It is enough that it becomes my love.

They feel great tenderness and devotion who go to Jerusalem and visit the cave where the Incarnate Word was born, the hall where he was scourged, the hill of Calvary on which he died, and the sepulchre where he was buried; but how much greater ought our tenderness to be when we visit an altar on which Jesus remains in the Most Holy Sacrament! The Ven. Father John Avila used to say, that of all sanctuaries there is not one to be found more excellent and devout than a church where Jesus is sacramentally present.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my beloved Jesus, O God, who hast loved men with so exceeding love! what more canst Thou do to make Thyself loved by these ungrateful men? Oh, if men loved Thee, all the churches would be continually filled with people prostrate on the ground adoring and thanking Thee, and burning with love for Thee at seeing Thee with the eyes of faith hidden in a tabernacle. But no; men, forgetful of Thee and of Thy love, are ready enough to court a man from whom they hope for some miserable advantage, while they leave Thee, O my Lord, abandoned and alone. Oh that I could by my devotion make reparation for such ingratitude! I am sorry that I also have hitherto been, like them, careless and ungrateful. But for the future I will not be so any longer, and I will devote myself to Thy service as much as I possibly can. Do Thou inflame me with Thy holy love, so that from this day forth I may live only to love and to please Thee. Thou deservest the love of all hearts. If at one time I have despised Thee, I now desire nothing but to love Thee. O my Jesus, Thou art my love and my only good, "my God and my all."<sup>1</sup>

Most holy Virgin Mary, obtain for me, I pray thee, a great love for the Most Holy Sacrament.

<sup>1</sup> "Deus meus, et omnia!"

## MEDITATION II.

Jesus remains on the Altar, that Every One may be able to find Him.

St. Teresa said, that in this world it is impossible for all subjects to speak to the king. As for the poor, the most they can hope for is, to speak with him by means of some third person. But to speak with Thee, O King of Heaven, there is no need of third persons; for every one that wishes can find Thee in the Most Holy Sacrament, and can speak to Thee at his pleasure and without restraint. For this reason, said the same saint, Jesus Christ has concealed his majesty in the Sacrament, under the appearance of bread, in order to give us more confidence, and to take away from us all fear of approaching him.

Oh, how Jesus seems continually to exclaim from the altar: *Come to Me, all you that labor and are burdened, and I will refresh you.*<sup>1</sup> Come, he says, come, ye poor: come, ye infirm; come, ye afflicted; come, ye just and ye sinners, and you shall find in me a remedy for all your losses and afflictions: such is the desire of Jesus Christ; to console every one who has recourse to him, he remains day and night on our altars, that he may be found by all, and that he may bestow favors upon all. Hence the saints experienced in this world such pleasure in remaining in the presence of Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament, that days and nights appeared to them as moments. The Countess of Feria having become a nun of the Order of St. Clare, was never wearied of remaining in the choir in sight of the tabernacle: being asked one day what she was doing so long before the Most Holy Sacrament, she answered with surprise: "What do I do before the

<sup>1</sup> "Venite ad me omnes, qui laboratis et onerati estis, et ego reficiam vos."—*Matt.* xi. 28.

Blessed Sacrament? what do I do? I return thanks, I love and I pray!" St. Philip Neri being in the presence of the Blessed Sacrament, exclaimed: "Behold my love, behold all my love?" Ah, if Jesus were thus our whole love, days and nights in his presence would appear also to us as moments.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my Jesus, from this day forward I also hope to say always to Thee, when I come to visit Thee on Thy altars: "Behold my love, behold all my love!" Yes, my beloved Redeemer, I will love none other but Thee; I desire that Thou shouldst be the only love of my soul. I seem to die of sorrow when I think that hitherto I have loved creatures and my own pleasures more than Thee, and have turned my back upon Thee, the sovereign good. But Thou wouldst not have me lost, and therefore hast Thou borne with me with so much patience; and instead of chastising me, Thou hast pierced my heart with so many darts of love, that I could no longer resist Thy kindness, but have given myself up to Thee; I see that Thou wouldst have me to be entirely Thine. But since Thou wouldst have it to be so, do Thou make me so Thyself; for it is Thou who must do it. Do Thou detach my heart from all earthly affections and from myself, and grant that I may seek none other but Thee, that I may think of none but Thee, that I may speak of none but Thee, and that I may only desire and sigh to burn with love for Thee, and to live and die for Thee alone. O love of my Jesus, come and occupy my whole heart, and expel from it all other love but that of God! I love Thee, O Jesus in the Sacrament, I love Thee, my treasure, my love, my all.

O Mary, my hope, pray for me, and make me belong entirely to Jesus.

MEDITATION III.

**The Great Gift which Jesus has made us by Giving Himself to us in the Blessed Sacrament.**

The love of Jesus Christ was not satisfied with sacrificing for us his divine life in the midst of a sea of ignominies and torments, in order to prove to us the affection



that he bore us; but besides all this, in order to oblige us to love him more, on the night before his death he would leave us his whole self as our food in the Holy Eucharist. God is omnipotent; but after he has given himself to a soul in this Sacrament of love, he has nothing more to give her. The Council of Trent says, that Jesus, in giving himself to us in the Holy Communion, pours forth, as it were, all the riches of his infinite love in this gift: "He has, as it were, poured forth the treasures of his love towards man."<sup>1</sup> How would that vassal esteem himself honored, writes St. Francis de Sales, were his prince, whilst he was at table, to send him a portion of his own dish; and what would it be if this portion were a piece torn out from his own arm? Jesus in the Holy Communion gives us for our food, not only a portion of his own meal and of his most sacred flesh, but all his body: *Take and eat, this is My Body.*<sup>2</sup> And together with his body he gives us also his soul and his divinity; so that, as St. Chrysostom says, our Lord, in giving himself to us in the Blessed Sacrament, gives us all that he has, and nothing more remains for him to give us: "He gave all to Thee, and left nothing for himself." O wonderful prodigy of divine love, that God, who is the Lord of all, makes himself entirely ours!

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my dear Jesus, what more canst Thou do to make us love Thee? Oh, make us understand what an excess of love Thou hast shown us in reducing Thyself to food, in order to unite Thyself thus to us poor sinners! Thou, therefore, my dear Redeemer, hast had so much affection for me, that Thou hast not refused to give Thyself again and again entirely for me in Holy Communion. And yet I have had the courage to drive Thee so many times away from my soul! But Thou canst not despise

<sup>1</sup> "Divitias divini sui erga homines amoris velut effudit."—*Sess. xiii. c. 2.*

<sup>2</sup> "Accipite et comedite; hoc est corpus meum."—*Matt. xxvi. 26.*

an humble and a contrite heart. Thou didst become man for my sake, Thou didst die for me, Thou didst even go so far as to become my food; and what more can there remain for Thee to do to gain my love? Oh, that I could die with grief every time that I remember to have thus despised Thy grace! I repent, O my love, with my whole heart for having offended Thee. I love Thee, O infinite goodness! I love Thee, O infinite love! I desire nothing but to love Thee, and I fear nothing but to live without Thy love. My beloved Jesus, do not refuse to come for the future into my soul. Come, because I would rather die a thousand times than drive Thee away again, and I will do all I can to please Thee. Come and inflame my whole soul with Thy love. Grant that I may forget everything, to think only of Thee, and to aspire to Thee alone, my sovereign and my only good.

O Mary, my Mother, pray for me; and by thy prayers make me grateful for all the love of Jesus towards me.

#### MEDITATION IV.

##### **The Great Love which Jesus Christ has shown us in the Blessed Sacrament.**

*Jesus, knowing that His hour was come, that He should pass out of this world to the Father: having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end.*<sup>1</sup> Jesus, knowing that the hour of his death was come, desired to leave us, before he died, the greatest pledge of his affection that he could give us; and this was the gift of the Most Holy Sacrament: *He loved them to the end*; which St. Chrysostom explains, "He loved them with extreme love." He loved men with the greatest love with which he could love them, by giving them his whole self. But at what time did Jesus institute this great Sacrament, in which he has left us himself? On the night preceding his death: *The same night in which He was betrayed* (writes the Apos-

<sup>1</sup> "Sciens Jesus quia venit hora ejus, ut transeat ex hoc mundo ad Patrem, cum dilexisset suos, . . . in finem dilexit eos."—*John*, xiii. 1.

tle), *He took bread; and giving thanks, broke and said, Take ye and eat; this is My Body.*<sup>1</sup> At the very time that men were preparing to put him to death, he gave them this last proof of his love. The marks of affection which we receive from our friends at the time of their death remain more deeply impressed on our hearts; for this reason did Jesus bestow on us this gift of the Blessed Sacrament just before his death. With reason, then, did St. Thomas call this gift “a sacrament and pledge of love;”<sup>2</sup> and St. Bernard, “the love of loves;”<sup>3</sup> because in this Sacrament Jesus Christ united and accomplished all the other acts of love which he had shown us. Hence St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi called the day on which Jesus instituted this Sacrament “the day of love.”

*Affections and Prayers.*

O infinite love of Jesus, worthy of being loved with a like infinite love! Thou, my Lord, dost love men so much; how is it, then, that men love Thee so little in return? What more couldst Thou do to make Thyself loved by them? O my Jesus, Thou art so amiable and so loving; make Thyself, I pray Thee, known; make Thyself loved. When shall I love Thee as Thou hast love me? Oh, discover to me more and more the greatness of Thy mercy, in order that I may burn ever more and more with Thy love, and always seek to please Thee. O beloved one of my soul, would that I had always loved Thee! Alas, there was a time when I not only did not love Thee, but despised Thy grace and Thy love! I am consoled by the sorrow which I feel for it, and I hope for pardon through Thy promise to forgive him that repents of his sins. To Thee, O my Saviour, do I turn all my affections; help me, through the merits of Thy Passion, to love Thee with my whole strength. Oh, that I could die for Thee, as Thou didst die for me!

O Mary, my Mother, do thou obtain for me the grace henceforth to love God alone.

<sup>1</sup> “In qua nocte tradebatur, accepit panem, et gratias agens fregit, et dixit: Accipite et manducate; hoc est corpus meum.”—I Cor. xi. 23.

<sup>2</sup> “Sacramentum charitatis, summæ charitatis pignus.”

<sup>3</sup> “Amor amorum.”

## MEDITATION V.

**The Union of the Soul with Jesus in the Holy Communion.**

St. Dionysius the Areopagite says that the principal effect of love is to tend to union. For this very purpose did Jesus institute the Holy Communion, that he might unite himself entirely to our souls. He had given himself to us as our master, our example, and our victim; it only remained for him to give himself to us as our food, that he might become one with us; as food becomes one with the person that eats it. This he did by instituting this Sacrament of love: "The last degree of love" (says St. Bernardine of Sienna) "is when he gave himself to us to be our food; because he gave himself to be united with us in every way, as food and he who takes it are mutually united."<sup>1</sup>

So that Jesus Christ was not satisfied with uniting himself to our human nature; but he would, by this Sacrament, find a way of uniting himself also to each one of us, so as to make himself wholly one with him who receives him. Hence St. Francis de Sales writes: "In no other action can our Saviour be considered more tender or more loving than in this, in which he, as it were, annihilates himself, and reduces himself to food, that he may penetrate our souls, and unite himself to the hearts of his faithful."<sup>2</sup> Because Jesus loved us ardently, he desired to unite himself to us in the Holy Eucharist, in order that we might become the same thing with him; thus writes St. Chrysostom: "He mingled himself with us, that we might be one; for this belongs to those who love greatly."<sup>3</sup> Thou wouldst, in short,

<sup>1</sup> "Ultimus gradus amoris est, cum se dedit nobis in cibum; quia dedit se nobis ad omnimodam unionem, sicut cibus et cibans invicem uniuntur."—T. ii. s. 54, a. I, c. I.

<sup>2</sup> *Introd.* p. 2, *ch.* 21.

<sup>3</sup> "Semetipsum nobis immiscuit, ut unum quid simus; ardentem enim amantium hoc est."—*Ad pop. Ant. hom.* 61.

O God of love, that our hearts and Thine should form but one heart. "Thou wouldst that we should have one heart with Thee," said St. Laurence Justinian.<sup>1</sup>

And Jesus himself said this: *He that eateth My flesh abideth in Me, and I in him.*<sup>2</sup> He, therefore, that communicates, abides in Jesus, and Jesus abides in him; and this union is not of mere affection, but it is a true and real union. As two wax tapers, when melted, says St. Cyril of Alexandria,<sup>3</sup> unite themselves into one, so he that communicates becomes one with Jesus Christ. Let us, therefore, imagine, when we communicate, that Jesus Christ says to us that which he said one day to his beloved servant, Margaret of Ypres: "Behold, O my daughter, the beautiful union between me and thee; come, then, love me, and let us remain constantly united in love, and never more be separated."

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

O my Jesus, this is what I seek of Thee, and what I will always seek for from Thee in the Holy Communion: "Let us be always united, and never more be separated." I know that Thou wilt not separate Thyself from me, if I do not first separate myself from Thee. But this is my fear, lest I should in future separate myself from Thee by sin, as I have done in times past. O my blessed Redeemer, permit it not: "Suffer me not to be separated from Thee." As long as I am alive, I am in danger of this; oh, through the merits of Thy death, I beseech Thee let me die, rather than repeat this great injury against Thee. I repeat it, and pray Thee to grant me Thy grace always to repeat: "Suffer me not to be separated from Thee; suffer me not to be separated from Thee."<sup>4</sup> O God of my soul, I love Thee; I love Thee, and will always love Thee, and will love Thee alone. I protest before heaven and earth that I desire

<sup>1</sup> "Voluisti ut tecum unum cor haberemus."—*De Inc. div. am.* c. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem . . . , in me manet, et ego in illo."—*John*, vi. 57.

<sup>3</sup> *In Jo.* l. 4, c. 17.

<sup>4</sup> "Ne permittas me separari a te!"

Thee alone, and nothing but Thee. O my Jesus, hear me; I desire Thee alone, and nothing but Thee.

O Mary, Mother of mercy, pray for me now; and obtain for me the grace never more to separate myself from Jesus, and to love only Jesus.

#### MEDITATION VI.

#### **The Desire which Jesus Christ has to Unite Himself to us in the Holy Communion.**

*Jesus knowing that His hour was come.*<sup>1</sup> This hour, which Jesus called "His hour," was the hour of that night in which his Passion was to begin. But why did he call so sad an hour his hour? Because this was the hour for which he had sighed during his whole life, having determined to leave us in this night the Holy Communion, by which he desired to unite himself entirely to the souls whom he loved, and for whom he was soon to give his blood and his life. Behold how he spoke on that night to his disciples: *With desire have I desired to eat this Pasch with you.*<sup>2</sup> By which words he would express to us the desire and anxiety that he had to unite himself to us in this Sacrament of love. *With desire have I desired*; these words, said St. Laurence Justinian, were words which came from the Heart of Jesus, which was burning with infinite love: "This is the voice of the most ardent charity."<sup>3</sup>

Now the same flame which burnt then in the Heart of Jesus burns there at present; and he gives the same invitation to all of us to-day to receive him as he did then to his disciples. *Take ye and eat; this is My Body.*<sup>4</sup> And to allure us to receive him with affection, he promises

<sup>1</sup> "Sciens Jesus quia venit hora ejus."—*John*, xiii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> "Desiderio desideravi hoc pascha manducare vobiscum."—*Luke*, xxii. 15.

<sup>3</sup> "Flagrantissimæ charitatis est vox hæc."—*De Tr. Chr. Ag.* c. 2.

<sup>4</sup> "Accipite et comedite; hoc est corpus meum."—*Matt.* xxvi. 26.



Paradise to us: *He that eateth My flesh hath everlasting life.*<sup>1</sup> And if we refuse to receive him, he threatens us with death: *Except you eat the flesh of the Son of man, you shall not have life in you.*<sup>2</sup>

These invitations, promises, and threats, all arise from the desire of Jesus Christ to unite himself to us in Holy Communion, through the love that he bears us. "There is not a bee," said our Lord to St. Mechtilde, "which seeks the honey out of the flowers with such eagerness of delight, as I have to enter into the souls that desire me."<sup>3</sup> Jesus, because he loves us, desires to be loved by us; and because he desires us he will have us desire him. "God thirsts to be thirsted after,"<sup>4</sup> writes St. Gregory. Blessed is that soul that approaches Holy Communion with a great desire to be united to Jesus Christ.

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

My adorable Jesus, Thou canst not give us greater proofs of Thy love, to show us how much Thou lovest us. Thou hast given Thy life for us; Thou hast bequeathed Thyself to us in the Holy Sacrament, in order that we may come and nourish ourselves with Thy flesh; and Thou art most anxious that we should receive Thee. How, then, can we behold all these proofs of Thy love, and not burn with love for Thee? Begone, ye earthly affections, begone from my heart; it is you that hinder me from burning with love for Jesus as he burns with love for me. And what other pledges of Thy love can I expect, O my Redeemer, than those which Thou hast already given me? Thou hast sacrificed Thy whole life for the love of me; Thou hast embraced for my sake a most bitter and infamous death; Thou hast for my sake reduced Thyself almost to annihilation, by becoming food in the Holy Eucharist in order to give Thyself

<sup>1</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem . . . , habet vitam æternam."—*John*, vi. 55.

<sup>2</sup> "Nisi manducaveritis carnem Filii hominis . . . , non habebitis vitam in vobis."—*Ibid.* 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Spir. Grat.* l. 2, c. 3.

<sup>4</sup> "Sitit sitiri Deus."—*Tetr. Sent.* 37.

entirely to us. O Lord, let me no longer live ungrateful for such great goodness. I thank Thee for having given me time to bewail the offences I have committed against Thee, and to love Thee during the days that remain to me in this life. I repent, O sovereign good, for having hitherto despised Thy love. I love Thee, O infinite goodness! I love Thee, O infinite treasure! I love Thee, O infinite love who art worthy of infinite love! Oh, help me, my Jesus, to discard from my heart all affections that are not directed to Thee; so that from this day forward I may not desire, nor seek, nor love any other but Thee. My beloved Lord, grant that I may always find Thee, grant that I may always love Thee. Do Thou take possession of my whole will, in order that I may never desire anything but what is pleasing to Thee. My God, my God, whom shall I love, if I love not Thee, who art the supreme good? I do indeed desire Thee, and nothing more. O Mary, my Mother, take my heart into thy keeping, and fill it with pure love for Jesus Christ.

#### MEDITATION VII.

##### **Holy Communion Obtains for us Perseverance in Divine Grace.**

When Jesus comes to the soul in Holy Communion, he brings to it every grace, and specially the grace of holy perseverance. This is the principal effect of the Most Holy Sacrament of the Altar, to nourish the soul that receives it with this food of life, and to give it great strength to advance unto perfection, and to resist those enemies who desire our death. Hence Jesus calls himself in this Sacrament heavenly bread: *I am the living Bread which came down from heaven; if any man eat of this Bread, he shall live forever.*<sup>1</sup> Even as earthly bread sustains the life of the body, so this heavenly bread sustains the life of the soul, by making it persevere in the grace of God.

Therefore the Council of Trent teaches that Holy Communion is that remedy which delivers us from daily

<sup>1</sup> "Ego sum panis vivus, qui de cœlo descendi; si quis manducaverit ex hoc pane, vivet in æternum."—*John*, vi. 51.

faults and preserves us from mortal sins.<sup>1</sup> Innocent III. writes<sup>2</sup> that Jesus Christ by his Passion delivers us from sins committed, and by the Holy Eucharist from sins which we might commit. Therefore St. Bonaventure says that sinners must not keep away from Communion because they have been sinners; on the contrary, for this very reason they ought to receive it more frequently; because "the more infirm a person feels himself, the more he is in want of a physician."<sup>3</sup>

*Affections and Prayers.*

Miserable sinner that I am, O Lord, wherefore do I lament my weakness when I consider my many falls from grace? How was it possible that I should have resisted the assaults of the devil while I stayed away from Thee, who art my strength? If I had oftener approached the Holy Communion, I should not have been so often overcome by my enemies. But in future it shall not be so: *In Thee, O Lord, have I hoped; I shall not be confounded forever.*<sup>4</sup> No, I will no longer rely on my own resolution. Thou alone art my hope, O my Jesus; Thou wilt give me strength, that I may no more fall into sin. I am weak; but Thou, by Holy Communion, wilt make me strong against every temptation: *I can do all things in Him who strengtheneth me.*<sup>5</sup> Forgive me, O my Jesus, all the offences I have committed against Thee, of which I repent with my whole heart. I resolve rather to die than ever to offend Thee again; and I trust, in Thy Passion, that Thou wilt give me Thy help to persevere in Thy grace to the end of my life: *In Thee, O Lord, have I hoped; I shall not be confounded forever.*

And with St. Bonaventure I will say the same to thee, O Mary, my Mother: "In thee, O Lady, have I hoped; I shall not be confounded forever."

<sup>1</sup> "Antidotum, quo liberemur a culpis quotidianis, et a peccatis mortalibus præservemur."—*Sess. xiii. c. 2.*

<sup>2</sup> *De Alt. Myst.* l. 4, c. 44.

<sup>3</sup> "Tanto magis æger necesse habet requirere medicum, quanto magis senserit se ægrotum.—*De Prof. rel. l. 2, c. 77.*

<sup>4</sup> "In te, Domine, speravi; non confundar in æternum."—*Ps. xxx. 2.*

<sup>5</sup> "Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat."—*Phil. iv. 13.*

## MEDITATION VIII.

**Preparation for Communion and Thanksgiving after it.**

Cardinal Bona asks wherefore it happens that so many souls, after so many Communions, make so little advance in the way of God? and he answers: "The fault is not in the food, but in the disposition of him who eats it;"<sup>1</sup> that is to say, in the want of due preparation on the part of the communicant. Fire soon burns dry wood, but not that which is green, because the latter is not fit to burn. The saints derived great profit from their Communions, because they were very careful in their preparation for it.

There are two principal things which we should endeavor to obtain in order to prepare ourselves for Holy Communion.

The first is, detachment from creatures, by driving from our heart everything that is not of God and for God. Although the soul may be in a state of grace, yet if the heart is occupied by earthly affections the more there is of earth in the soul, so much less room will there be for divine love. St. Gertrude once asked our Lord what preparation he required of her for Holy Communion, and Jesus answered her: "I require none other from thee than that thou shouldst come to receive me void of thyself."<sup>2</sup>

The second thing that is necessary in order to reap great fruit from Communion is, the desire to receive Jesus Christ with the view of loving him more. Gerson<sup>3</sup> says that at this banquet none are satiated but those who feel great hunger. Hence St. Francis de Sales

<sup>1</sup> "Defectus non in cibo est, sed in edentis dispositione."—*De Sacr. M. c.* 6, § 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Insin.* l. 4, c. 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Sup. Magn. tr.* 9, p. I.

writes, that the principal intention of a soul in receiving Communion should be to advance in the love of God. "He" (says the saint) "should be received for love, who out of pure love alone gives himself to us." <sup>1</sup> And therefore Jesus said to St. Mechtilde: "When thou art going to communicate, desire all the love that any soul ever had for me, and I will receive it according to thy desire, as if it were thine own." <sup>2</sup>

It is also necessary to make a thanksgiving after Communion. There is no prayer more dear to God than that which is made after Communion. We must occupy this time in acts of love and prayers. The devout acts of love which we then make have greater merit in the sight of God than those which we make at other times, because they are then animated by the presence of Jesus Christ, who is united to our souls. And as to prayers, St. Teresa says that Jesus, after Communion, remains in the soul as on a throne of grace, and says to it: *What wilt thou that I should do for thee?* <sup>3</sup> Soul, I am come from heaven on purpose to bestow graces upon thee; ask me what thou wilt, and as much as thou wilt, and thou shalt be heard. Oh, what treasures of grace do they lose who pray but a short time to God after Holy Communion!

### *Affections and Prayer*

O God of love, dost Thou, then, so much desire to dispense Thy favors to us, and yet are we so little anxious to obtain them? Oh, what sorrow we shall feel at the hour of death, when we think of this negligence, so pernicious to our souls! O my Lord, forget, I beseech Thee, all that is past; for the future, with Thy help, I will prepare myself better, by endeavoring to detach my affections from everything that prevents me from receiving all those graces which Thou desirest to bestow upon me. And after Communion I will lift up my heart to Thee

<sup>1</sup> *Introd.* p. 2, *ch.* 21.

<sup>2</sup> *Spir. Grat.* l. 3, c. 22.

<sup>3</sup> "Quid tibi vis faciam?"—*Mark*, x. 51.

as much as I can, in order to obtain Thy help that I may advance in Thy love,—oh, grant me grace to accomplish this. O my Jesus, how negligent have I hitherto been in loving Thee! The time which Thou in Thy mercy mayest yet allot to me in this life, is the time to prepare myself for death, and to make amends by my love for the offences I have committed against Thee. I will spend it entirely in lamenting my sins and in loving Thee. I love Thee, my Jesus, my love; I love Thee, my only Good; have pity on me, and do not forsake me.

And thou, O Mary, my hope, do not cease to help me by thy holy intercession!



## Novena to the Sacred Heart of Jesus.\*

### NOTICE ON THE DEVOTION TO THE ADORABLE HEART OF JESUS.

THE devotion of all devotions is love for Jesus Christ, and frequent meditation on the love which this amiable Redeemer has borne and still bears to us.

A devout author laments, and most justly, the sight of so many persons who pay much attention to the practice of various devotions, but neglect this; and of many preachers and confessors, who say a great many things, but speak little of love for Jesus Christ: whereas love for Jesus Christ ought to be the principal, indeed the only, devotion of a Christian; and therefore the only object and care of preachers and confessors towards their hearers and penitents ought to be to recommend to them constantly, and to inflame their hearts with, the love of Jesus Christ. This neglect is the reason why souls make so little progress in virtue, and remain grovelling in the same defects, and even frequently relapse into grievous sins, because they take but little care, and are not sufficiently admonished to acquire the love of Jesus Christ, which is that golden cord which unites and binds the soul to God.

For this sole purpose did the Eternal Word come into this world, to make himself loved: *I am come to cast fire on the earth, and what will I but that it be kindled?*<sup>1</sup> And for this purpose also did the Eternal Father send him into the world, in order that he might make known to us his love, and thus obtain ours in return; and he protests that he will love us in the same proportion as we love Jesus Christ: *For the Father Himself loveth you, because you have loved Me.*<sup>2</sup> Moreover, he

<sup>1</sup> "Ignem veni mittere in terram; et quid volo, nisi ut accendatur?"  
—*Luke*, xii. 49.

<sup>2</sup> "Ipse enim Pater amat vos, quia vos me amastis."—*John*, xvi. 27.

\* This opuscle was written and published in 1758. (Tannoia, B. 2, ch. 46.)

gives us his graces as far as we ask for them in the name of his Son: *If you ask the Father anything in My name, He will give it you.*<sup>1</sup> And he will admit us to the eternal beatitude in so far only as he finds us conformable to the life of Jesus Christ: *For whom he foreknew, He also predestinated to be made conformable to the image of His Son.*<sup>2</sup> But we shall never acquire this conformity, nor even ever desire it, if we are not attentive to meditate upon the love which Jesus Christ has borne to us.

For this same purpose it is related in the life of the Venerable Sister Margaret Alacoque, a nun of the Order of the Visitation, that our Saviour revealed to this his servant his wish that in our times the devotion and feast of his Sacred Heart should be established and propagated in the Church, in order that devout souls should by their adoration and prayer make reparation for the injuries his heart constantly receives from ungrateful men when he is exposed in the Sacrament upon the Altar. It is also related in the life of the same venerable sister, written by the learned Monseigneur Languet, Bishop of Sens, that while this devout virgin was one day praying before the Most Holy Sacrament, Jesus Christ showed her his heart surrounded by thorns, with a cross on the top and in a throne of flames; and then he said thus to her: "Behold the heart that has so much loved men, and has spared nothing for love of them, even to consuming itself to give them pledges of its love, but which receives from the majority of men no other recompense but ingratitude, and insults towards the Sacrament of love; and what grieves me most is, that these hearts are consecrated to me." And then he desired her to use her utmost endeavors in order that a particular feast should be celebrated in honor of his divine heart on the first Friday after the Octave of Corpus Christi. And this for three reasons: 1. In order that the faithful should return thanks to him for the great gift which he has left them in the adorable Eucharist; 2. In order that loving souls should make amends by their prayers and pious affections for the irreverences and insults which he has received and still receives

<sup>1</sup> "Si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis."—*John*, xvi. 23.

<sup>2</sup> "Quos præscivit et prædestinavit conformes fieri imaginis Filii sui."—*Rom.* viii. 29.

from sinners in this Most Holy Sacrament; 3. In order that they might make up also for the honor which he does not receive in so many churches where he is so little adored and revered. And he promised that he would make the riches of his Sacred Heart abound towards those who should render him this honor, both on the day of this feast, and on every other day when they should visit him in the Most Holy Sacrament.

This devotion to the Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ is nothing more than an exercise of love towards this amiable Saviour. But as to the principal object of this devotion, the *spiritual* object is the love with which the heart of Jesus Christ is inflamed towards men, because love is generally attributed to the heart, as we read in many places of Scripture: *My son, give Me thy heart.*<sup>1</sup> *My heart and my flesh have rejoiced in the living God.*<sup>2</sup> *The God of my heart, and the God that is my portion forever.*<sup>3</sup> *The charity of God is poured forth in our hearts by the Holy Ghost who is given to us.*<sup>4</sup> But the *material* or sensible object is the most Sacred Heart of Jesus, not taken separately by itself, but united to his sacred humanity, and consequently to the divine Person of the Word.

This devotion in the course of a short time has been so extensively propagated, that besides having been introduced into many convents of holy virgins, there have been about four hundred confraternities erected of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, established with the authority of the Prelates in France, in Savoy, in Flanders, in Germany, in Italy, and even in many heathen countries; and these confraternities have also been enriched by the Holy See with many indulgences, and also with the faculty of erecting chapels and churches with the title of the Sacred Heart, as appears from the brief of Clement X. in the year 1674, mentioned by Father Eudes in his book (page 468), and referred to by Father Gallifet, of the Company of

<sup>1</sup> "Præbe, fili mi, cor tuum mihi."—*Prov.* xxiii. 26.

<sup>2</sup> "Cor meum et caro mea exultaverunt in Deum, vivum."—*Ps.* lxxxiii. 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Deus cordis mei, et pars mea, Deus, in æternum."—*Ps.* lxxii. 26.

<sup>4</sup> "Charitas Dei diffusa est in cordibus nostris per Spiritum Sanctum, qui datus est nobis."—*Rom.* v. 5.

Jesus, in his work on the "Excellence of the devotion to the Heart of Jesus.

And many devout persons hope that the Holy Church may some day grant permission for the Office, and proper Mass, in honor of the most Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ. We know, indeed, that even in the year 1726 this request was made through the medium of the same Father Gallifet, who was the postulator of it; he explained that the Sacred Heart of Jesus deserved this special veneration, because it was the sensible origin and the seat of all the affections of the Redeemer, and especially that of love; and because it was also the centre of all the interior sorrows which he suffered during his life. But, as far as my weak judgment goes, I believe that this good religious did not obtain his petition because he urged it upon grounds which were dubiously tenable. It was therefore justly objected to his views that it was a great question as to whether the affections of the soul were found in the heart or in the brain; and even the most modern philosophers, with Louis Muratori in his moral philosophy, adopt the second opinion, viz., of the brain. And that therefore, as there had been no judgment pronounced concerning this disputed point by the Church, which prudently abstains from such decisions, the request made was not to be granted, inasmuch as it was ground on an uncertain opinion of the ancients. And it was moreover said, that as this special motive for the veneration of the Sacred Heart had failed, it would not be right to grant the petition for the Office and Mass; because otherwise this might be a precedent for similar requests in favor of the most holy side, of the tongue, the eyes, and other members of Jesus Christ's body. This is the substance of what I find recorded in the celebrated work on the canonization of the saints, of Benedict XIV., of blessed memory.<sup>1</sup>

But the hope we entertain that this concession will some day be granted in favor of the heart of our Lord, is not built upon the above-mentioned opinion of the ancients, but on the common opinion of philosophers, both ancient and modern, that the human heart, even though it may not be the seat of the affections and the principle of life, is, notwithstanding, as the most learned Muratori writes in the same place, "One of the

<sup>1</sup> *Lib. 4, p. 2, c. 30, n. 17.*

primary fountains and organs of the life of man." For the generality of modern physicians agree in saying that the fountain and the principle of the circulation of the blood is the heart, to which are attached the veins and arteries; and therefore there is no doubt that the other parts of the body receive their principle of motion from the heart. If, therefore, the heart is one of the "primary fountains" of human life, it cannot be doubted that the heart has a principal share in the affections of man. And, indeed, one may observe from experience, that the internal affections of sorrow and love produce, a much greater impression on the heart than on all the other parts of the body. And especially with regard to love, without naming many other saints, it is recorded of St. Philip Neri, that in his fervors of love towards God, heat came forth from his heart so that it might be felt on his chest, and his heart palpitated so violently that it beat against the head of any one that approached him; and by a supernatural prodigy our Lord enlarged the ribs of the saint round his heart, which, agitated by the ardor he felt, required a greater space to be able to move. St. Teresa herself writes in her life,<sup>1</sup> that God sent several times an angel to pierce her heart, so that she remained afterwards inflamed with divine love, and felt herself sensibly burning and fainting away,—a thing to be well pondered on, as we perceive from this that the affections of love are in a special manner impressed by God in the hearts of the saints; and the Church has not objected to grant to the Discalced Carmelites the proper Mass in honor of the wounded heart of St. Teresa.

It may be added, that the Church has declared worthy of particular veneration the instruments of the Passion of Christ, such as the lance, the nails, and the crown of thorns, granting a particular Office and Mass for their special veneration, as is mentioned by Benedict XIV. in the work and place referred to, where he quotes particularly the words of Innocent VI., who granted the Office for the lance and the nails of our Lord, and these are the words: "We think it right that a special feast were celebrated in honor of the special instruments of his Passion, and particularly in those countries in which those instruments are said to be, and that we should encourage the

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 29.

faithful servants of Christ in devotion to them by concession of the divine Offices.”<sup>1</sup> If, therefore, the Church has judged it right to venerate by a special Office the lance, the nails, the thorns, because they came in contact with those parts of Christ’s body which were particularly tormented in the Passion, how much more have we not reason to hope that a special Office may be granted in honor of the most Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ, which had such a great share in his affections, and in the immense internal sorrows that he suffered in seeing the torments that were prepared for him, and the ingratitude which, after all his love for them, would be shown him by men? This was the cause of the bloody sweat which our Lord afterwards endured in the Garden, because such a sweat can only be explained by a strong compression of the heart, by which the blood, being impeded in its course, was forced to diffuse itself through the exterior parts; and this compression of the Heart of Jesus Christ could not arrive from any other cause than from the internal pains of fear, of weariness, and of sorrow, according as the Evangelists write: *He began to fear, and to be heavy and sad.*<sup>2</sup>

But, however this may be, let us now endeavor to satisfy the devotion of souls enamoured of Jesus Christ, who are desirous to honor him in the most Holy Sacrament, by a Novena of holy meditations and affections to his Sacred Heart.\*

<sup>1</sup> “*Dignum reputamus, si de ipsius passionis specialibus instrumentis, et præsertim in partibus in quibus instrumenta ipsa dicuntur haberi, speciale festum celebretur, nosque Christi fideles in eorum devotione divinis officiis specialiter foveamus.*”—*Lib. 4, p. 2, c. 30, n. 15.*

<sup>2</sup> “*Cœpit pavere et tædere,—contristari et mœstus esse.*”—*Mark, xiv. 33; Matt. xxvi. 37.*

\* The reader is aware that the desire of St. Alphonsus was realized a few years afterwards, and even during his lifetime. In 1765 the permission to celebrate the feast of the Sacred Heart by an Office and a Proper Mass on the Friday after the octave of Corpus Christi was granted to several churches by Clement XIII.; nearly all the dioceses of the Catholic world asked and successively obtained the same permission; and Pope Pius IX. by a decree of August 23, 1856, in answer to a request of the bishops of France, rendered this feast obligatory for the universal Church. Moreover, by another decree, dated



## MEDITATION I.

## The Amiable Heart of Jesus.

He who shows himself amiable in everything must necessarily make himself loved. Oh, if we only applied ourselves to discover all the good qualities by which Jesus Christ renders himself worthy of our love, we should all be under the happy necessity of loving him. And what heart among all hearts can be found more worthy of love than the Heart of Jesus?

A heart all pure, all holy, all full of love towards God and towards us; because all his desires are only for the divine glory and our good. This is the heart in which God finds all his delight. Every perfection, every virtue reign in this heart;—a most ardent love for God, his Father, united to the greatest humility and respect that can possibly exist; a sovereign confusion for our sins, which he has taken upon himself, united to the extreme confidence of a most affectionate Son; a sovereign abhorrence of our sins, united to a lively compassion for our miseries; an extreme sorrow, united to a perfect conformity to the will of God.

In Jesus is found everything that there can be most amiable. Some are attracted to love others by their beauty, others by their innocence, others by living with them, others by devotion. But if there were a person in whom all these and other virtues were united, who

---

May 8, 1873, His Holiness vouchsafed to grant to persons who every day during the month of June offer special prayers and perform some pious acts in honor of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, either in public or in private, *an indulgence of seven* years for each of those days, and besides, a *plenary indulgence* on any day of the month, provided that, being truly penitent, after confession and Communion, they shall visit some church or public oratory and pray there devoutly, for some time, for the intention of His Holiness. These indulgences are applicable to the souls in purgatory.—ED.

could help loving him? If we heard that there was in a distant country a foreign prince who was handsome, humble, courteous, devout, full of charity, affable to all, who rendered good to those who did him evil; then, although we knew not who he was, and though he knew not us, and though we were not acquainted with him, nor was there any possibility of our ever being so, yet we should be enamoured of him, and should be constrained to love him. How is it, then, possible that Jesus Christ, who possesses in himself all these virtues, and in the most perfect degree, and who loves us so tenderly, how is it possible that he should be so little loved by men, and should not be the only object of our love?

O my God, how is it that Jesus, who alone is worthy of love, and who has given us so many proofs of the love that he bears us, should be alone, as it were, the unlucky one with us, who cannot arrive at making us love him; as if he were not sufficiently worthy of our love! This is what caused floods of tears to St. Rose of Lima, St. Catharine of Genoa, St. Teresa, St. Mary Magdalen of Pazzi, who, on considering the ingratitude of men, exclaimed, weeping, "Love is not loved, Love is not loved."

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my amiable Redeemer, what object more worthy of love could Thy Eternal Father command me to love than Thee? Thou art the beauty of paradise, Thou art the love of Thy Father, Thy heart is the throne of all virtues. O amiable heart of my Jesus, Thou dost well deserve the love of all hearts; poor and wretched is that heart which loves Thee not! Thus miserable, O my God, has my heart been during all the time in which it hath not loved Thee. But I will not continue to be thus wretched; I love Thee, I will always continue to love Thee, O my Jesus. O my Lord, I have hitherto forgotten Thee, and now what can I expect? That my ingratitude will oblige Thee to forget me entirely, and forsake me forever? No, my Saviour, do not per-

mit this. Thou art the object of the love of God ; and shalt Thou not, then, be loved by a miserable sinner, such as I am, who have been so favored and loved by Thee? O lovely flames that burnt in the loving heart of my Jesus, enkindle in my poor heart that holy fire which Jesus came down from heaven to kindle on earth. Consume and destroy all the impure affections that dwell in my heart, and prevent it from being entirely his. O my God, grant that it may only exist to love Thee, and Thee alone, my dearest Saviour. If at one time I despised Thee, Thou art now the only object of my love. I love Thee, I love Thee, I love Thee, and I will never love any one else but Thee. My beloved Lord, do not disdain to accept the love of a heart which has once afflicted Thee by my sins. Let it be Thy glory to exhibit to the angels a heart now burning with the love of Thee, which hitherto shunned and despised Thee.

Most holy Virgin Mary, my hope, do thou assist me, and beseech Jesus to make me, by his grace, all that he wishes me to be.

## MEDITATION II.

### The Loving Heart of Jesus.

Oh, if we could but understand the love that burns in the heart of Jesus for us! He has loved us so much, that if all men, all the angels, and all the saints were to unite, with all their energies, they could not arrive at the thousandth part of the love that Jesus bears to us. He loves us infinitely more than we love ourselves.

He has loved us even to excess: *They spoke of His de- cease (excess) which He was to accomplish in Jerusalem.*<sup>1</sup> And what greater excess of love could there be than for God to die for his creatures? He has loved us to the greatest degree: *Having loved His own . . . He loved them unto the end;*<sup>2</sup> since, after having loved us from eternity,—for there never was a moment from eternity when God did not think of us and did not love each one of us: *I have*

<sup>1</sup> “Dicebant excessum ejus, quem completurus erat in Jerusalem.”  
*Luke*, ix. 31.

<sup>2</sup> “Cum dilexisset suos, . . . in finem dilexit eos.”—*John*, xiii. 1.

*loved thee with an everlasting love,*<sup>1</sup>—for the love of us he made himself man, and chose a life of sufferings and the death of the cross for our sake. Therefore he has loved us more than his honor, more than his repose, and more than his life; for he sacrificed everything to show us the love that he bears us. And is not this an excess of love sufficient to stupefy with astonishment the angels of paradise for all eternity?

This love has induced him also to remain with us in the Holy Sacrament as on a throne of love; for he remains there under the appearance of a small piece of bread, shut up in a ciborium, where he seems to remain in a perfect annihilation of his majesty, without movement, and without the use of his senses; so that it seems that he performs no other office there than that of loving men. Love makes us desire the constant presence of the object of our love. It is this love and this desire that makes Jesus Christ reside with us in the Most Holy Sacrament. It seemed too short a time to this loving Saviour to have been only thirty-three years with men on earth; therefore, in order to show his desire of being constantly with us, he thought right to perform the greatest of all miracles, in the institution of the Holy Eucharist. But the work of redemption was already completed, men had already become reconciled to God; for what purpose, then, did Jesus remain on earth in this Sacrament? Ah, he remains there because he cannot bear to separate himself from us, as he has said that he takes a delight in us.

Again, this love has induced him even to become the food of our souls, so as to unite himself to us, and to make his heart and ours as one: *He that eateth My Flesh and drinketh My Blood, abideth in Me and I in him.*<sup>2</sup> O

<sup>1</sup> "In charitate perpetua dilexi te."—*Jer.* xxxi. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem et bibit meum sanguinem in me manet, et ego in illo."—*John*, vi. 57.

wonder ! O excess of divine love ! It was said by a servant of God, If anything could shake my faith in the Eucharist, it would not be the doubt as to how the bread could become flesh, or how Jesus could be in several places and confined into so small a space, because I should answer that God can do everything ; but if I were asked how he could love men so much as to make himself their food, I have nothing else to answer but that this is a mystery of faith above my comprehension, and that the love of Jesus cannot be understood. O love of Jesus, do Thou make Thyself known to men and do Thou make Thyself loved !

*Affections and Prayers.*

O adorable heart of my Jesus, heart inflamed with the love of men, heart created on purpose to love them, how is it possible that Thou canst be despised, and Thy love so ill corresponded to by men ? Oh, miserable that I am, I also have been one of those ungrateful ones that have not loved Thee. Forgive me, my Jesus, this great sin of not having loved Thee, who art so amiable, and who hast loved me so much that Thou canst do nothing more to oblige me to love Thee. I feel that I deserve to be condemned not to be able to love Thee, for having renounced Thy love, as I have hitherto done. But no, my dearest Saviour, give me any chastisement, but do not inflict this one upon me. Grant me the grace to love Thee, and then give me any affliction Thou pleasest. But how can I fear such a chastisement, whilst I feel that Thou continuest to give me the sweet, the pleasing precept of loving Thee, my Lord and my God ? *Love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart.*<sup>1</sup> Yes, O my God, Thou wouldst be loved by me, and I will love Thee ; indeed I will love none but Thee, who hast loved me so much. O Love of my Jesus, Thou art my Love. O burning heart of my Jesus, do thou inflame my heart also. Do not permit me in future, even for a single moment, to live without Thy love ; rather kill me, destroy me ; do not let the world behold the

<sup>1</sup> "Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo."—*Matt.* xxii. 37.

spectacle of such horrid ingratitude as that I, who have been so beloved by Thee, and received so many favors and lights from Thee, should begin again to despise Thy love. No, my Jesus, do not permit this. I trust in the blood that Thou hast shed for me, that I shall always love Thee, and that Thou wilt always love me, and that this love between Thee and me will not be broken off for eternity.

O Mary, Mother of fair love, thou who desirest so much to see Jesus loved, bind me, unite me to thy Son; but bind me to him, so that we may never again be separated.

### MEDITATION III.

#### The Heart of Jesus Christ Panting to be Loved.

Jesus has no need of us; he is equally happy, equally rich, equally powerful with or without our love; and yet, as St. Thomas says,<sup>1</sup> he loves us so, that he desires our love as much as if man was his God, and his felicity depended on that of man. This filled holy Job with astonishment: *What is man that Thou shouldst magnify him? or why dost Thou set Thy heart upon him?*<sup>2</sup>

What! can God desire or ask with such eagerness for the love of a worm? It would have been a great favor if God had only permitted us to love him. If a vassal were to say to his king, "Sire, I love you," he would be considered impertinent. But what would one say if the king were to tell his vassal, "I desire you to love me"? The princes of the earth do not humble themselves to this; but Jesus, who is the King of Heaven, is he who with so much earnestness demands our love: *Love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart.*<sup>3</sup> So pressingly does he ask for our heart: *My son, give Me thy heart.*<sup>4</sup> And if he is driven

<sup>1</sup> *Opusc.* 63, c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Quid est homo, quia magnificas eum? aut quid apponis erga eum cor tuum?"—*Job*, vii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> "Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo."—*Matt.* xxii. 37.

<sup>4</sup> "Præbe, fili mi, cor tuum mihi."—*Prov.* xxiii. 26,



from a soul, he does not depart, but he stands outside of the door of the heart, and he calls and knocks to be let in: *I stand at the gate and knock.*<sup>1</sup> And he beseeches her to open to him, calling her sister and spouse: *Open to Me, My sister, My love.*<sup>2</sup> In short, he takes a delight in being loved by us, and is quite consoled when a soul says to him, and repeats often, "My God, my God, I love Thee."

All this is the effect of the great love he bears us. He who loves necessarily desires to be loved. The heart requires the heart; love seeks love: "Why does God love, but that he might be loved himself,"<sup>3</sup> said St. Bernard; and God himself first said, *What doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but that thou fear the Lord thy God, . . . and love Him?*<sup>4</sup> Therefore he tells us that he is that Shepherd who, having found the lost sheep, calls all the others to rejoice with him: *Rejoice with Me, because I have found My sheep that was lost.*<sup>5</sup> He tells us that he is that Father who, when his lost son returns and throws himself at his feet, not only forgives him, but embraces him tenderly. He tells us that he that loves him not is condemned to death: *He that loveth not abideth in death.*<sup>6</sup> And, on the contrary, that he takes him that loves him and keeps possession of him: *He that abideth in charity, abideth in God, and God in him.*<sup>7</sup> Oh, will not such invitations, such entreaties, such threats, and such promises move us to love God, who so much desires to be loved by us?

<sup>1</sup> "Sto ad ostium et pulso."—*Apoc.* iii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> "Aperi mihi, soror mea."—*Cant.* v. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Non ad aliud amat Deus, nisi ut ametur."—*In Cant.* s. 83.

<sup>4</sup> "Quid Dominus Deus petit a te, nisi ut timeas . . . et diligas eum?"—*Deut.* x. 12.

<sup>5</sup> "Congratulamini mihi, quia inveni ovem meam quæ perierat."—*Luke*, xv. 6.

<sup>6</sup> "Qui non diligit, manet in morte."—*I John*, iii. 14.

<sup>7</sup> "Qui manet in charitate, in Deo manet, et Deus in eo."—*I John*, iv. 16.

*Affections and Prayers.*

My dearest Redeemer, I will say to Thee, with St. Augustine, Thou dost command me to love Thee, and dost threaten me with hell if I do not love Thee; but what more dreadful hell, what greater misfortune, can happen to me than to be deprived of Thy love! If, therefore, Thou desirest to frighten me, Thou shouldst threaten me only that I should live without loving Thee; for this threat alone will frighten me more than a thousand hells. If, in the midst of the flames of hell, the damned could burn with Thy love, O my God, hell itself would become a paradise; and if, on the contrary, the blessed in heaven could not love Thee, paradise would become hell. Thus St. Augustine expresses himself.

I see, indeed, my dearest Lord, that I, on account of my sins, did deserve to be forsaken by Thy grace, and at the same time condemned to be incapable of loving Thee; but still I understand that Thou dost continue to command me to love Thee, and I also feel within me a great desire to love Thee. This my desire is a gift of Thy grace, and it comes from Thee. Oh, give me also the strength necessary to put it in execution, and make me, from this day forth, say to Thee earnestly, and from the bottom of my heart, and to repeat to Thee always, My God, I love Thee, I love Thee, I love Thee. Thou desirest my love; I also desire Thine. Blot out, therefore, from thy remembrance, O my Jesus, the offences that in past times I have committed against Thee; let us love each other henceforth forever. I will not leave Thee, and Thou wilt not leave me. Thou wilt always love me, and I will always love Thee. My dearest Saviour, in Thy merits do I place my hope; oh, do Thou make Thyself to be loved forever, and loved greatly, by a sinner who has offended Thee greatly.

O Mary, Immaculate Virgin, do thou help me, do thou beseech Jesus for me.

## MEDITATION IV.

**The Sorrowful Heart of Jesus.**

It is impossible to consider how afflicted the heart of Jesus was for love of us and not to pity him. He himself tells us that his heart was overwhelmed with such

sorrow, that this alone would have sufficed to take his life away, and to make him die of pure grief, if the virtue of his divinity had not, by a miracle, prevented his death: *My soul is sorrowful even unto death.*<sup>1</sup>

The principal sorrow which afflicted the heart of Jesus so much was not the sight of the torments and infamy which men were preparing for him, but the sight of their ingratitude towards his immense love. He distinctly foresaw all the sins which we should commit after all his sufferings and such a bitter and ignominious death. He foresaw, especially, the horrible insults which men would offer to his adorable heart, which he has left us in the Most Holy Sacrament as a proof of his affection. O my God, what affronts has not Jesus Christ received from men in this Sacrament of love? One has trampled him under foot, another has thrown him into the gutters, others have availed themselves of him to pay homage to the devil!

And yet the sight of all these insults did not prevent him from leaving us this great pledge of his love. He has a sovereign hatred of sin; but still it seems as if his love towards us had overcome the hatred he bore to sin, since he was content to permit these sacrileges, rather than to deprive the souls that love him of this divine food. Shall not all this suffice to make us love a heart that has loved us so much?

Has not Jesus Christ done enough to deserve our love? Ungrateful that we are, shall we still leave Jesus forsaken on the altar, as the majority of men do? And shall we not unite ourselves to those few souls who acknowledge him, and melt with love more even than the torches melt away which burn round the ciborium? The heart of Jesus remains there, burning with love for us; and shall we not, in his presence, burn with love for Jesus?

<sup>1</sup> "Tristis est anima mea usque ad mortem."—*Mark*, xiv. 34.

*Affections and Prayers.*

My adorable and dearest Jesus, behold at Thy feet one who has caused so much sorrow to Thy amiable heart. O my God, how could I grieve this heart, which has loved me so much, and has spared nothing to make itself loved by me? But console Thyself, I will say, O my Saviour, for my heart having been wounded, through Thy grace, with Thy most holy love, feels now so much regret for the offences I have committed against Thee, that it would fain die of sorrow. Oh, who will give me, my Jesus, that sorrow for my sins which Thou didst feel for them in Thy life! Eternal Father, I offer Thee the sorrow and abhorrence Thy Son felt for my sins; and, for his sake, I beseech Thee to give me so great a sorrow for the offences I have committed against Thee, that I may lead an afflicted and sorrowful life at the thought of having once despised Thy friendship. And Thou, O my Jesus, do Thou give me, from this day forth, such a horror of sin, that I may abhor even the lightest faults, considering that they displease Thee, who dost not deserve to be offended much or little, but dost deserve an infinite love. My beloved Lord, I now detest everything that displeases Thee, and in future I will love only Thee, and that which Thou lovest. Oh, help me, give me the strength, give me the grace to invoke Thee constantly, O my Jesus, and always to repeat to Thee this petition: My Jesus, give me Thy love, give me Thy love, give me Thy love.

And thou, most holy Mary, obtain for me the grace to pray to thee continually, and to say to thee, O my Mother, make me love Jesus Christ.

## MEDITATION V.

**The Compassionate Heart of Jesus.**

Where shall we ever find a heart more compassionate or tender than the heart of Jesus, or one that had a greater feeling for our miseries?

This pity induced him to descend from heaven to this earth; it made him say that he was that good shepherd who came to give his life to save his sheep. In order to obtain the pardon of our sins, he would not spare himself, but would sacrifice himself on the Cross, that by his

sufferings he might satisfy for the chastisement that we have deserved. This pity and compassion makes him say even now: *Why will ye die, O house of Israel? return ye, and live.*<sup>1</sup> O men, he says, my poor children, why will you damn yourselves by flying from me? Do you not see that by separating yourselves from me you are hastening to eternal death? I desire not to see you lost; do not despair; as often as you wish to return, return, and you shall recover your life: *Return, and live.*

This compassion even makes him say that he is that loving Father who, though he sees himself despised by his son, yet, if that son returns a penitent, he cannot reject him, but embraces him tenderly and forgets all the injuries He has received: *I will not remember all his iniquities.*<sup>2</sup> It is not thus that men behave; for though they may forgive, yet they nevertheless retain the remembrance of the offence received, and feel inclined to revenge themselves; and even if they do not revenge themselves, because they fear God, at least they always feel a great repugnance against conversing and entertaining themselves with those persons who have vilified them.

O my Jesus, Thou dost pardon the penitent sinners, and dost not refuse in this world to give them everything in Holy Communion during their life, and everything in the other world, even in heaven, with eternal glory, without retaining the slightest repugnance towards being united to the soul that has offended Thee, for all eternity. Where, then, is there to be found a heart so amiable and compassionate as Thine, O my dearest Saviour?

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O compassionate heart of my Jesus, have pity on me: "Most sweet Jesus, have mercy on me." I say so now, and beseech

<sup>1</sup> "Quare moriemini, domus Israel? . . . Revertimini, et vivite."—*Ezek. xviii. 31.*

<sup>2</sup> "Omnium iniquitatum ejus . . . non recordabor."—*Ibid. 22.*

Thee to give me the grace always to say to Thee, "Most sweet Jesus, have mercy on me." Even before I offended Thee, O my Redeemer, I certainly did not deserve any of the favors Thou hast bestowed upon me. Thou hast created me, Thou hast given me so much light and knowledge; and all without any merit of mine. But after I had offended Thee, I not only did not deserve Thy favor, but I deserved to be forsaken by Thee and cast into hell. Thy compassion has made Thee wait for me and preserve my life even when I had offended Thee. Thy compassion has enlightened me, and offered me pardon; it has given me sorrow for my sins, and the desire of loving Thee; and now I hope from Thy mercy to remain always in Thy grace. O my Jesus, cease not to show Thy compassion towards me. The mercy which I implore of Thee is that Thou wouldst grant me light and strength to be no longer ungrateful towards Thee. No, O my love, I do not expect that Thou shouldst again forgive me, if I again turn my back towards Thee; this would be presumption, and would prevent Thee from showing mercy to me any more. For what pity could I expect any more from Thee if I were so ungrateful as to despise Thy friendship again, and to separate myself from Thee. No, my Jesus, I love Thee, and I will always love Thee; and this is the mercy which I hope for and seek from Thee: "Permit me not to be separated from Thee, permit me not to be separated from Thee."<sup>1</sup>

And I beseech thee also, O Mary my Mother, permit me not to be ever again separated from my God.

#### MEDITATION VI.

##### The Generous Heart of Jesus.

It is the characteristic of good-hearted people to desire to make everybody happy, and especially those most distressed and afflicted. But who can ever find one who has a better heart than Jesus Christ? He is infinite goodness, and has therefore a sovereign desire to communicate to us his riches: *With Me are riches, . . . that I may enrich them that love Me.*<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Ne permittas me separari a te."

<sup>2</sup> "Mecum sunt divitiæ, . . . ut ditem diligentes me."—*Prov. viii.* 18, 21.



He for this purpose made himself poor, as the Apostle says, that he might make us rich: *He became poor for your sakes, that through His poverty you might be rich.*<sup>1</sup> For this purpose also he chose to remain with us in the most Holy Sacrament, where he remains constantly with his hands full of graces, as was seen by Father Balthazar Alvarez, to dispense them to those who come to visit him. For this reason also he gives himself wholly to us in Holy Communion, giving us to understand from this that he cannot refuse us any good gifts, since he even gives himself entirely to us: *How hath He not also, with Him, given us all things?*<sup>2</sup>

For in the heart of Jesus we receive every good, every grace that we desire: *In all things you are made rich in Christ, . . . so that nothing is wanting to you in any grace.*<sup>3</sup> And we must understand that we are debtors to the heart of Jesus for all the graces we have received—graces of redemption, of vocation, of light, of pardon, the grace to resist temptations, and to bear patiently with contradictions; for without his assistance we could not do anything good: *Without me you can do nothing.*<sup>4</sup>

And if hitherto, says our Saviour, you have not received more graces, do not complain of me, but blame yourself, who have neglected to seek them of me: *Hitherto you have not asked anything; . . . ask, and you shall receive.*<sup>5</sup> Oh, how rich and liberal is the heart of Jesus towards every one that has recourse to him! *Rich unto*

<sup>1</sup> “Propter vos egenus factus est, cum esset dives, ut illius inopia vos divites essetis.”—2 Cor. viii. 9

<sup>2</sup> “Quomodo non etiam cum illo omnia nobis donavit?”—Rom. viii. 32.

<sup>3</sup> “In omnibus divites facti estis in illo, . . . ita ut nihil vobis desit in ulla gratia.”—1 Cor. i. 5, 7.

<sup>4</sup> “Sine me nihil potestis facere.”—John, xv. 5.

<sup>5</sup> “Usque modo non petistis quidquam, . . . petite, et accipietis.”—John, xvi. 24.

*all that call upon Him.*<sup>1</sup> Oh, what great mercies do those souls receive who are earnest in asking help of Jesus Christ. David said, *For Thou, O Lord, art sweet and mild, and plenteous to all who call upon Thee.*<sup>2</sup> Let us therefore always go to this heart, and ask with confidence, and we shall obtain all we want.

*Affections and Prayers.*

Ah, my Jesus, Thou hast not refused to give me Thy blood and Thy life, and shall I refuse to give Thee my miserable heart? No, my dearest Redeemer, I offer it entirely to Thee. I give Thee all my will; do Thou accept it, and dispose of it at Thy pleasure. I can do nothing, and have nothing; but I have this heart which Thou hast given me, and of which no one can deprive me. I may be deprived of my goods, my blood, my life, but not of my heart. With this heart I can love Thee; with this heart I will love Thee. I beseech Thee, O my God, teach me a perfect forgetfulness of myself; teach me what I must do to arrive at Thy pure love, of which Thou in Thy goodness hast inspired me with the desire. I feel in myself a determination to please Thee; but in order to put my resolve into execution, I expect and implore help from Thee. It depends on Thee, O loving heart of Jesus, to make entirely Thine my poor heart, which hitherto has been so ungrateful, and through my own fault deprived of Thy love. Oh, grant that my heart may be all on fire with the love of Thee, even as Thine is on fire with the love of me. Grant that my will may be entirely united to Thine, so that I may will nothing but what Thou willest, and that from this day forth Thy holy will may be the rule of all my actions, of all my thoughts, and of all my desires. I trust, O my Saviour, that Thou wilt not refuse me Thy grace to fulfil this resolution which I now make prostrate at Thy feet, to receive with submission whatever Thou mayest ordain for me and my affairs, as well in life as in death. Blessed art thou, O Immaculate Mary, who hadst thy heart always and entirely

<sup>1</sup> "Dives in omnes qui invocant illum."—*Rom.* x. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Quoniam tu, Domine, suavis et mitis, et multæ misericordiæ omnibus invocantibus te."—*Ps.* lxxxv. 5.

united to the heart of Jesus ; obtain for me, O my Mother, that in future I may wish and desire that which Jesus wills and thou wilt.

## MEDITATION VII.

**The Grateful Heart of Jesus.**

The heart of Jesus is so grateful, that it cannot behold the most trifling works done for the love of him—our smallest word spoken for his glory, a single good thought directed towards pleasing him—without giving to each its own reward. He is besides so grateful, that he always returns a hundredfold for one: *You shall receive a hundredfold.*<sup>1</sup>

Men, when they are grateful, and recompense any benefit done to them, recompense it only once; they, as it were, divest themselves of all the obligation, and then they think no more of it. Jesus Christ does not do thus with us; he not only recompenses a hundredfold in this life every good action that we perform to please him, but in the next life he recompenses it an infinite number of times throughout eternity. And who will be so negligent as not to do as much as he can to please this most grateful heart?

But, O my God, how do men try to please Jesus Christ? Or rather, I will say, how can we be so ungrateful towards this our Saviour? If he had only shed a single drop of blood, or one tear alone for our salvation, yet we should be under infinite obligation to him; because this drop and this tear would have been of infinite value in the sight of God towards obtaining for us every grace. But Jesus would employ for us every moment of his life. He has given us all his merits, all his sufferings, all his ignominies, all his blood, and his life; so that we are under, not one, but infinite, obligations to love him.

<sup>1</sup> "Centuplum accipiet."—*Matt.* xix. 29.

But alas! we are grateful even towards animals: if a little dog shows us any sign of affection, it seems to constrain us to love it. How, then, can we be so ungrateful towards God? It seems as if the benefits of God towards men change their nature, and become ill-usage; for, instead of gratitude and love, they obtain nothing but offences and injuries. Do Thou, O Lord, enlighten these ungrateful ones, to know the love that Thou bearest them.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my beloved Jesus, behold at Thy feet an ungrateful sinner. I have been grateful indeed towards creatures; but to Thee alone I have been ungrateful—to Thee, who hast died for me, and hast done the utmost that Thou couldst do to oblige me to love Thee. But the thought that I have to do with a heart full of goodness and infinite in mercy, of one who proclaims that he forgives all the offences of the sinner who repents and loves him, consoles me and gives me courage. My dearest Jesus, I have in times past offended Thee and despised Thee; but now I love Thee more than everything—more than myself. Tell me what Thou wouldst have me to do; for I am ready to do everything with Thy help. I believe that Thou hast created me. Thou hast given Thy blood and Thy life for the love of me. I believe also that for my sake Thou dost remain in the Blessed Sacrament; I thank Thee for it, O my love. Oh, permit me not to be ungrateful in future for so many benefits and proofs of Thy love. Oh, bind me, unite me to Thy heart; and permit me not, during the years that remain to me, to offend Thee or grieve Thee any more. I have displeased Thee sufficiently. O my Jesus, it is time that I should love Thee now. Oh, that those years that I have lost would return! But they will return no more, and the life that remains for me may be short; but whether it be short or long, my God, I desire to spend it all in loving Thee, my sovereign good, who dost deserve an eternal and infinite love.

O Mary, my Mother, let me never again be ungrateful to thy Son. Pray to Jesus for me.

## MEDITATION VIII.

## The Despised Heart of Jesus.

There is not a greater sorrow for a heart that loves, than to see its love despised; and so much the more when the proofs given of this love have been great, and, on the other hand, the ingratitude great.

If every human being were to renounce all his goods, and to go and live in the desert, to feed on herbs, to sleep on the bare earth, to macerate himself with penances, and at last give himself up to be murdered for Christ's sake, what recompense could he render for the sufferings, the blood, the life that this great Son of God has given for his sake? If we were to sacrifice ourselves every moment unto death, we should certainly not recompense in the smallest degree the love that Jesus Christ has shown us, by giving himself to us in the most Holy Sacrament. Only conceive that God should conceal himself under the species of bread to become the food of one of his creatures!

But, O my God, what recompense and gratitude do men render to Jesus Christ? What but ill-treatment, contempt of his laws and his maxims,—injuries such as they would not commit towards their enemy, or their slave, or the greatest villain upon earth. And can we think of all these injuries which Jesus Christ has received, and still receives every day, and not feel sorrow for them? and not endeavor, by our love, to recompense the infinite love of his divine heart, which remains in the most Holy Sacrament, inflamed with the same love towards us, and anxious to communicate every good gift to us, and to give himself entirely to us, ever ready to receive us into his heart whenever we go to him? *Him that cometh to Me, I will not cast out.*<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “Eum qui venit ad me non ejiciam foras.”—*John*, vi. 37.

We have been accustomed to hear of the Creation, Incarnation, Redemption, of Jesus born in a stable, of Jesus dead on the Cross. O my God, if we knew that another man had conferred on us any of these benefits, we could not help loving him. It seems that God alone has, so to say, this bad luck with men, that, though he has done his utmost to make them love him, yet he cannot attain this end, and, instead of being loved, he sees himself despised and neglected. All this arises from the forgetfulness of men of the love of God.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O Heart of Jesus, abyss of mercy and love, how is it that, at the sight of the goodness Thou hast shown me, and of my ingratitude, I do not die of sorrow? Thou, O my Saviour, after having given me my being, hast given me all Thy blood and Thy life, giving Thyself up, for my sake, to ignominy and death; and, not content with this, Thou hast invented the mode of sacrificing Thyself every day for me in the Holy Eucharist, not refusing to expose Thyself to the injuries which Thou shouldst receive, and which Thou didst foresee, in this Sacrament of love. O my God, how can I see myself so ungrateful to Thee without dying with confusion! O Lord, put an end, I pray Thee, to my ingratitude, by wounding my heart with Thy love, and making me entirely Thine. Remember the blood and the tears that Thou hast shed for me, and forgive me. Oh, let not all Thy sufferings be lost upon me. But though Thou hast seen how ungrateful and unworthy of Thy love I have been, yet Thou didst not cease to love me even when I did not love Thee, nor even desire that Thou shouldst love me; how much rather, then, may I not hope for Thy love, now that I desire and sigh after nothing but to love Thee, and to be loved by Thee. Oh, do Thou fully satisfy this my desire; or rather this Thy desire, for it is Thou that hast given it to me. Grant that this day may be the day of my thorough conversion; so that I may begin to love Thee, and may never cease to love Thee, my sovereign good. Make me die in everything to myself, in order that I may live only to Thee, and that I may always burn with Thy love.



O Mary, thy heart was the blessed altar that was always on fire with divine love: my dearest Mother, make me like to thee; obtain this from thy Son, who delights in honoring thee, by denying thee nothing that thou askest of him.

## MEDITATION IX.

## The Faithful Heart of Jesus.

Oh, how faithful is the beautiful heart of Jesus towards those whom he calls to his love: *He is faithful who hath called you, who also will perform.*<sup>1</sup>

The faithfulness of God gives us confidence to hope all things, although we deserve nothing. If we have driven God from our heart, let us open the door to him, and he will immediately enter, according to the promise he has made: *If any one open to me the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him.*<sup>2</sup> If we wish for graces, let us ask for them of God, in the name of Jesus Christ, and he has promised us that we shall obtain them: *If you shall ask the Father anything in My name, He will give it you.*<sup>3</sup> If we are tempted, let us trust in his merits, and he will not permit our enemies to strive with us beyond our strength: *God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that which you are able.*<sup>4</sup>

Oh, how much better it is to have to do with God than with men! How often do men promise and then fail, either because they tell lies in making their promises, or because, after having made the promise, they change their minds: *God is not as man*, says the Holy Spirit, *that He should lie; or as the son of man, that He should be*

<sup>1</sup> "Fidelis est, qui vocavit vos, qui etiam faciet."—I *Thess.* v. 24.

<sup>2</sup> "Si quis . . . aperuerit mihi januam, intrabo ad illum, et cœnabo cum illo."—*Apoc.* iii. 20.

<sup>3</sup> "Si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis."—*John*, xvi. 23.

<sup>4</sup> "Fidelis autem Deus est, qui non patietur vos tentari supra quod potestis."—I *Cor.* x. 13.

*changed.*<sup>1</sup> God cannot be unfaithful to his promises, because, being truth itself, he cannot lie; nor can he change his mind, because all that he wills is just and right. He has promised to receive all that come to him, to give help to him that asks it, to love him that loves him; and shall he then not do it? *Hath He said, then, and will He not do it?*<sup>2</sup>

Oh, that we were as faithful with God as he is with us! Oh, how often have we, in times past, promised him to be his, to serve him and love him; and then have betrayed him, and, renouncing his service, have sold ourselves as slaves to the devil! Oh, let us beseech him to give us strength to be faithful to him for the future! Oh, how blessed shall we be if we are faithful to Jesus Christ in the few things that he commands us to do; he will, indeed, be faithful in remunerating us with infinitely great rewards; and he will declare to us what he has promised to his faithful servants: *Well done, good and faithful servant; because thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will place thee over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.*<sup>3</sup>

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

Oh, that I had been as faithful towards Thee, my dearest Redeemer, as Thou hast been faithful to me. Whenever I have opened my heart to Thee, Thou hast entered in, to forgive me and to receive me into Thy favor; whenever I have called Thee, Thou hast hastened to my assistance. Thou hast been faithful with me, but I have been exceedingly unfaithful towards Thee. I have promised Thee my love, and then have many times refused it to Thee; as if Thou, my God, who hast created and redeemed me, wert less worthy of being loved than Thy crea-

<sup>1</sup> "Non est Deus quasi homo, ut mentiatur, nec ut filius hominis, ut mutetur."—*Num.* xxiii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> "Dixit ergo, et non faciet?"—*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> "Euge, serve bone et fidelis; quia super pauca fuisti fidelis, super multa te constituam; intra in gaudium Domini tui."—*Matt.* xxv. 21.

tures and those miserable pleasures for which I have forsaken Thee. Forgive me, O my Jesus. I know my ingratitude, and abhor it. I know that Thou art infinite goodness, who deservest an infinite love, especially from me, whom Thou hast so much loved, even after all the offences I have committed against Thee. Unhappy me if I should damn myself; the graces Thou hast vouchsafed to me, and the proofs of the singular affection which Thou hast shown me, would be, O God, the hell of hells to me. Ah, no, my love, have pity on me; suffer me not to forsake Thee again, and then by damning myself, as I should deserve, continue to repay in hell with injuries and hatred the love that Thou hast borne me. O loving and faithful heart of Jesus, inflame, I beseech Thee, my miserable heart, so that it may burn with love for Thee, as Thine dost for me. My Jesus, it seems to me that now I love Thee; but I love Thee but little. Make me love Thee exceedingly, and remain faithful to Thee until death. I ask of Thee this grace, together with that of always praying to Thee for it. Grant that I may die rather than ever betray Thee again.

O Mary, my Mother, help me to be faithful to thy Son.

## Affections of Love towards the Heart of Jesus.\*

O AMIABLE Heart of my Saviour! thou art the seat of all virtues, the source of all graces, the burning furnace in which are inflamed all holy souls. Thou art the object of all God's love; thou art the refuge of the afflicted, and the abode of the souls that love thee. O heart worthy of reigning over all hearts, and of possessing the affection of all hearts! O heart that was wounded for me on the Cross by the lance of my sins, and that remained afterwards continually wounded for me on the altar in the Blessed Sacrament, but not by any other lance than that of the love that thou entertainest for me! O loving heart, that loves men with so much tenderness, and that is so little loved by men! do thou apply a remedy to so great an ingratitude, inflame thou our hearts with a true love for thee. Ah! why can I not go all over the world to make known the graces, the sweetness, the treasures that thou dispensest to those who truly love thee? Accept the desire that I have of seeing all hearts burning with love for thee. O divine heart! be thou my consolation in trials, my repose in labors, my solace in anxieties, my haven in tempests. I consecrate to thee my body and my soul, my heart and my life, together with all that I am. I unite to thine all my thoughts, all my affections, all my desires. O eternal Father! I offer Thee the pure affections of the heart of Jesus. If Thou dost reject mine, Thou canst not reject those of Thy Son,

---

\* This was written by St. Alphonsus, but remained unpublished till 1875.—ED.

who is sanctity itself; may they supply what is wanting in me, and may they render me pleasing in Thy eyes!

---

St. Catharine of Genoa was one day permitted to see the heart of Jesus in his breast, and she saw it all on fire.

One day our Lord deigned to approach St. Mechtilde, and she heard the heart of Jesus palpitating violently, as if some one had struck him blows on the breast. The Lord told her that his heart had thus palpitated from his infancy, on account of the love with which it was inflamed for mankind. Father Nieremberg also assures us that if Jesus had left to his love for us the liberty of producing its own effects, he would have died of love in his infancy.

Jesus said to St. Gertrude: "Were it expedient, I would for thee alone suffer all that I have suffered for the whole world." And to St. Mechtilde: "My love for souls is yet the same as that love which I bore them at the time of my Passion; I would die as many times as there are souls to save."

St. Carpus appeared as if he desired to condemn to the abyss all sinners. Jesus said to him: "For my part, O Carpus, I am still ready to allow myself to be crucified for man."<sup>2</sup>

St. John of the Cross said: "Jesus loves each one of us as much as he loves all men."

<sup>1</sup> "Adhuc si expediret, pro te sola tolerarem omnia quæ toleravi pro toto mundo."

<sup>2</sup> "Impelle me, Carpe, quia paratus sum pro hominibus crucifigi."

## HYMNS ON THE SACRED HEART OF JESUS.\*

### I.

#### The Loving Spouse.

FLY, my soul, ah, fly away  
To Jesus' heart so kind ;  
There love's captive thou shalt stay,  
And truest freedom find.

See, thy foes are all around ;  
Thou art pursued, poor thing !  
Safety in the ark is found,  
Then thither, dove, take wing.

Why delay ? The world is woe,  
And care, and cold deceit ;  
God alone can joy bestow,  
And happiness complete.

Give me, Lord, a place to dwell  
Within Thy heart so meek ;  
This shall be my prison cell,  
Where true repose I seek.

All on earth I now disdain,  
And for Thy love resign ;  
This the fruit of every pain,  
To bind my heart to Thine.

If within Thy heart divine  
To die my lot should be,  
Oh, what happy death were mine !  
Such death were life to me.

---

\* St. Alphonsus, in adopting these two hymns and inserting them among his works, informs us that they were composed by another author, whom he does not name.—ED.



## II.

**The Loving Spouse in the Heart of Jesus.**

I DWELL a captive in this heart,  
On fire with love divine;  
'Tis here I live alone in peace,  
And constant joy is mine.

It is the Heart of God's own Son,  
In his humanity,  
Who, all enamoured of my soul,  
Here burns with love of me.

Here, like the dove within the ark,  
Securely I repose;  
Since now the Lord is my defence,  
I fear no earthly foes.

Now I have found this happy home,  
God's love alone I prize;  
All else is torment to my heart,  
The world I now despise.

What though I suffer, still in love  
I ever true will be;  
My love of God shall deeper grow  
When crosses fall on me.

Then he who longs with me to seek  
Repose within this nest,  
All love that is not love for God,  
Must banish from his breast.

Ye haughty lovers of the world,  
Full of self-love, depart!  
Away, away! no place is found  
For you within this heart.

Each vile and earthly chain impedes  
The soul's true heavenward flight ;  
All, all the heart belongs to God,  
Love claims his sovereign right.

From ev'ry bond of earth, dear Lord,  
Thy grace has set me free ;  
My soul, delivered from the snare,  
Enjoys true liberty.

I cannot love Thee as I ought,  
This pains me, this alone ;  
For all my love must have an end ;  
Thy goodness, Lord, has none.

One thought brings comfort to my heart—  
I love a good so great,  
That though I love him all I can,  
More love he merits yet.

Naught more can I desire than this,  
To see his face in heaven ;  
And this I hope, since he on earth  
His heart in pledge has given.

**The Practice of the Love of Jesus Christ.**

WE have here one of the masterpieces of St. Alphonsus,—a book that speaks to all hearts, that reveals to every Christian soul its true wants and the true means to satisfy them. One cannot read this book without becoming better; nor can one grow tired in reading it again and again. It is indeed a very highly-prized and widely-spread work. It was published in 1768. (Tannoia, B. 3, ch. 41, 42.)

The holy bishop, developing the celebrated text of St. Paul on the qualities of true charity, explains in thirteen chapters the principal virtues that we ought to practise and the defects that we ought to avoid in order to render to our Lord love for love. He treats of patience in general (Chap. I.), and in particular in sicknesses, poverty, and contempt (Chap. X.); of meekness (Chaps. II. and VIII.); of purity of intention (Chap. III.); of tepidity, and the remedies against this vice, namely, the desire of perfection, the determination to attain perfection, mental prayer, frequent communion, and prayer (Chap. IV.); of humility (Chap. V.); of ambition and vain-glory (Chap. VI.); of detachment from all things, especially when there is question of following one's vocation (Chap. VII.); of conformity to the will of God, and of obedience (Chap. IX.); of faith (Chap. XI.); of hope (Chap. XII.); and, finally, of temptations, and spiritual desolation (Chap. XIII.). The work is concluded by a summary of virtues that are to be practised.—ED.

## Introduction.

### I.

How deserving Jesus Christ is of our Love, on Account of the Love He has shown us in His Passion.

THE whole sanctity and perfection of a soul consists in loving Jesus Christ, our God, our sovereign good, and our Redeemer. Whoever loves me, says Jesus Christ himself, shall be loved by my Eternal Father: *My Father loves you because you have loved Me.*<sup>1</sup> Some, says St. Francis de Sales,<sup>2</sup> make perfection consist in an austere life; others in prayer; others in frequenting the Sacraments; others in alms-deeds. But they deceive themselves: perfection consists in loving God with our whole heart. The Apostle wrote: *Above all things, . . . have charity, which is the bond of perfection.*<sup>3</sup> It is charity which keeps united and preserves all the virtues that render a man perfect. Hence St. Augustine said: "Love God, and do whatever you please;"<sup>4</sup> because a soul that loves God is taught by that same love never to do anything that will displease him, and to leave nothing undone that may please him.

But perhaps God does not deserve all our love? *He has loved us with an everlasting love.*<sup>5</sup> O man, says the Lord, behold I was the first to love thee. Thou wast

<sup>1</sup> "Ipse enim Pater amat vos, quia vos me amastis."—*John*, xvi. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, p. 1, ch. 25.

<sup>3</sup> "Super omnia, . . . charitatem habete, quod est vinculum perfectionis."—*Col.* iii. 14.

<sup>4</sup> "Ama, et fac quod vis."

<sup>5</sup> "In charitate perpetua dilexi te."—*Jer.* xxxi. 3.

not yet in the world, nay, the world itself was not, and I already loved thee. As long as I am God, I loved thee; as long as I have loved myself, I have also loved thee. With good reason, therefore, did St. Agnes, that young holy virgin, reply to those who wished to unite her to an earthly spouse: "I am engaged to another lover."<sup>1</sup> "Go," said she, "O lovers of this world, cease to sue my love; my God was the first to love me. He has loved me from all eternity: it is but just, then, for me to give him all my affections, and to love none other but him."

As Almighty God knew that man is won by kindness, he determined to lavish his gifts upon him, and so take captive the affections of his heart. For this reason he said, *I will draw them with the cords of Adam, with the bands of love.*<sup>2</sup> I will catch men by those very snares by which they are naturally caught, that is, by the snares of love. And such exactly are all the favors of God to man. After having given him a soul created in his own image, with memory, understanding, and will, and a body with its senses, he created heaven and earth for him, yes, all that exists, all for the love of man,—the firmament, the stars, the planets, the seas, the rivers, the fountains, the hills, the plains, metals, fruits, and a countless variety of animals: and all these creatures that they might minister to the uses of man, and that man might love him in gratitude for so many admirable gifts.

"Heaven and earth, and all things, tell me to love Thee,"<sup>3</sup> says St. Augustine. "My Lord," he said, "whatever I behold on the earth, or above the earth, all speak to me, and exhort me to love Thee; because all assure me that Thou hast made them for the love of me."

<sup>1</sup> "Ab alio amatore præventa sum."

<sup>2</sup> "In funiculis Adam traham eos, in vinculis charitatis."—*Osee*, xi. 4.

<sup>3</sup> "Cælum et terra et omnia mihi dicunt, ut te amem."—*Conf. B.* 10, c. 6.



The Abbot de Rancé, founder of La Trappe, when from his hermitage he stood and surveyed the hills, the fountains, the birds, the flowers, the planets, and the skies, felt himself animated by each one of these creatures to love that God who had created all through love to him.

In like manner St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, when she held any beautiful flower in her hand, was enkindled by the sight of it with love to God; and she would say: "And God, then, has thought from all eternity of creating this flower for love of me!" Thus did that flower become, as it were, a dart of love, which sweetly wounded her, and united her more and more to her God.

On the other hand, St. Teresa, at the sight of trees, fountains, rivers, lakes, or meadows, declared that all these fair things upbraided her for her ingratitude in loving so coldly a God who created them that he might be loved by her.

To the like purpose is it related of a pious hermit, that when walking through the country, it seemed to him that the plants and flowers in his path reproached him for the cold return of love he made to God; so that he went along gently striking them with his staff, and saying to them: "Oh, be silent, be silent; you call me an ungrateful wretch; you tell me God has made you for love of me, and yet I do not love him; but now I understand you, be silent, be silent; do not reproach me more."

But God was not satisfied with giving us so many beautiful creatures. He has gone to such lengths to gain our love, as to give himself to us. The Eternal Father did not hesitate to give us even his only-begotten Son: *For God so loved the world as to give His only-begotten Son.*<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Sic enim Deus dilexit mundum, ut Filium unigenitum daret." *John*, iii. 16.

When the Eternal Father saw that we were all dead, and deprived of his grace by sin, what did he do? for the immense love, nay, as the Apostle writes, for the too great love he bore us, he sent his beloved Son to make atonement for us; and so to restore to us that life which sin had robbed us of: *Who through his exceeding charity with which He loved us, even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together in Christ.*<sup>1</sup> And in granting us his Son (not sparing his Son, that he might spare us), he has granted us every good together with him, his grace, his love, and paradise, since assuredly all these gifts are much less than that of his Son: *He that spared not even His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how hath He not also with Him given us all things.*<sup>2</sup>

And so, likewise, the Son, through his love towards us, has given himself wholly to us: *Who loved me, and delivered Himself for me.*<sup>3</sup> In order to redeem us from everlasting death, and to recover for us the divine grace and heaven which we had forfeited, he became man, and put on flesh like our own: *And the Word was made flesh.*<sup>4</sup> Behold, then, a God reduced to nothingness: *But emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, . . . and in habit found as a man.*<sup>5</sup> Behold the sovereign of the world humbling himself so low as to assume the form of a servant, and to subject himself to all the miseries which the rest of men endure.

But what is more astonishing still is, that he could very well have saved us without dying and without suf-

<sup>1</sup> "Propter nimiam charitatem suam qua dilexit nos, et cum essemus mortui peccatis, convivificavit nos in Christo."—*Eph.* ii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui etiam proprio Filio suo non pepercit, sed pro nobis omnibus tradidit illum: quomodo non etiam cum illo omnia nobis donavit?"—*Rom.* viii. 32.

<sup>3</sup> "Dilexit me, et tradidit semetipsum pro me."—*Gal.* ii. 20.

<sup>4</sup> "Et Verbum caro factum est."—*John*, i. 14.

<sup>5</sup> "Exinanivit semetipsum formam servi accipiens, . . . et habitu inventus ut homo."—*Phil.* ii. 7.

fering at all; but no: he chose a life of sorrow and contempt, and a death of bitterness and ignominy even to the expiring on a cross,—the gibbet of infamy, the award of vilest criminals: *He humbled Himself, becoming obedient unto death, even to the death of the cross.*<sup>1</sup> But why, if he could have ransomed us without suffering, why should he choose to die, and to die on a cross? To show us how he loved us. *He loved us, and delivered Himself for us.*<sup>2</sup> He loved us, and because he loved us, he delivered himself up to sorrows, and ignominies, and to a death more cruel than ever any man endured in this world.

Hence that great lover of Jesus Christ, St. Paul, took occasion to say: *The charity of Christ presseth us.*<sup>3</sup> Wishing to show us by these words that it is not so much the sufferings themselves of Jesus Christ as his love in enduring them, that obliges us, and, as it were, constrains us to love him. Let us hear what St. Francis de Sales says on this text: “When we remember that Jesus Christ, true God, has loved us to such an excess as to suffer death, and the death of the cross, for us, our hearts are, as it were, put in a wine-press, and suffer violence, until love be extorted from them, but a violence which, the stronger it is, becomes the more delightful.”<sup>4</sup> He then goes on to say, “Ah! why do we not therefore cast ourselves on Jesus crucified, to die on the cross with him, who has chosen to die for love of us? I will hold him (should we say), and I will never let him go; I will die with him, and will be consumed in the flames of his love. One flame shall consume this divine Creator and his miserable creature. My Jesus gives himself unreservedly to me, and I give myself unreservedly to him. I will live

<sup>1</sup> “*Humiliavit semetipsum, factus obediens usque ad mortem, mortem autem crucis.*”—*Phil.* ii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> “*Dilexit nos, et tradidit semetipsum pro nobis.*”—*Eph.* v. 2.

<sup>3</sup> “*Charitas Christi urget nos.*”—*2 Cor.* v. 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Love of God*, B. 7, c. 8.

and die on his loving breast; neither life nor death shall ever separate me from him. O eternal love, my soul longs after Thee, and makes choice of Thee forever. Come, O Holy Spirit, and inflame our hearts with love. O love, O death, to die to all other loves, to live solely to that of Jesus Christ! O Redeemer of our souls, grant that we may eternally sing, Live, Jesus! I love Jesus; live, Jesus, whom I love! yes, I love Jesus, who reigns for evermore.”<sup>1</sup>

The love of Jesus Christ towards men created in him a longing desire for the moment of his death, when his love should be fully manifested to them; hence he was wont to say in his lifetime: *I have a baptism wherewith I am to be baptized, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!*<sup>2</sup> I have to be baptized in my own blood; and how do I feel myself straitened with the desire that the hour of my Passion may soon arrive; for then man will know the love which I bear him! Hence St. John, speaking of that night in which Jesus began his Passion, writes: *Jesus knowing that His hour was come, that He should pass out of this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them unto the end.*<sup>3</sup> The Redeemer called that hour *His own hour*, because the time of his death was the time desired by him; as it was then that he wished to give mankind the last proof of his love, by dying for them upon a cross overwhelmed by sorrows.

But what could have ever induced a God to die as a malefactor upon a cross between two sinners, with such insult to his divine majesty? “Who did this?” asks St.

<sup>1</sup> *Love of God*, B. 12, c. 13.

<sup>2</sup> “Baptismo habeo baptizari; et quomodo coarctor usquedum perficiatur!”—*Luke*, xii. 50.

<sup>3</sup> “Sciens Jesus quia venit hora ejus, ut transeat ex hoc mundo ad Patrem, cum dilexisset suos, . . . in finem dilexit eos.”—*John*, xiii. 1.

Bernard; he answers, "It was love, careless of its dignity."<sup>1</sup> Ah, love indeed, when it tries to make itself known, does not seek what is becoming to the dignity of the lover, but what will serve best to declare itself to the object loved. St. Francis of Paula therefore had good reason to cry out at the sight of a crucifix, "O charity, O charity, O charity!" And in like manner, when we look upon Jesus on the cross, we should all exclaim, O love, O love, O love!

Ah, if faith had not assured us of it, who could ever have believed that a God, almighty, most happy, and the Lord of all, should have condescended to love man to such an extent that he seems to go out of himself for the love of him? We have seen Wisdom itself, that is the Eternal Word, become foolish through the excessive love he bore to man! So spoke St. Laurence Justinian: "We see Wisdom itself infatuated through excess of love."<sup>2</sup> St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said the same: One day, being in ecstasy, she took a wooden crucifix in her hands, and then cried out: "Yes, my Jesus, Thou art mad with love: I repeat it, and I will say it forever: My Jesus, thou art mad with love." But no, says St. Denis the Areopagite; "no, it is not madness, but the ordinary effect of divine love, which makes him who loves go out of himself, in order to give himself up entirely to the object of his love: divine love causes ecstasy."<sup>3</sup>

Oh, if men would only pause and consider, looking at Jesus on the cross, the love that he has borne each one of them! "With what love," says St. Francis de Sales, "would not our souls become enkindled at the sight of those flames which are in the Redeemer's breast! And oh, what happiness, to be able to be consumed by that

<sup>1</sup> "Quis hoc fecit?—Fecit amor, dignitatis nescius."—*In Cant.* s. 61.

<sup>2</sup> "Vidimus Sapientiam amoris nimietate infatuatam."—*Serm. de Nat. D.*

<sup>3</sup> "Extasim facit divinus amor."—*De Div. Nom.* c. 4.

same fire with which our God burns for us! What joy, to be united to God by the chains of love!" St. Bonaventure called the wounds of Jesus Christ, wounds which pierce the most senseless hearts, and which inflame the most icy souls.<sup>1</sup> How many darts of love come forth from those wounds, to wound the hardest hearts! Oh, what flames issue from the burning heart of Jesus Christ to inflame the coldest souls! And chains, how many, from that wounded side, to bind the most stubborn wills!

The Venerable John of Avila, who was so possessed with the love of Jesus Christ that he never failed in any of his sermons to speak of the love which Jesus Christ bears towards us, in a treatise on the love which this most loving Redeemer has for men, has expressed himself in sentiments so full of the fire of devotion, and of such beauty, that I desire to insert them here. He says as follows:

"Thou, O Redeemer, hast loved man in such a manner, that whoso reflects upon this love cannot do less than love Thee; for Thy love offers violence to hearts: as the Apostle says: *The charity of Christ presseth us.*<sup>2</sup> The source of the love of Jesus Christ for men is his love for God. Hence he said on Maunday Thursday, *That the world may know that I love the Father, arise, let us go hence.*<sup>3</sup> But whither? To die for men upon the cross."

"No human intellect can conceive how strongly this fire burns in the heart of Jesus Christ. As he was commanded to suffer death once, so, had he been commanded to die a thousand times, his love had been sufficient to endure it. And if what he suffered for all men had been

<sup>1</sup> "Vulnera, corda saxea vulnerantia, et mentes congelatas inflammantia."—*Stim. div. am.* p. I, c. I.

<sup>2</sup> "Charitas Christi urget nos."—2 *Cor.* v. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Ut cognoscat mundus quia diligo Patrem, . . . surgite, eamus."—*John*, xiv. 31.



imposed upon him for the salvation of one single soul, he would have done the same for each in particular as he did for all. And as he remained three hours upon the cross, so, had it been necessary, his love would have made him remain there even to the day of judgment. So that Jesus Christ loved much more than he suffered. O divine love, how far greater wert thou than thou outwardly seemedst to be; for though so many wounds and bruises tell us of great love, still they do not tell all its greatness. There was far more within than that which appeared externally. That was but as a spark which bounded forth from the vast ocean of infinite love. This is the greatest mark of love, to lay down our life for our friends. But this was not a sufficient mark for Jesus Christ wherewith to express his love."

"This is the love which causes holy souls to lose themselves, and to stand amazed, when once they have been allowed to know it. From it spring those burning sentiments of ardor, the desire of martyrdom, joy in sufferings, exultation under the storms of distress, the force to walk on burning coals as if they were roses, a thirst for sufferings, rejoicing in that which the world dreads, embracing that which it abhors. St. Ambrose says that the soul which is espoused to Jesus Christ upon the cross, thinks nothing so glorious as to bear upon itself the marks of the crucified one."

"But how, O my lover, shall I repay this your love! It is right that blood should be compensated by blood. May I behold myself dyed in this blood and nailed to this cross! O holy cross, receive me also! O crown of thorns, enlarge thyself, that I too may place thee on my head! O nails, leave those innocent hands of my Lord, and come and pierce my heart with compassion and with love! For Thou, my Jesus, didst die, as St. Paul says, in order to gain dominion over the living and the dead, not by means of chastisements, but by love:" *For to this*

end Christ died and rose again: that He might be Lord both of the dead and of the living.<sup>1</sup>

“O robber of hearts, the strength of Thy love has broken the exceeding hardness of our hearts! Thou hast inflamed the whole world with Thy love. O most loving Lord, inebriate our hearts with this wine, consume them with this fire, pierce them with this dart of Thy love! Thy Cross is indeed an arrow which pierces hearts. May all the world know that my heart is smitten! O sweetest love, what hast Thou done? Thou hast come to heal me, and Thou hast wounded me. Thou hast come to teach me, and Thou hast made me well-nigh mad. O madness full of wisdom, may I never live without you! All, O Lord, that I behold upon the cross invites me to love Thee: the wood, the figure, the wounds of Thy body; and above all, Thy love, engages me to love Thee, and never to forget Thee more.”<sup>2</sup>

But in order to arrive at the perfect love of Jesus Christ, we must adopt the means. Behold, then, the means which St. Thomas Aquinas gives us:<sup>3</sup>

1. To have a constant remembrance of the benefits of God, both general and particular.

2. To consider the infinite goodness of God, who is ever waiting to do us good, and who ever loves us, and seeks from us our love.

3. To avoid even the smallest thing that could offend him.

4. To renounce all the sensible goods of this world, riches, honors, and sensual pleasures.

Father Tauler<sup>4</sup> says that meditation on the sacred Passion of Jesus Christ is a great means also for acquiring his perfect love.

<sup>1</sup> “In hoc enim Christus mortuus est et resurrexit, ut et mortuorum et vivorum dominetur.”—*Rom.* xiv. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Disc. on the Love of God.*

<sup>3</sup> *De Duob. Præc.* c. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.* 20.

Who can deny that, of all devotions, devotion to the Passion of Jesus Christ is the most useful, the most tender, the most agreeable to God, one that gives the greatest consolation to sinners, and at the same time most powerfully enkindles loving souls? Whence is it that we receive so many blessings, if it be not from the Passion of Jesus Christ? Whence have we hope of pardon, courage against temptations, confidence that we shall go to heaven? Whence are so many lights to know the truth, so many loving calls, so many spurings to change our life, so many desires to give ourselves up to God, except from the Passion of Jesus Christ? The Apostle therefore had but too great reason to declare him to be excommunicated who did not love Jesus Christ. *If any man love not our Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema.*<sup>1</sup>

St. Bonaventure says there is no devotion more fitted for sanctifying a soul than meditation on the Passion of Jesus Christ; whence he advises us to meditate every day upon the Passion, if we would advance in the love of God. "If you would make progress, meditate daily on the Passion of the Lord; for nothing works such an entire sanctification in the soul, as the meditation of the Passion of Christ."<sup>2</sup> And before him St. Augustine, as Bustis relates, said, that one tear shed in memory of the Passion is worth more than to fast weekly on bread and water for a year.<sup>3</sup> Wherefore the saints were always occupied in considering the sorrows of Jesus Christ: it was by this means that St. Francis of Assisi became a seraph.

<sup>1</sup> "Si quis non amat Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum, sit anathema."—I *Cor.* xvi. 22.

<sup>2</sup> "Si vis proficere, quotidie mediteris Domini passionem; nihil enim in anima ita operatur universalem sanctimoniam, sicut meditatio passionis Christi."

<sup>3</sup> "Magis meretur vel unam lacrymam emittens ob memoriam passionis Christi, quam si qualibet anni hebdomada in pane et aqua jejunaret."—*Rosar.* p. 2, s. 15.

He was one day found by a gentleman shedding tears, and crying out with a loud voice: being asked the cause, "I weep," he answered, "over the sorrows and ignominies of my Lord: and what causes me the greatest sorrow is, that men, for whom he suffered so much, live in forgetfulness of him." And on saying this he wept the more, so that this gentleman began also himself to weep. When the saint heard the bleating of a lamb, or saw anything which reminded him of the Passion of Jesus, he immediately shed tears. On another occasion, being sick, some one told him to read some pious book. "My book," he replied, "is Jesus crucified." Hence he did nothing but exhort his brethren to be ever thinking of the Passion of Jesus Christ. Tiepoli writes: "He who becomes not inflamed with the love of God by looking on Jesus dead upon the cross, will never love at all."

*Affections and Prayers.*

O Eternal Word! Thou hast spent three-and-thirty years in labors and fatigues; Thou hast given Thy life and Thy blood for man's salvation; in short, Thou hast spared nothing to make men love Thee; and how is it possible that there should be those who know this, and yet do not love Thee? O God, amongst these ungrateful ones I also may be numbered! I see the wrong I have done Thee; O my Jesus, have pity upon me! I offer Thee this ungrateful heart—ungrateful it is true, but penitent. Yes, I repent above every other evil, O my dear Redeemer, for having despised Thee! I repent, and I am sorry with my whole heart. O my soul, love a God who is bound like a criminal for thee; a God scourged like a slave for thee; a God made a mock-king for thee; a God, in short, dead upon a cross, as the vilest outcast for thee! Yes, my Saviour, my God, I love Thee, I love Thee! Bring continually to my remembrance, I beseech Thee, all that Thou hast suffered for me, so that I may never more forget to love Thee. O cords that bound my Jesus, bind me to Jesus; thorns that crowned my Jesus, pierce me with the love of Jesus; nails that transfixed my Jesus, nail me to the Cross of Jesus, that I may live and die united to Jesus. O blood

of Jesus, inebriate me with his holy love! O death of Jesus, make me die to every earthly affection! Pierced feet of my Lord, I embrace you; deliver me from hell, which I have deserved; my Jesus, in hell I could no more love Thee, and yet I desire to love Thee always. Save me, my dearest Saviour; bind me to Thyself, that I may never again lose Thee.

O Mary, refuge of sinners, and Mother of my Saviour! help a sinner who wishes to love God, and who recommends himself to thee; succor me for the love thou bearest to Jesus Christ.

## II.

How much Jesus Christ deserves to be Loved by us, on Account of the Love He has shown us in Instituting the most Holy Sacrament of the Altar.

*Jesus, knowing that His hour was come, that He should pass out of this world to the Father: having loved His own . . . He loved them unto the end.*<sup>1</sup> Our most loving Saviour, knowing that his hour was now come for leaving this earth, desired, before he went to die for us, to leave us the greatest possible mark of his love; and this was the gift of the most Holy Sacrament.

St. Bernardine of Sienna remarks, that men remember more continually and love more tenderly the signs of love which are shown to them in the hour of death.<sup>2</sup> Hence it is the custom that friends, when about to die, leave to those persons whom they have loved some gift, such as a garment or a ring, as a memorial of their affection. But what hast Thou, O my Jesus, left us, when quitting this world, in memory of Thy love? Not, indeed, a garment or a ring, but Thine own body, Thy blood, Thy soul, Thy divinity, Thy whole self, without

<sup>1</sup> "Sciens Jesus quia venit hora ejus, ut transeat ex hoc mundo ad Patrem, cum dilexisset suos qui erant in mundo, in finem dilexit eos."—*John*, xiii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> "Quæ in fine in signum amicitiae celebrantur, firmiter memoriae imprimuntur, et cariora tenentur."—*T.* ii. s. 54, a. 1, c. 1.

reserve. "He gave thee all," says St. John Chrysostom; "He left nothing for himself."<sup>1</sup>

The Council of Trent says,<sup>2</sup> that in this gift of the Eucharist Jesus Christ desired, as it were, to pour forth all the riches of the love he had for men. And the Apostle observes, that Jesus desired to bestow this gift upon men on the very night itself when they were planning his death: *The same night in which He was betrayed, He took bread; and giving thanks, broke and said: Take ye, and eat: this is My body.*<sup>3</sup> St. Bernardine of Sienna says, that Jesus Christ, burning with love for us, and not content with being prepared to give his life for us, was constrained by the excess of his love to work a greater work before he died; and this was to give his own body for our food.<sup>4</sup>

This Sacrament, therefore, was rightly named by St. Thomas, "*the Sacrament of love, the pledge of love.*"<sup>5</sup> Sacrament of love; for love was the only motive which induced Jesus Christ to give us in it his whole self. Pledge of love; so that if we had ever doubted his love, we should have in this sacrament a pledge of it: as if our Redeemer, in leaving us this gift, had said: O souls, if you ever doubt my love, behold, I leave you myself in this Sacrament: with such a pledge, you can never any more doubt that I love you, and love you to excess. But more, St. Bernard calls this sacrament "the love of loves;"<sup>6</sup> because this gift comprehends all the other gifts

<sup>1</sup> "Totum tibi dedit, nihil sibi reliquit."

<sup>2</sup> "Divitias divini sui erga homines amoris velut effudit."—*Sess.* xiii. c. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "In qua nocte tradebatur, accepit panem, et gratias agens fregit, et dixit: Accipite et manducate; hoc est corpus meum."—I *Cor.* xi. 23.

<sup>4</sup> "In illo fervoris excessu, quando paratus erat pro nobis mori, ab excessu amoris majus opus agere coactus est, quam umquam operatus fuit, dare nobis corpus in cibum."—*Loco cit.*

<sup>5</sup> "Sacramentum charitatis, Pignus charitatis."

<sup>6</sup> "Amor amorum."



bestowed upon us by our Lord,—creation, redemption, predestination to glory; so that the Eucharist is not only a pledge of the love of Jesus Christ, but of paradise, which he desires also to give us. “In which,” says the Church, “a pledge of future glory is given us.”<sup>1</sup> Hence St. Philip Neri could find no other name for Jesus Christ in the Sacrament save that of “love;” and so, when the holy Viaticum was brought to him, he was heard to exclaim, “Behold my love; give me my love.”

The prophet Isaias<sup>2</sup> desired that the whole world should know the tender inventions that our God has made use of, wherewith to make men love him. And who could ever have thought—if he himself had not done it—that the Incarnate Word would hide himself under the appearances of bread, in order to become himself our food? “Does it not seem folly,” says St. Augustine, “to say, Eat my flesh; drink my blood?”<sup>3</sup> When Jesus Christ revealed to his disciples the sacrament he desired to leave them, they could not bring themselves to believe him; and they left him, saying: *How can this Man give us His flesh to eat? . . . This saying is hard, and who can hear it?*<sup>4</sup> But that which men could neither conceive nor believe, the great love of Jesus Christ hath thought of and accomplished. *Take ye, and eat*, said he to his disciples before he went to die; and through them to us all. Receive and eat: but what food shall that be, O Saviour of the world, which Thou desirest to give us before Thou diest? *Take ye, and eat; this is my body.*<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “In quo . . . futuræ gloriæ nobis pignus datur.”

<sup>2</sup> *Isa.* xii. 4.

<sup>3</sup> “Nonne videtur insania: Manducate meam carnem, bibite meum sanguinem?”—*In Ps.* xxxiii. *en.* i.

<sup>4</sup> “Quomodo potest hic nobis carnem suam dare ad manducandum?—Durus est hic sermo; et quis potest eum audire?”—*John*, vi. 53, 61.

<sup>5</sup> “Accipite et manducate; hoc est corpus meum.”

This is not earthly food; it is I myself who give myself entirely to you.

And oh, with what desire does Jesus Christ pant to come into our souls in the Holy Communion! *With desire I have desired to eat this pasch with you before I suffer.*<sup>1</sup> So he spoke on that night in which he instituted this sacrament of love. *With desire I have desired:* so did the excessive love which he bore us cause him to speak, as St. Laurence Justinian remarks: "These are the words of most burning love."<sup>2</sup> And in order that every one might easily receive him, he desired to leave himself under the appearance of bread; for if he had left himself under the appearance of some rare or very costly food, the poor would have been deprived of him; but no, Jesus would hide himself under the form of bread, which costs but little, and can be found everywhere, in order that all in every country might be able to find him and receive him.

In order, then, to excite us to receive him in the Holy Communion, he not only exhorts us to do so by so many invitations,—*Come, eat My bread; and drink the wine which I have mingled for you;*<sup>3</sup> *Eat, O friends, and drink,*<sup>4</sup> speaking of this heavenly bread and wine,—but he even gives us a formal precept: *Take ye, and eat; this is My body.* And more than this; that we may go and receive him, he entices us with the promise of paradise. *He that eateth My flesh hath everlasting life. He that eateth this bread shall live forever.*<sup>5</sup> And still more, he threatens us with hell, and exclusion from paradise, if we refuse to communicate. *Except you eat the flesh of the Son of Man, you shall not have*

<sup>1</sup> "Desiderio desideravi hoc pascha manducare vobiscum."—*Luke*, xxii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "Flagrantissimæ charitatis est vox hæc."—*De Tr. Chr. Ag.* c. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Venite, comedite panem meum, et bibite vinum quod miscui vobis."—*Prov.* ix. 5.

<sup>4</sup> "Comedite, amici, et bibite."—*Cant.* v. 1.

<sup>5</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem, . . . habet vitam æternam.—Qui manducat hunc panem, vivet in æternum."—*John*, vi. 55, 59.

*life in you.*<sup>1</sup> These invitations, these promises, these threats, all proceed from the great desire he has to come to us in this sacrament.

But why is it that Jesus Christ so desires that we should receive him in the Holy Communion? Here is the reason. St. Denis says that love always sighs after and tends to union, and so also says St. Thomas, "Lovers desire of two to become one."<sup>2</sup> Friends who really love each other would like to be so united as to become one person. Now this is what the infinite love of God for man has done; that he would not only give us himself in the eternal kingdom, but even in this life would permit men to possess him in the most intimate union, by giving them himself, whole and entire, under the appearances of bread in the sacrament. He stands there as though behind a wall; and from thence he beholds, as it were, through a closed lattice: *Behold He standeth behind our wall, looking through the windows, looking through the lattices.*<sup>3</sup> It is true, we do not see him; but he sees us, and is there really present: he is present, in order that we may possess him: but he hides himself from us to make us desire him: and as long as we have not reached our true country, Jesus desires to give himself wholly to us, and to remain united with us.

He could not satisfy his love by giving himself to the human race by his Incarnation and by his Passion, dying for all men upon the cross; but he desired to find out a way whereby he might give himself entirely to each one of us in particular; and for this end he instituted the Sacrament of the Altar, in order to unite himself wholly to each: *He that eateth My flesh*, he said, *abideth in*

<sup>1</sup> "Nisi manducaveritis carnem Filii hominis, . . . non habebitis vitam in vobis."—*John*, vi. 54.

<sup>2</sup> "Amantes desiderant ex ambobus fieri unum."—I. 2, q. 28, a. 1.

<sup>3</sup> "En ipse stat post parietem nostrum respiciens per fenestras, prospiciens per cancellos."—*Cant.* ii. 9.

*me and I in him.*<sup>1</sup> In Holy Communion Jesus unites himself to the soul, and the soul to Jesus; and this is not a union of mere affection, but it is a true and real union. Hence St. Francis de Sales says: "In no other action can the Saviour be considered more tender or more loving than in this, in which he annihilates himself, so to say, and reduces himself to food, in order to penetrate our souls, and to unite himself to the hearts of his faithful."<sup>2</sup> St. John Chrysostom says, that Jesus Christ, through the ardent love which he bore us, desired so to unite himself to us, as to become one and the same thing with us. "He mingled himself with us, that we might be one thing; for this is the property of those who ardently love."<sup>3</sup>

"It was Thy wish, in short," says St. Laurence Justinian, "O God, enamoured of our souls, to make, by means of this sacrament, Thine own heart, by an inseparable union, one and the same heart with ours!"<sup>4</sup> St. Bernardine of Sienna adds, that "the gift of Jesus Christ to us as our food was the last step of his love; since he gives himself to us in order to unite himself wholly to us; in the same way as food becomes united with him who partakes of it."<sup>5</sup> Oh, how delighted is Jesus Christ to be united with our souls! He one day said to his beloved servant, Margaret of Ypres, after Communion, "See, my daughter, the beautiful union that exists between me

<sup>1</sup> "Qui manducat meam carnem, . . . in me manet, et ego in illo."  
—*John*, vi. 57.

<sup>2</sup> *Introd.* p. 2, *ch.* 21.

<sup>3</sup> "Semetipsum nobis immiscuit, ut unum quid simus; ardentem enim amantium hoc est."—*Ad pop. Ant. hom.* 61.

<sup>4</sup> "O quam mirabilis est dilectio tua, Domine Jesu, qui tuo corpori taliter nos incorporari voluisti, ut tecum unum cor et unam animam haberemus inseparabiliter colligatam!"—*De Inc. div. am.* c. 5.

<sup>5</sup> "Ultimus gradus amoris est, cum se dedit nobis in cibum; quia dedit se nobis ad omnimodam unionem, sicut cibus et cibans invicem uniuntur."—*T. ii. s.* 54, a. 4, c. i.

and thee: come, then, love me; and let us remain ever united in love, and let us never separate again."

We must, then, be persuaded that a soul can neither do, nor think of doing, anything which gives greater pleasure to Jesus Christ than to communicate frequently, with dispositions suitable to the great guest whom she has to receive into her heart. I have said *suitable*, not indeed *worthy* dispositions; for if worthy were necessary, who could ever communicate? Another God would alone be worthy to receive God. By *suitable*, I mean such dispositions as become a miserable creature, clothed with the unhappy flesh of Adam. Ordinarily speaking, it is sufficient if a person communicates in a state of grace, and with a great desire of growing in the love of Jesus Christ. St. Francis de Sales said, "It is by love alone that we must receive Jesus Christ in the Communion, since it is through love alone that he gives himself to us."<sup>1</sup> For the rest, with regard to the number of times a person should communicate, in this he should be guided by the advice of his spiritual Father. Nevertheless, we should be aware that no state of life or employment, neither the married state nor business, prevents frequent Communion, when the director thinks it advisable, as Pope Innocent XI. has declared in his decree of 1679, when he says, "Frequent Communion must be left to the judgment of the confessors . . . who, for lay persons in business, or in the marriage state, must recommend it according as they see it will be profitable for their salvation."<sup>2</sup>

We must next understand that there is nothing from which we can derive such profit as from the Communion. The Eternal Father has made Jesus Christ the possessor

<sup>1</sup> *Introd.* p. 2, *ch.* 21.

<sup>2</sup> "Frequens accessus (ad Eucharistiam) confessoriorum iudicio est relinquendus, qui, . . . laicis negotiatoribus et conjugatis, quod prospicient eorum saluti profuturum, id illis præscribere debebunt."

of all his own heavenly treasures. *The Father hath given all things into His hands.*<sup>1</sup> Hence, when Jesus Christ comes to a soul in Holy Communion, he brings with him boundless treasures of grace; and consequently after Communion we can justly say, *Now all good things came to me together with it.*<sup>2</sup> St. Denis says, that the Sacrament of the Eucharist is far more powerful for the sanctification of souls than all other spiritual means of grace;<sup>3</sup> and St. Vincent Ferrer, that one Communion does more for the soul than a week's fasting on bread and water.

In the first place, as the Council of Trent teaches, Communion is that great remedy which frees us from venial, and preserves us against mortal sins.<sup>4</sup> It is said "from daily faults;" because according to St. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> a man is excited by means of this sacrament to make acts of love, by which venial sins are forgiven. And it is said that "we are preserved from mortal sins, because Communion increases grace, which will preserve us from great faults. Hence Innocent III. says, that Jesus Christ delivered us from the power of sin by his Passion, but that by the Eucharist he delivers us from the power of sinning."<sup>6</sup>

This Sacrament, moreover, above all others, inflames our souls with divine love. *God is love.*<sup>7</sup> And he is a fire which consumes all earthly affections in our hearts. *He is a consuming fire.*<sup>8</sup> And for this very purpose,

<sup>1</sup> "Omnia dedit ei Pater in manus."—*John*, xiii. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Venerunt mihi omnia bona pariter cum illa."—*Wisd.* vii. 11.

<sup>3</sup> "Eucharistia maximam vim habet perficiendæ sanctitatis."

<sup>4</sup> "Antidotum quo liberemur a culpis quotidianis, et a peccatis mortalibus præservemur."—*Sess.* xiii. c. 2.

<sup>5</sup> P. 3, q. 79, a. 4.

<sup>6</sup> "Per crucis mysterium, eripuit nos a potestate peccati; per Eucharistiæ sacramentum, liberat nos a voluntate peccandi."—*De Alt. Myst.* l. 4, c. 44.

<sup>7</sup> "Deus charitas est."—I *John*, iv. 8.

<sup>8</sup> "Ignis consumens est."—*Deut.* iv. 24.



namely, to enkindle this fire, the Son of God came upon earth. *I am come to send fire on the earth;* and he added, that he desired nothing but to see this fire enkindled in our souls: *And what will I but that it be kindled?*<sup>1</sup> And oh, what flames of love does not Jesus Christ light up in the heart of every one who receives him devoutly in this sacrament! St. Catharine of Sienna once saw the Host in a priest's hand appearing as a globe of fire; and the saint was astonished that the hearts of all men were not burned up, and, as it were, reduced to ashes by such a flame. Such brilliant rays issued from the face of St. Rose of Lima after Communion, as to dazzle the eyes of those who saw her; and the heat from her mouth was so intense, that a hand held near it was scorched. It is related of St. Wenceslaus, that by merely visiting the churches where the Blessed Sacrament was kept, he was inflamed by such an ardor, that his servant who accompanied him did not feel the cold, if when walking on the snow he trod in the footsteps of the saint.

St. John Chrysostom says that the most Holy Sacrament is a burning fire; so that when we leave the altar we breathe forth flames of love, which make us objects of terror to hell.<sup>2</sup> The spouse of the Canticles says: *He brought me into the cellar of wine, He set in order charity in me.*<sup>3</sup> St. Gregory of Nyssa says that Communion is precisely this cellar of wine, in which the soul becomes so inebriated with divine love, that it forgets and loses sight of creatures; and this is that languishing with love of which the spouse again speaks: *Stay me up with*

<sup>1</sup> "Ignem veni mittere in terram; et quid volo, nisi ut accendatur?" —*Luke*, xii. 49.

<sup>2</sup> "Carbo est Eucharistia, quæ nos inflammat, ut tamquam leones ignem spirantes ab illa mensa recedamus, facti diabolo terribiles." —*Ad pop. Ant. hom.* 61.

<sup>3</sup> "Introduxit me in cellam vinariam, ordinavit in me charitatem." —*Cant.* ii. 4.

*flowers, compass me about with apples, because I languish with love.*<sup>1</sup>

Some one will say: "But this is the very reason why I do not communicate frequently, because I see that I am so cold in the love of God." Gerson answers such a one by saying: "Do you, therefore, because you are cold, willingly keep away from the fire? Rather, because you feel yourself cold, should you so much the more frequently approach this sacrament, if you really desire to love Jesus Christ." "Although it be with lukewarmness," wrote St. Bonaventure, "still approach, trusting in the mercy of God. The more one feels himself sick, the greater need has he of a physician."<sup>2</sup> In like manner, St. Francis de Sales: "Two sorts of persons ought to go frequently to Communion: the perfect, in order to remain so; and the imperfect, in order to be become perfect."<sup>3</sup> But for frequent Communion, it is at least necessary to have a great desire to become a saint and to grow in the love of Jesus Christ. Our Lord said once to St. Matilda: "When you go to Communion desire all the love which a soul has ever had for me, and I will receive your love according to your desire."<sup>4</sup>

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O God of love, O infinite lover, worthy of infinite love, tell me what more canst Thou invent to make us love Thee? It was not sufficient for Thee to become man, and to subject Thyself to all our miseries; not sufficient to shed all Thy blood for us in torments, and then to die overwhelmed with sorrow, upon a cross destined for the most shameful malefactors. Thou

<sup>1</sup> "Fulcite me floribus, stipate me malis, quia amore langueo."—*Cant.* ii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Licet tepide, tamen confidens de misericordia Dei accedat; tanto magis æger necesse habet requirere medicum, quanto magis senserit se ægrotum."—*De Prof. rel.* l. 2, c. 77.

<sup>3</sup> *Introd.* p. 2. ch. 21.

<sup>4</sup> *Spir. Grat.* l. 3, c. 22.

didst, at last, oblige Thyself to be hidden under the species of bread and wine, to become our food, and so united with each one of us. Tell me, I repeat, what more canst Thou invent to make Thyself loved by us? Ah, wretched shall we be if we do not love Thee in this life! And when we shall have entered into eternity, what remorse shall we not feel for not having loved Thee! My Jesus, I will not die without loving Thee, and loving Thee exceedingly! I am heartily sorry, and am pained for having so greatly offended Thee. But now I love Thee above all things. I love Thee more than myself, and I consecrate to Thee all my affections. Do Thou, who inspirest me with this desire, give me also grace to accomplish it. My Jesus, my Jesus, I desire nothing of Thee but Thyself. Now that Thou hast drawn me to Thy love, I leave all, I renounce all, and I bind myself to Thee: Thou alone art sufficient for me.

O Mary, Mother of God, pray to Jesus for me, and make me a saint! Add this also to the many wonders thou hast done in changing sinners into saints.

### III.

**The Great Confidence we ought to have in the Love which Jesus Christ has shown us and in all He has done for us.**

David placed all his hope of salvation in his future Redeemer, and said: *Into Thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit; Thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, the God of truth.*

But how much more ought we to place our confidence in Jesus Christ, now that he has come, and has accomplished the work of redemption! Hence each one of us should say, and repeat again and again with greater confidence: *Into Thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit; Thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, the God of truth.*<sup>1</sup>

If we have great reason to fear everlasting death on account of our sins against God, we have, on the other hand, far greater reason to hope for everlasting life through the merits of Jesus Christ, which are infinitely more powerful for our salvation than our sins are for

<sup>1</sup> "In manus tuas commendo spiritum meum; redemisti me, Domine Deus veritatis."—*Ps.* xxx. 6.

our damnation. We have sinned, and have deserved hell; but the Redeemer has come to take upon himself all our offences, and to make satisfaction for them by His sufferings: *Surely He hath borne our infirmities, and carried our sorrows.*<sup>1</sup>

In the same unhappy moment in which we sinned, God had already written against us the sentence of eternal death; but what has our merciful Redeemer done? *Blotting out the handwriting of the decree which was against us, . . . the same He took out of the way, fastening it to the cross.*<sup>2</sup> He cancelled by his blood the decree of our condemnation, and then fastened it to the cross, in order that, when we look at the sentence of our damnation for the sins we have committed, we may at the same time see the cross on which Jesus Christ died and blotted out this sentence by his blood, and so regain hope of pardon and everlasting life.

Oh, how far more powerfully does the blood of Jesus Christ speak for us, and obtain mercy for us from God, than did the blood of Abel speak against Cain! *You are come to Jesus the mediator of the New Testament, and to the sprinkling of blood, which speaketh better than that of Abel.*<sup>3</sup> As if the Apostle had said, "O sinners, happy are you to be able, after you have sinned, to have recourse to Jesus crucified, who has shed all his blood, in order to become the mediator of peace between sinners and God, and to obtain pardon for them! Your iniquities cry out against you, but the blood of the Redeemer pleads in your favor; and the divine justice cannot but be appeased by the voice of this precious blood."

<sup>1</sup> "Vere languores nostros ipse tulit, et dolores nostros ipse portavit."—*Isa.* liii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Delens quod adversus nos erat chirographum decreti, quod erat contrarium nobis, et ipsum tulit de medio, affigens illud cruci."—*Col.* ii. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Accessistis ad . . . Mediatorem Jesum, et sanguinis aspersionem melius loquentem quam Abel."—*Heb.* xii. 22, 24.

It is true that we shall have to render a rigorous account to the Eternal Judge of all our sins. But who is to be our Judge? *The Father hath committed all judgment to the Son.*<sup>1</sup> Let us comfort ourselves, the Eternal Father has committed our judgment to our own Redeemer. Therefore St. Paul encourages us, saying, *Who is he that shall condemn? Christ Jesus who died, . . . who also maketh intercession for us.*<sup>2</sup> Who is the judge to condemn us? It is that same Saviour who, in order not to condemn us to everlasting death, vouchsafed himself to be condemned and to die; and not content with this, at this moment intercedes with his Father for our salvation. Hence St. Thomas of Villanova says: "What do you fear, O sinner, if you detest your sin? How will he condemn you, who died in order not to condemn you? how will he cast you from him, if you return to his feet, he who came from heaven to seek you at the very time you were flying from him?"<sup>3</sup>

And if we fear on account of our frailty to fall under the assaults of our enemies, against whom we must continually wage war, behold what we have to do, as the Apostle admonishes us: *Let us run to the fight proposed unto us: looking on Jesus the author and finisher of faith, who having joy proposed unto Him, underwent the cross, despising the shame.*<sup>4</sup> Let us go out to the battle with great courage, looking at Jesus crucified, who from his cross offers us his assistance, the victory, and crown. In past times we fell into sin because we left off looking at the

<sup>1</sup> "Pater . . . omne judicium dedit Filio."—*John*, v. 22.

<sup>2</sup> "Quis est qui condemnet? Christus Jesus, qui mortuus est, . . . qui etiam interpellat pro nobis."—*Rom.* viii. 34.

<sup>3</sup> "Quid times, peccator? Quomodo te damnabit pœnitentem, qui moritur ne damneris? Quomodo te abjiciet redeuntem, qui de cœlo venit quærere te?"—*Tr. de Adv. D.*

<sup>4</sup> "Curramus ad propositum nobis certamen, aspicientes in Auctorem fidei et consummatorem Jesum, qui, proposito sibi gaudio, sustinuit crucem, confusione contempta."—*Heb.* xii. 1, 2.

wounds and the pains endured by our Redeemer, and so we did not have recourse to him for help. But if for the future we set before our eyes all he has suffered for love of us, and how he ever stands ready to assist us when we have recourse to him, it is certain that we shall not be conquered by our enemies. St. Teresa said, with her wonted generosity, "I do not understand the fears of certain persons, who say, The devil, the devil, so long as we can say, God, God, and make Satan tremble."<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, the saint assures us, that if we do not place all our confidence in God, all our own exertions will be of little or no avail. "All our exertions," these are her own words, "are of little use, if we do not give up entirely all trust in ourselves, and place it altogether in God."<sup>2</sup> Oh, what two great mysteries of hope and love for us are the Passion of Jesus Christ and the Sacrament of the Altar!—mysteries, which we could have never believed, had not faith assured us of them. That God Almighty should deign to become man, shed all his blood, and die of sorrow upon a cross, and why? To pay for our sins, and gain salvation for us rebellious worms! And then his own very body, once sacrificed upon the Cross for us, this he vouchsafes to give us for our food, in order to become wholly united with us! O God, how should not these two mysteries consume with love the hearts of all men! And what sinner is there, be he ever so abandoned, who can despair of pardon, if he repent of the evil he has done, when he sees a God so full of love for men, and so inclined to do them good? Hence St. Bonaventure, full of confidence, said, "I will have great confidence, firmly hoping that he who has done and suffered so much for my salvation will deny me nothing that I have need of."<sup>3</sup> How can he refuse to

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Life*, ch. 8.

<sup>3</sup> "Fiducialiter agam, immobiliter sperans nihil ad salutem necessarium ab eo negandum, qui tanta pro mea salute fecit et pertulit"



give me the graces necessary for my salvation, who has done and suffered so much to save me?

*Let us go therefore* (the Apostle exhorts us) *with confidence to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace in seasonable aid.*<sup>1</sup> The throne of grace is the cross on which Jesus sits to dispense graces and mercy to all who come to him. But we must quickly have recourse to him, if we would find seasonable aid for our salvation: for there will come a time perhaps when we shall no longer be able to find it. Let us go quickly then and embrace the cross of Jesus Christ, and let us go with great confidence. Let us not be frightened by the sight of our miseries; in Jesus crucified we shall find all riches, all grace: *In all things you are made rich in Him, . . . so that nothing is wanting to you in any grace.*<sup>2</sup> The merits of Jesus Christ have enriched us with all the divine treasures, and have made us capable of every grace we can desire.

St. Leo says, "that Jesus has brought us by his death more good than the devil has done us harm by sin."<sup>3</sup> And by these words he explains what St. Paul said before him, *that the gift of redemption is greater than sin*: grace has overcome the offence. *Not as the offence, so also is the gift: where sin abounded, grace hath abounded more.*<sup>4</sup> From this the Saviour encourages us to hope for every favor and every grace through his merits. And see how he teaches us the way to obtain all we want from his Eternal Father: *Amen, amen, I say to you, if you ask the Father*

<sup>1</sup> "Adeamus ergo cum fiducia ad thronum gratiæ, ut misericordiam consequamur, et gratiam inveniamus in auxilio opportuno."—*Heb.* iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> "In omnibus divites facti estis in illo, . . . ita ut nihil vobis desit in ulla gratia."—*I Cor.* i. 5, 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Ampliora adepti sumus per Christi gratiam, quam per diaboli amiseramus invidiam."—*De Asc.* s. 1.

<sup>4</sup> "Non sicut delictum, ita et donum: . . . ubi abundavit delictum, superabundavit gratia."—*Rom.* v. 15.

*anything in My name, He will give it you.*<sup>1</sup> Whatever you desire, he says, ask for it of the Father in my name, and I promise you that you shall be heard. And indeed how shall the Father be able to deny us, when he has given us his only-begotten Son, whom he loves as himself? *He that spared not even His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how hath He not also, with Him, given us all things?*<sup>2</sup> The Apostle says *all things*; so that no grace is excepted, neither pardon, nor perseverance, nor holy love, nor perfection, nor paradise, “all, all, he has given us.” But we must pray to him. God is all liberality to those who call upon him: *Rich unto all that call upon Him.*<sup>3</sup>

I will again quote here many other beautiful thoughts of the Venerable John of Avila, which he has left us in his letters, on the great confidence we should have in the merits of Jesus Christ:

“Do not forget that Jesus Christ is the mediator between the Eternal Father and ourselves; and that we are beloved by him, and united to him by so strong bonds of love that nothing can break them, so long as a man does not himself dissolve them by some mortal sin. The blood of Jesus cries out, and asks mercy for us; and cries out so loudly that the noise of our sins is not heard. The death of Jesus Christ hath put to death our sins: *O Death, I will be thy death!*<sup>4</sup> Those who are lost are not lost for want of means of satisfaction, but because they would not avail themselves of the sacraments as the means of profiting by the satisfaction made by Jesus Christ.

<sup>1</sup> “Amen, amen, dico vobis: si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis.”—*John*, xvi. 23.

<sup>2</sup> “Pro nobis omnibus tradidit illum; quomodo non etiam cum illo omnia nobis donavit?”—*Rom.* viii. 32.

<sup>3</sup> “Dives in omnes qui invocant illum.”—*Ibid.* x. 12.

<sup>4</sup> “O mors! ero mors tua.”—*Osee*, xiii. 14.

“Jesus has taken upon himself the affair of remedying our evils, as if it had been personally his own affair. So that he has called our sins his own, although he did not commit them, and has sought pardon for them; and with the most tender love has prayed, as if he were praying for himself, that all who should have recourse to him might become objects of love. And as he sought, so he found, because God has so ordained that Jesus and ourselves should be so united in one, that either he and we should be loved, or he and we hated: and since Jesus is not or cannot be hated, in the same way, if we remain united by love to Jesus, we shall be also loved. By his being loved by God, we are also loved, seeing that Jesus Christ can do more to make us loved than we can do to make ourselves hated; since the Eternal Father loves Jesus Christ far more than he hates sinners.

“Jesus said to his Father: *Father, I will that where I am, they also whom Thou hast given Me may be with Me.*<sup>1</sup> Love has conquered hatred; and thus we have been pardoned and loved, and are secure of never being abandoned, so strong is the tie of love that binds us. The Lord said by Isaias: *Can a woman forget her infant? And if she should forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven Thee in My hands.*<sup>2</sup> He has graven us in his hands with his own blood. Thus we should not trouble ourselves about anything, since everything is ordained by those hands which were nailed to the cross in testimony of the love he bears us.

“Nothing can so trouble us on which Jesus Christ cannot reassure us. Let the sins I have committed surround me, let the devils lay snares for me, let fears for

<sup>1</sup> “Pater! quos dedisti mihi, volo ut, ubi sum ego, et illi sint mecum.”—*John*, xvii. 24.

<sup>2</sup> “Numquid oblivisci potest mulier infantem suum, ut non misereatur filio uteri sui? et si illa oblita fuerit, ego tamen non obliviscar tui.”—*Isa.* xlix. 15.

the future accuse me, by demanding mercy of the most tender Jesus Christ, who has loved me even until death, I cannot possibly lose confidence; for I see myself so highly valued, that God gave himself for me. O my Jesus, sure haven for those who seek Thee in time of peril! O most watchful Pastor, he deceives himself who does not trust in Thee, if only he has the will to amend his life! Therefore Thou hast said: I am here, fear not; I am he who afflicts and who consoles. Some from time to time I place in desolations, which seem equal to hell itself; but after a while I bring them out and console them. I am thine advocate, who have made thy cause my own. I am thy surety, who am come to pay thy debts. I am thy Lord, who have redeemed thee with my blood, not in order to abandon thee, but to enrich thee, having bought thee at a great price. How shall I fly from him who seeks me, when I went forth to meet those who sought to outrage me? I did not turn away my face from him who struck me; and shall I from him who would adore me? How can my children doubt that I love them, seeing that out of love to them I placed myself in the hands of my enemies? Whom have I ever despised that loved me? Whom have I ever abandoned that sought my aid? Even I go seeking those that do not seek me.”<sup>1</sup>

If you believe that the Eternal Father has given you his Son, believe also that he will give you everything else which is infinitely less than his Son. Do not think that Jesus Christ is forgetful of you, since he has left you, as the greatest memorial and pledge of his love, himself in the Most Holy Sacrament of the Altar.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my Jesus, my love, what joyful hope does Thy Passion give me! How can I possibly fear not to receive from an Almighty

<sup>1</sup> *Part 2, Ep. 48.*

God who has given me all his blood, the pardon of my sins, paradise, and all other graces that I require! Ah, my Jesus, my hope and my love, Thou, in order that I might not perish, didst give Thy life; I love Thee above every good, my Redeemer and my God. Thou gavest Thyself entirely to me; I give Thee my whole will, and with it I repeat that I love Thee, and I will always say, I love Thee, I love Thee. So I always desire to say in this life so I wish to die, breathing forth my last sigh with this dear word on my lips, My God, I love Thee; and from that moment I may commence a love towards Thee which shall last forever, and without cessation for all eternity. I love Thee, then; and because I love Thee, I repent above all things for having offended Thee. In order not to lose a passing satisfaction, I have been willing, wretch that I am, to lose Thee so often, O infinite good! This thought torments me more than any pain: but it is a consolation to me to think that I have to do with infinite goodness, that knows not how to despise a heart that truly loves. Oh, that I could die for Thee, who didst die for me! My dear Redeemer, I surely hope of Thee eternal salvation in the life to come, and in this life I hope for holy perseverance in Thy love; and therefore I propose always to ask it of Thee. And do Thou, by the merits of Thy death, give me perseverance in praying to Thee. This too I ask and hope of thee, O Mary my Queen!

#### IV.

##### How much we are obliged to love Jesus Christ.

Jesus Christ as God has a claim on all our love; but by the love which he has shown us, he wished to put us, so to speak, under the necessity of loving him, at least in gratitude for all that he has done and suffered for us. He has greatly loved us, that we might love him greatly. "Why does God love us, but that he may be loved?"<sup>1</sup> wrote St. Bernard. And Moses had said the same before him: *And now, Israel, what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but that thou fear the Lord thy God . . . and love Him?*<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Non ad aliud amat, nisi ut ametur."—*In Cant.* s. 83.

<sup>2</sup> "Et nunc, Israel, quid Dominus Deus tuus petit a te, nisi ut timeas Dominum Deum tuum, . . . et diligas eum?"—*Deut.* x. 12.

Therefore the first command which he gave us was this: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with Thy whole heart.*<sup>1</sup> And St. Paul says, that love is the fulfilling of the law: *Love is the fulfilling of the law.*<sup>2</sup> For “fulfilling” the Greek text has the “embracing of the law;”<sup>3</sup> love embraces the entire law.

Who, indeed, at the sight of a crucified God dying for our love can refuse to love him? Those thorns, those nails, that cross, those wounds, and that blood, call upon us, and irresistibly urge us, to love him who has loved us so much. One heart is too little wherewith to love this God so enamoured of us. In order to requite the love of Jesus Christ, it would require another God to die for his love. “Ah, why,” exclaims St. Francis de Sales, “do we not throw ourselves on Jesus Christ, to die on the cross with him who was pleased to die there for the love of us?”<sup>4</sup> The Apostle clearly impresses on us that Jesus Christ died for us for this end, that we might no longer live for ourselves, but solely for that God who died for us: *Christ died for all, that they also who live may not now live to themselves, but unto Him who died for them.*<sup>5</sup>

And the recommendation of Ecclesiasticus is here in point: *Forget not the kindness of thy surety; for He hath given His life for thee.*<sup>6</sup> Be not unmindful of him who has stood surety for thee; who, to satisfy for thy sins, was willing to pay off, by his death, the debt of punishment due from thee. Oh, how desirous is Jesus Christ that we should continually remember his Passion! and

<sup>1</sup> “Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo.”—*Deut.* vi. 5.

<sup>2</sup> “Plenitudo legis est dilectio.”—*Rom.* xiii. 10.

<sup>3</sup> “Completio legis.”

<sup>4</sup> *Love of God*, B. 7, ch. 8.

<sup>5</sup> “Pro omnibus mortuus est Christus, ut et qui vivunt, jam non sibi vivant, sed ei qui pro ipsis mortuus est.”—*2 Cor.* v. 15.

<sup>6</sup> “Gratiam fidejussoris ne obliviscaris; dedit enim pro te animam suam.”—*Ecclus.* xxix. 20.



how it saddens him to see that we are so unmindful of it ! Should a person endure for one of his friends affronts, blows, and imprisonment, how afflicting would it be for him to know that that friend afterwards never gave it a thought, and cared not even to hear it spoken of ! On the contrary, how gratified would he be to know that his friend constantly spoke of it with the warmest gratitude, and often thanked him for it. So it is pleasing to Jesus Christ when we preserve in our minds a grateful and loving recollection of the sorrows and death which he underwent for us. Jesus Christ was the desire of all the ancient Fathers; he was the desire of all nations before he was yet come upon earth. Now, how much more ought he to be our only desire and our only love, now that we know that he is really come, and are aware how much he has done and suffered for us,—so that he even died upon the cross for love of us !

For this purpose he instituted the Sacrament of the Holy Eucharist on the day preceding his death, and gave us the injunction, that as often as we should be nourished with his most sacred flesh, we should be mindful of his death: *Take ye, and eat; this is My body. . . . This do for a commemoration of Me, etc. For as often as you shall eat this bread and drink the chalice, you shall show the death of the Lord until He come.*<sup>1</sup> Wherefore the holy Church prays: “O God ! who under this wonderful Sacrament hast left us a memorial of Thy Passion,”<sup>2</sup> etc. And she also sings: “O sacred banquet, in which Christ is taken, the memory of his Passion is renewed,”<sup>3</sup> etc. Hence we may

<sup>1</sup> “Accipite et manducate; hoc est corpus meum: . . . hoc facite in meam commemorationem. . . . Quotiescumque enim manducabitis panem hunc, . . . mortem Domini annuntiabitis.”—I Cor. xi. 24.

<sup>2</sup> “Deus qui nobis sub Sacramento mirabili passionis tuæ memoriam reliquisti. . . .”

<sup>3</sup> “O sacrum convivium, in quo Christus sumitur, recolitur memoria passionis ejus ! . . .”

gather how pleasing to Jesus Christ are they who think frequently of his Passion, since it was for this very purpose that he left himself in the holy Sacrament upon our altars, in order that we might bear in continual and grateful remembrance all that he suffered for us, and by this means evermore increase our love towards him. St. Francis de Sales called Mount Calvary "the mountain of lovers." It is impossible to remember that mount and not love Jesus Christ, who died there for love of us.

O God ! and how is it that men do not love this God who has done so much to be loved by men ! Before the Incarnation of the Word, man might have doubted whether God loved him with a true love; but after the coming of the Son of God, and after his dying for the love of men, how can we possibly doubt of his love ? "O man," says St. Thomas of Villanova, "look on that cross, on those torments, and that cruel death, which Jesus Christ has suffered for thee: after so great and so many tokens of his love, thou canst no longer entertain a doubt that he loves thee, and loves thee exceedingly." And St. Bernard says, that "the cross and every wound of our Blessed Redeemer cry aloud to make us understand the love he bears us." <sup>1</sup>

In this grand mystery of man's redemption, we must consider how Jesus employed all his thoughts and zeal to discover every means of making himself loved by us. Had he merely wished to die for our salvation, it would have been sufficient had he been slain by Herod with the other children; but no, he chose before dying to lead, during thirty-three years, a life of hardship and suffering; and during that time, with a view to win our love, he appeared in several different guises. First of all, as a poor child born in a stable; then as a little boy helping

<sup>1</sup> "Testis crux, testes dolores, testis amara mors quam pro te sustinuit."—*Dom. 17 p. Pent. conc. 3.*

in the workshop; and finally, as a criminal executed on a cross. But before dying on the cross, we see him in many different states, one and all calculated to excite our compassion, and to make himself loved: in agony in the garden, bathed from head to foot in a sweat of blood; afterwards, in the court of Pilate, torn with scourges; then treated as a mock-king, with a reed in his hand, a ragged garment of purple on his shoulders, and a crown of thorns on his head; then dragged publicly through the streets to death, with the cross upon his shoulders; and at length, on the hill of Calvary, suspended on the cross by three iron nails. Tell me, does he merit our love or not, this God who has vouchsafed to endure all these torments, and to use so many means in order to captivate our love? Father John Rigouleux used to say: "I would spend my life in weeping for love of a God whose love induced him to die for the salvation of men."

"Love is a great thing,"<sup>1</sup> says St. Bernard. A great thing, a precious thing is love. Solomon, speaking of the divine wisdom, which is holy charity, called it an infinite treasure; because he that possesses charity is made partaker of the friendship of God: *For she is an infinite treasure to men, which they that use become the friends of God.*<sup>2</sup>

The angelic Doctor, St. Thomas, says, that charity is not only the queen of all virtues, but that, wherever she reigns, she draws along with her, as it were, in her train, all other virtues, and directs them all so as to bring us in closer union with God; but charity is properly that which unites us with God. As St. Bernard tells us: "Charity is a virtue uniting us with God."<sup>3</sup> And, indeed, it is over and over again signified in the holy

<sup>1</sup> "Magna res amor."—*In Cant.* s. 83.

<sup>2</sup> "Infinitus enim thesaurus est hominibus, quo qui usi sunt, participes facti sunt amicitiae Dei."—*Wisd.* vii. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Charitas est virtus conjungens nos Deo."

Scriptures, that God loves whoever loves him; *I love them that love Me.*<sup>1</sup> *If any one loves me . . . My Father will love Him; and We will come to him, and will make Our abode with him.*<sup>2</sup> *He that abideth in charity abideth in God, and God in him.*<sup>3</sup> Behold the beautiful union which charity produces; it unites the soul to God. Moreover, love supplies strength to practise and to suffer everything for God: *Love is strong as death.*<sup>4</sup> St. Augustine writes: "Nothing is so hard that cannot be subdued by the fire of love."<sup>5</sup> Wherefore the saint says, that where we love, either the labor is not felt, or if felt, the labor itself is loved: "In that which is loved, either there is no labor, or the labor is loved."<sup>6</sup>

Let us hear from St. John Chrysostom what are the effects of divine love in those souls in which it reigns: "When the love of God has taken possession of a soul, it produces an insatiable desire to work for the beloved; insomuch that however many and however vast the works which she does, and however prolonged the duration of her service, all seems nothing in her eyes, and she is afflicted at doing so little for God; and were it permitted her to die and consume herself for him, she would be most happy. Hence it is that she esteems herself an unprofitable servant in all that she does; because she is instructed by love to know what God deserves, and sees by this clear light all the defects of her actions, and finds in them motives for confusion and pain, well aware how mean is all that she can do for so great a Lord."

<sup>1</sup> "Ego diligentes me diligo."—*Prov.* viii. 17.

<sup>2</sup> "Si quis diligit me, . . . Pater meus diligit eum, et ad eum veniemus, et mansionem apud eum faciemus."—*John*, xiv. 23.

<sup>3</sup> "Qui manet in charitate, in Deo manet, et Deus in eo."—*I John*, iv. 16.

<sup>4</sup> "Fortis est ut mors dilectio."—*Cant.* viii. 6.

<sup>5</sup> "Nihil tam durum, quod amoris igne non vincatur."—*De Mor. Eccl.* cat. c. 22.

<sup>6</sup> "In eo quod amatur, aut non laboratur, aut et labor amatur."—*De Bono vid.* c. 21.

“Oh! how those persons delude themselves,” says St. Francis de Sales, “who place virtue in anything else but in loving God! Some,” writes the saint, “put perfection in austerities, others in alms, others in prayer, others in frequenting the holy sacraments. For my part, I know of no other perfection than that of loving God with our whole heart; because all the other virtues, without love, are but a mere heap of stones. And if we do not perfectly enjoy this holy love, the fault lies with us, because we do not, once for all, come to the conclusion of giving up ourselves wholly to God.”<sup>1</sup>

Our Lord said one day to St. Teresa, “Everything which does not give pleasure to me is vanity.” Would that all understood well this great truth! *For the rest, one thing is necessary.*<sup>2</sup> It is not necessary to be rich in this world, to gain the esteem of others, to lead a life of ease, to enjoy dignities, to have a reputation for learning; it is only necessary to love God and to do his will. For this single end has he created us, for this he preserves our life; and thus only can we gain admittance into Paradise. *Put me as a seal upon thy heart, as a seal upon thy arm.*<sup>3</sup> The Lord thus speaks to all his espoused souls. Put me as a seal upon thy heart and upon thine arm, in order that all thy desires and actions may tend to me; upon thy heart, that no other love but mine may enter there upon thine arm, in order that all thou dost may have me for its sole object. Oh, how quickly does that soul speed onwards to perfection, that in all its actions regards but Jesus crucified, and has no other pretension than to gratify him!

To acquire, then, a true love of Jesus Christ should be our only care. The masters of spiritual life describe the

<sup>1</sup> *Spirit*, p. I, ch. 25.

<sup>2</sup> “Porro unum est necessarium.”—*Luke*, x. 42.

<sup>3</sup> “Pone me ut signaculum super cor tuum, ut signaculum super brachium tuum.”—*Cant.* viii. 6.

marks of true love. Love, say they, is *fearful*, and its fear is none other than that of displeasing God. It is *generous*, because, trusting in God, it is never daunted even at the greatest enterprises for his glory. It is *strong*, because it subdues all its evil appetites, even in the midst of the most violent temptations, and of the darkest desolations. It is *obedient*, because it immediately flies to execute the divine will. It is *pure*, because it loves God alone, and for the sole reason that he deserves to be loved. It is *ardent*, because it would inflame all mankind, and willingly see them consumed with divine love. It is *inebriating*, for it causes the soul to live as it were out of itself, as if it no longer saw, nor felt, nor had any more senses left for earthly things, bent wholly on loving God. It is *unitive*, by producing a strict union between the will of the creature and the will of the Creator. It is *longing*, for it fills the soul with desires of leaving this world, to fly and unite itself perfectly with God in its true and happy country, where it may love him with all its strength.

But no one teaches us so well the real characteristics and practice of charity as the great preacher of charity, St. Paul. In his first epistle to the Corinthians, he says, in the first place, that without charity man is nothing, and that nothing profits him: *If I should have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing, And if I should distribute all my goods to feed the poor, and if I should deliver my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.*<sup>1</sup> So that even should a person have faith strong enough to remove mountains, like St. Gregory Thaumaturgus, but had not charity, it would

<sup>1</sup> “Et si habuero omnem fidem, ita ut montes transferam, charitatem autem non habuero, nihil sum. Et si distribuero in cibos pauperum omnes facultates meas; et si tradidero corpus meum, ita ut ardeam, charitatem autem non habuero, nihil mihi prodest.”—1 Cor. xiii. 2, 3.



profit him nothing. Should he give all his goods to the poor, and even willingly suffer martyrdom, but remain void of charity,—should he do it, that is, for any other end than that of pleasing God, it would profit him nothing at all. Then St. Paul gives us the marks of true charity, and at the same time teaches us the practice of those virtues which are the daughters of charity; and he goes on to say : *Charity is patient, is kind ; charity envieth not, dealeth not perversely ; is not puffed up, is not ambitious ; seeketh not her own ; is not provoked to anger, thinketh no evil ; rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth with the truth ; beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.*<sup>1</sup>

Let us therefore, in the present book, proceed to consider these holy practices, that we may thus see if the love which we owe to Jesus Christ truly reigns within us; as likewise that we may understand in what virtues we should chiefly exercise ourselves, in order to persevere and advance in this holy love.

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O most lovely and most loving Heart of Jesus, miserable is the heart which does not love Thee ! O God, for the love of men Thou didst die on the cross, helpless and forsaken, and how then can men live so forgetful of Thee ? O love of God ! O ingratitude of man ! O men, O men ! do but cast one look on the innocent Son of God, agonizing on the cross, and dying for you, in order to satisfy the divine justice for your sins, and by this means to allure you to love him. Observe how, at the same time, he prays his eternal Father to forgive you. Behold him, and love him. Ah, my Jesus, how small is the number of those that love Thee ! Wretched too am I ; for I also have lived so

<sup>1</sup> “ *Charitas patiens est, benigna est ; charitas non æmulatur, non agit perperam, non inflatur, non est ambitiosa, non quærit quæ sua sunt, non irritatur ; non cogitat malum, non gaudet super iniquitate, congaudet autem veritati ; omnia suffert, omnia credit, omnia sperat, omnia sustinet.*”—1 Cor. xiii. 4-7.

many years unmindful of Thee, and have grievously offended Thee, my beloved Redeemer! It is not so much the punishment I have deserved that makes me weep, as the love which Thou hast borne me. O sorrows of Jesus! O ignominies of Jesus! O wounds of Jesus! O death of Jesus! O love of Jesus! rest deeply engraved in my heart, and may your sweet recollection be forever fixed there, to wound me and inflame me continually with love. I love Thee, my Jesus; I love Thee, my sovereign good; I love Thee, my love and my all; I love Thee, and I will love Thee forever. Oh, suffer me never more to forsake Thee, never more to lose Thee! Make me entirely Thine; do so by the merits of Thy death. In this I firmly trust.

And I have a great confidence also in thy intercession, O Mary, my Queen; make me love Jesus Christ and make me also love thee, my Mother and my hope!



*"Si quis non amat Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum, sit anathema!"*

"If any man love not our Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema!"  
—I Cor. xvi. 22.

*"Charitas patiens est, benigna est; charitas non æmulatur, non agit perperam, non inflatur, non est ambitiosa, non quærit quæ sua sunt, non irritatur; non cogitat malum, non gaudet super iniquitate, congaudet autem veritati; omnia suffert, omnia credit, omnia sperat, omnia sustinet."*

"Charity is patient, is kind; charity envieth not, dealeth not perversely, is not puffed up, is not ambitious, seeketh not her own, is not provoked to anger; thinketh no evil, rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth with the truth; beareth all things, believeth all things, endureth all things."—I Cor. xiii. 4-7.

# Practice of the Love of Jesus Christ.

## CHAPTER I.

### CHARITY IS PATIENT.

(*Charitas patiens est.*—1 Cor. xiii. 4.)

#### He that loves Jesus Christ loves Sufferings.

THIS earth is the place for meriting, and therefore it is a place for suffering. Our true country, where God has prepared for us repose in everlasting joy, is paradise. We have but a short time to stay in this world; but in this short time we have many labors to undergo: *Man born of a woman, living for a short time, is filled with many miseries.*<sup>1</sup> We must suffer, and all must suffer; be they just, or be they sinners, each one must carry his cross. He that carries it with patience is saved; he that carries it with impatience is lost. St. Augustine says, the same miseries send some to paradise and some to hell: "One and the same blow lifts the good to glory, and reduces the bad to ashes."<sup>2</sup> The same saint observes, that by the test of suffering the chaff in the Church of God is distinguished from the wheat: he that humbles himself under tribulations, and is resigned to the will of God, is wheat for paradise; he that grows haughty and is enraged, and so forsakes God, is chaff for hell.

On the day when the cause of our salvation shall be

<sup>1</sup> "Homo natus de muliere, brevi vivens tempore, repletur multis miseriis."—*Job*, xiv. i.

<sup>2</sup> "Una eademque tunsio bonos producit ad gloriam, malos redigit in favillam."—*Serm.* 52, *E. B. app.*

decided, our life must be found conformable to the life of Jesus Christ, if we would enjoy the happy sentence of the predestined: *For whom He foreknew He also predestinated to be made conformable to the image of His Son.*<sup>1</sup> This was the end for which the Eternal Word descended upon earth, to teach us, by his example, to carry with patience the cross which God sends us: *Christ suffered for us* (wrote St. Peter), *leaving you an example, that you should follow His steps.*<sup>2</sup> So that Jesus Christ suffered on purpose to encourage us to suffer. O God! what a life was that of Jesus Christ! A life of ignominy and pain. The Prophet calls our Redeemer *despised, and the most abject of men, a man of sorrows.*<sup>3</sup> A man held in contempt, and treated as the lowest, the vilest among men, a man of sorrows; yes, for the life of Jesus Christ was made up of hardships and afflictions.

Now, in the same manner as God has treated his beloved Son, so does he treat every one whom he loves, and whom he receives for his son: *For whom the Lord loveth He chastiseth; and He scourgeth every son whom He receiveth.*<sup>4</sup> For this reason he one day said to St. Teresa: "Know that the souls dearest to my Father are those who are afflicted with the greatest sufferings."<sup>5</sup> Hence the saint said of all her troubles, that she would not exchange them for all the treasures in the world. She appeared after her death to a soul, and revealed to her that she enjoyed an immense reward in heaven, not so much for her good works, as for the sufferings which she cheerfully bore in this life for the love of God; and that if she

<sup>1</sup> "Nam quos præscivit, et prædestinavit conformes fieri imaginis Filii sui."—*Rom.* viii. 29.

<sup>2</sup> "Christus passus est pro nobis, vobis relinquens exemplum, ut sequamini vestigia ejus."—*1 Pet.* ii. 21.

<sup>3</sup> "Despectum et novissimum virorum."—*Isa.* liii. 3.

<sup>4</sup> "Quem enim diligit Dominus, castigat; flagellat autem omnem filium quem recipit."—*Heb.* xii. 6.

<sup>5</sup> *Life, addit.*



could possibly entertain a wish to return upon earth, the only reason would be in order that she might suffer more for God.

He that loves God in suffering earns a double reward in paradise. St. Vincent of Paul<sup>1</sup> said that it was a great misfortune to be free from suffering in this life. And he added, that a congregation or an individual that does not suffer, and is applauded by all the world, is not far from a fall. It was on this account that St. Francis of Assisi, on the day that he had suffered nothing for God, became afraid lest God had forgotten him. St. John Chrysostom<sup>2</sup> says, that when God endows a man with the grace of suffering, he gives him a greater grace than that of raising the dead to life; because in performing miracles man remains God's debtor; whereas in suffering, God makes himself the debtor of man. And he adds,<sup>3</sup> that whoever endures something for God, even had he no other gift than the strength to suffer for the God whom he loves, this would procure for him an immense reward. Wherefore he affirmed, that he considered St. Paul to have received a greater grace in being bound in chains for Jesus Christ, than in being rapt to the third heaven in ecstasy.

*But patience has a perfect work.*<sup>4</sup> The meaning of this is, that nothing is more pleasing to God than to see a soul suffering with patience all the crosses sent her by him. The effect of love is to liken the lover to the person loved. St. Francis de Sales said, "All the wounds of Christ are so many mouths, which preach to us that we must suffer for him. The science of the saints is to suffer constantly for Jesus; and in this way we shall soon become saints." A person that loves Jesus Christ is anxious to be treated like Jesus Christ,—poor, persecuted, and despised. St. John beheld all the saints clothed in

<sup>1</sup> *Abelly*, l. 3. c. 43.

<sup>2</sup> *In Phil. hom.* 4.

<sup>3</sup> *In Eph. hom.* 8.

<sup>4</sup> "Patientia autem opus perfectum habet."—*James*, i. 4.

white, and with palms in their hands: *Clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands.*<sup>1</sup> The palm is the symbol of martyrs, and yet all the saints did not suffer martyrdom;—why, then, do all the saints bear palms in their hands? St. Gregory replies, that all the saints have been martyrs either of the sword or of patience; so that, he adds, “we can be martyrs without the sword, if we keep patience.”<sup>2</sup>

The merit of a soul that loves Jesus Christ consists in loving and in suffering. Hear what our Lord said to St. Teresa: “Think you, my child, that merit consists in enjoyment? No, it consists in suffering and in loving. Look at my life, wholly embittered with afflictions. Be assured, my child, that the more my Father loves any one, the more sufferings he sends him; they are the standard of his love. Look at my wounds; your torments will never reach so far. It is absurd to suppose that my Father favors with his friendship those who are strangers to suffering.”<sup>3</sup> And for our consolation St. Teresa makes this remark: “God never sends a trial, but he forthwith rewards it with some favor.”<sup>4</sup> One day Jesus Christ appeared to the blessed Baptista Varani,<sup>5</sup> and told her of three special favors which he is wont to bestow on cherished souls: the first is, not to sin; the second, which is greater, to perform good works; the third, and the greatest of all, to suffer for his love. So that St. Teresa<sup>6</sup> used to say, whenever any one does something for God, the Almighty repays him with some trial. And therefore the saints, on receiving tribulations,

<sup>1</sup> “Amicti stolis albis, et palmæ in manibus eorum.”—*Apoc.* vii. 9.

<sup>2</sup> “Nos sine ferro esse possumus martyres, si patientiam veraciter in animo custodimus.”—*In Evang. hom.* 35.

<sup>3</sup> *Life*, addit.

<sup>4</sup> *Life*, ch. 30.

<sup>5</sup> *Boll.* 31 *Maii.* *Vit.* c. 7.

<sup>6</sup> *Found.* ch. 31.

thanked God for them. St. Louis of France, referring to his captivity in Turkey, said: "I rejoice, and thank God more for the patience which he accorded me in the time of my imprisonment, than if he had made me master of the universe." And when St. Elizabeth, princess of Thuringia, after her husband's death, was banished with her son from the kingdom, and found herself homeless and abandoned by all, she went to a convent of the Franciscans, and there had the *Te Deum* sung in thanksgiving to God for the signal favor of being allowed to suffer for his love.

St. Joseph Calasanctius used to say, "All suffering is slight to gain heaven." And the Apostle had already said the same: *The sufferings of this time are not worthy to be compared with the glory to come, that shall be revealed in us.*<sup>1</sup>

It would be a great gain for us to endure all the torments of all the martyrs during our whole lives, in order to enjoy one single moment of the bliss of paradise; with what readiness, then, should we embrace our crosses, when we know that the sufferings of this transitory life will gain for us an everlasting beatitude! *That which is at present momentary and light of our tribulation, worketh for us above measure exceedingly an eternal weight of glory.*<sup>2</sup> St. Agapitus, while still a mere boy in years, was threatened by the tyrant to have his head covered with a red-hot helmet; on which he replied, "And what better fortune could possibly befall me, than to lose my head here, to have it crowned hereafter in heaven?" This made St. Francis exclaim:

"I look for such a meed of bliss,  
That all my pains seem happiness."

<sup>1</sup> "Non sunt condignæ passionēs hujus temporis ad futuram gloriā quæ revelabitur in nobis."—*Rom.* viii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> "Momentaneum et leve tribulationis nostræ supra modum in sublimitate æternum gloriæ pondus operatur in nobis."—*2 Cor.* iv. 17.

But whoever desires the crown of paradise must needs combat and suffer: *If we suffer, we shall also reign.*<sup>1</sup> We cannot get a reward without merit; and no merit is to be had without patience: *He is not crowned, except he strive lawfully.*<sup>2</sup> And the person that strives with the greatest patience shall have the greatest reward. Wonderful indeed! When the temporal goods of this world are in question, worldlings endeavor to procure as much as they can; but when it is a question of the goods of eternal life, they say, "It is enough if we get a little corner in heaven!" Such is not the language of the saints: they are satisfied with anything whatever in this life, nay more, they strip themselves of all earthly goods; but concerning eternal goods, they strive to obtain them in as large a measure as possible. I would ask which of the two act with more wisdom and prudence?

But even with regard to the present life, it is certain that he who suffers with most patience enjoys the greatest peace. It was a saying of St. Philip Neri,<sup>3</sup> that in this world there is no purgatory; it is either all paradise or all hell: he that patiently supports tribulations enjoys a paradise; he that does not do so, suffers a hell. Yes, for (as St. Teresa writes) he that embraces the crosses sent him by God feels them not. St. Francis de Sales, finding himself on one occasion beset on every side with tribulations, said, "For some time back the severe oppositions and secret contrarieties which have befallen me afford me so sweet a peace, that nothing can equal it; and they give me such an assurance that my soul will ere long be firmly united with God, that I can say with all truth that they are the sole ambition, the sole desire of my heart."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Si sustinebimus, et conregnabimus."—2 *Tim.* ii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui certat in agone, non coronatur, nisi legitime certaverit."—2 *Tim.* ii. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Bacci*, l. 2, ch. 20.

<sup>4</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 19.

And indeed peace can never be found by one who leads an irregular life, but only by him who lives in union with God and with his blessed will. A certain missionary of a religious Order, while in the Indies, was one day standing to witness the execution of a person under sentence of death, and already on the scaffold: the criminal called the missionary to him, and said, "You must know, Father, that I was once a member of your Order; whilst I observed the rules I led a very happy life; but when, afterwards, I began to relax in the strict observance of them, I immediately experienced pain in everything; so much so, that I abandoned the religious life, and gave myself up to vice, which has finally reduced me to the melancholy pass in which you at present behold me." And in conclusion he said, "I tell you this, that my example may be a warning to others." The Venerable Father Louis da Ponté said, "Take the sweet things of this life for bitter, and the bitter for sweet; and so you will be in the constant enjoyment of peace. Yes, for though the sweet are pleasant to sense, they invariably leave behind them the bitterness of remorse of conscience, on account of the imperfect satisfaction which, for the most part, they afford; but the bitter, when taken with patience from the hand of God, become sweet, and dear to the souls who love him."

Let us be convinced that in this valley of tears true peace of heart cannot be found, except by him who endures and lovingly embraces sufferings to please Almighty God: this is the consequence of that corruption in which all are placed through the infection of sin. The condition of the saints on earth is to suffer and to love; the condition of the saints in heaven is to enjoy and to love. Father Paul Segneri the younger, in a letter which he wrote one of his penitents to encourage her to suffer, gave her the counsel to keep these words inscribed at the foot of her crucifix: "'Tis thus one loves." It is

not simply by suffering, but by desiring to suffer for the love of Jesus Christ, that a soul gives the surest signs of really loving him. And what greater acquisition (said St. Teresa) can we possibly make than to have some token of gratifying Almighty God?<sup>1</sup> Alas, how ready are the greatest part of men to take alarm at the bare mention of crosses, of humiliations, and of afflictions! Nevertheless, there are many souls who find all their delight in suffering, and who would be quite disconsolate did they pass their time on this earth without suffering. The sight of Jesus crucified (said a devout person) renders the cross so lovely to me, that it seems to me I could never be happy without suffering; the love of Jesus Christ is sufficient for me for all. Listen how Jesus advises every one who would follow him to take up and carry his cross: *Let him take up his cross, and follow Me.*<sup>2</sup> But we must take it up and carry it, not by constraint and against our will, but with humility, patience, and love.

Oh, how acceptable to God is he that humbly and patiently embraces the crosses which he sends him! St. Ignatius of Loyola said, "There is no wood so apt to enkindle and maintain love towards God as the wood of the cross;" that is, to love him in the midst of sufferings. One day St. Gertrude asked our Lord what she could offer him most acceptable, and he replied, "My child, thou canst do nothing more gratifying to me than to submit patiently to all the tribulations that befall thee." Wherefore the great servant of God, Sister Victoria Angelini, affirmed that one day of crucifixion was worth a hundred years of all other spiritual exercises. And the Venerable Father John of Avila said, "One 'blessed be God' in contrarieties is worth more than a thousand thanksgivings in prosperity." Alas, how little men know of the inestimable value of afflictions endured for God!

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 10.

<sup>2</sup> "Tollat crucem suam quotidie, et sequatur me."—*Luke*, ix. 23.



The Blessed Angela of Foligno said, "that if we knew the just value of suffering for God, it would become an object of plunder;" which is as much as to say, that each one would seek an opportunity of robbing his neighbor of the occasions of suffering. For this reason St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, well aware as she was of the merit of sufferings, sighed to have her life prolonged rather than to die and go to Heaven, "because," said she, "in Heaven one can suffer no more."

A soul that loves God has no other end in view but to be wholly united with him; but let us learn from St. Catharine of Genoa what is necessary to be done to arrive at this perfect union: "To attain union with God, adversities are indispensable; because by them God aims at destroying all our corrupt propensities within and without. And hence all injuries, contempts, infirmities, abandonment of relatives and friends, confusions, temptations, and other mortifications, all are in the highest degree necessary for us, in order that we may carry on the fight, until by repeated victories we come to extinguish within us all vicious movements, so that they are no longer felt; and we shall never arrive at divine union until adversities, instead of seeming bitter to us, become all sweet for God's sake."

It follows, then, that a soul that sincerely desires to belong to God must be resolved, as St. John of the Cross<sup>1</sup> writes, not to seek enjoyments in this life, but to suffer in all things; she must embrace with eagerness all voluntary mortifications, and with still greater eagerness those which are involuntary, since they are the more welcome to Almighty God.

*The patient man is better than the valiant.*<sup>2</sup> God is pleased with a person who practises mortification by fasting, hair-cloths, and disciplines, on account of the courage

<sup>1</sup> *Mont. du C. l. 2, ch. 7.*

<sup>2</sup> "Melior est patiens viro forti."—*Prov. xvi. 32.*

displayed in such mortifications ; but he is much more pleased with those who have the courage to bear patiently and gladly such crosses as come from his own divine hand. St. Francis de Sales said, "Such mortifications as come to us from the hand of God, or from men by his permission, are always more precious than those which are the offspring of our own will ; for it is a general rule, that wherever there is less of our own choice, God is better pleased, and we ourselves derive greater profit."<sup>1</sup> St. Teresa taught the same thing : "We gain more in one day by the oppositions which come to us from God or our neighbor than by ten years of mortifications of self-infliction."<sup>2</sup> Wherefore St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi made the generous declaration, that there could not be found in the whole world an affliction so severe, but what she would gladly bear with the thought that it came from God ; and, in fact, during the five years of severe trial which the saint underwent, it was enough to restore peace to her soul to remember that it was by the will of God that she so suffered. Ah, God, that infinite treasure is cheaply purchased at any cost ! Father Hippolytus Durazzo used to say, "Purchase God at what cost you will, he can never be dear."

Let us then beseech God to make us worthy of his love ; for if we did but once perfectly love him, all the goods of this earth would seem to us but as smoke and dirt, and we should relish ignominies and afflictions as delights. Let us hear what St. John Chrysostom says of a soul wholly given up to Almighty God : "He who has attained the perfect love of God seems to be alone on the earth,—he no longer cares either for glory or ignominy,—he scorns temptations and afflictions,—he loses all relish and appetite for created things. And as nothing in this world brings him any support or repose, he

<sup>1</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 37.

goes incessantly in search of his beloved without ever feeling wearied; so that when he toils, when he eats, when he is watching, or when sleeping, in every action and word, all his thoughts and desires are fixed upon finding his beloved; because his heart is where his treasure is." \*

*Affections and Prayers.*

My dear and beloved Jesus, my treasure, I have deserved by my offences never more to be allowed to love Thee; but by Thy merits, I entreat Thee, make me worthy of Thy pure love. I love Thee above all things; and I repent with my whole heart, of having ever despised Thee, and driven Thee from my soul; but now I love Thee more than myself; I love Thee with all my heart, O infinite good! I love Thee, I love Thee, I love Thee, and I have not a wish besides that of loving Thee perfectly; nor have I a fear besides that of ever seeing myself deprived of Thy love. O my most loving Redeemer, enable me to know how great a good Thou art, and how great is the love Thou hast borne me in order to oblige me to love Thee! Ah, my God, suffer me not to live any longer unmindful of so much goodness! Enough have I offended Thee, I will never leave Thee again; I wish to employ all the remainder of my days in loving Thee, and in pleasing Thee. My Jesus, my Love, lend me Thine aid; help a sinner who wishes to love Thee and to be wholly Thine own.

O Mary my hope, thy Son hears thee; pray to him in my behalf, and obtain for me the grace of loving him perfectly!

---

\* In this chapter we have spoken of patience in general; in Chapter X. we shall treat more particularly of occasions in which we have especially to practise patience.

## CHAPTER II.

CHARITY IS KIND.

*(Charitas benigna est.)***He that loves Jesus Christ loves Meekness.**

THE spirit of meekness is peculiar to God: *My spirit is sweet above honey.*<sup>1</sup> Hence it is that a soul that loves God loves also all those whom God loves, namely, her neighbors; so that she eagerly seeks every occasion of helping all, of consoling all, and of making all happy as far as she can. St. Francis de Sales, who was the master and model of holy meekness, says, "Humble meekness is the virtue of virtues, which God has so much recommended to us; therefore we should endeavor to practise it always and in all things."<sup>2</sup> Hence the saint gives us this rule: "What you see can be done with love, do it; and what you see cannot be done without offence, leave it undone."<sup>3</sup> He means, when it can be omitted without offending God; because an offence of God must always, and as quickly as possible, be prevented by him who is bound to prevent it.

This meekness should be particularly observed towards the poor, who, by reason of their poverty, are often harshly treated by men. It should likewise be especially practised towards the sick who are suffering under infirmities, and for the most part meet with small help from others. Meekness is more especially to be observed in our behavior towards enemies: *Overcome evil with good.*<sup>4</sup> Hatred must be overcome by love, and per-

<sup>1</sup> "Spiritus enim meus super mel dulcis."—*Ecclus.* xxiv. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Lettre* 853.

<sup>3</sup> *Lettre* 786.

<sup>4</sup> "Vince in bono malum."—*Rom.* xii. 21.

secution by meekness; thus the saints acted, and so they conciliated the affections of their most exasperated enemies.

"There is nothing," says St. Francis de Sales, "that gives so much edification to our neighbor as meekness of behavior."<sup>1</sup> The saint, therefore, was generally seen smiling, and with a countenance beaming with charity, which gave a tone to all his words and actions. This gave occasion to St. Vincent of Paul<sup>2</sup> to declare that he never knew a kinder man in his life. He said further, that it seemed to him that in his lordship of Sales was a true likeness of Jesus Christ. Even in refusing what he could not in conscience comply with, he did so with such sweetness, that all, though unsuccessful in their requests, went away satisfied and well-disposed towards him. He was gentle towards all, towards Superiors, towards equals and inferiors, at home and abroad; in contrast with some, who, as the saint used to say, "seemed angels abroad, but were devils at home."<sup>3</sup> Moreover, the saint, in his conduct towards servants, never complained of their remissness; at most he would give them an admonition, but always in the gentlest terms. And this is a thing most praiseworthy in Superiors.

The Superior should use all kindness towards those under him. When telling them what they have to do, he should rather request than command. St. Vincent of Paul said: "A Superior will never find a better means of being readily obeyed than meekness." And to the same effect was the saying of St. Jane Frances of Chantal: "I have tried various methods of governing, but I have not found any better than that of meekness and forbearance."<sup>4</sup>

And more than this, the Superior should be kind even in the correction of faults. It is one thing to correct

<sup>1</sup> *Lettre* 605.

<sup>2</sup> *Abelly*, l. 3, ch. 27.

<sup>3</sup> *Introd.* ch. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Mém. de la M. de Chaugy*, p. 3, ch. 19.

with firmness, and another with harshness; it is needful at times to correct with firmness, when the fault is serious, and especially if it be repeated after the subject has already been admonished of it; but let us always be on our guard against harsh and angry correction; he that corrects with anger does more harm than good. This is that bitter zeal reproved by St. James. Some make a boast of keeping their family in order by severity, and they say it is the only successful method of treatment; but St. James speaks not so: *But if you have bitter zeal . . . glory not.*<sup>1</sup> If on some rare occasion it be necessary to speak a cross word, in order to bring the offender to a proper sense of his fault, yet in the end we ought invariably to leave him with a gentle countenance and a word of kindness. Wounds must be healed after the fashion of the good Samaritan in the Gospel, with wine and oil: "But as oil," said St. Francis de Sales, "always swims on the surface of all other liquors, so must meekness prevail over all our actions." And when it occurs that the person under correction is agitated, then the reprehension must be deferred till his anger has subsided, or else we should only increase his indignation. The Canon Regular St. John said: "When the house is on fire, one must not cast wood into the flames."

*You know not of what spirit you are.*<sup>2</sup> Such were the words of Jesus Christ to his disciples James and John, when they would have brought down chastisements on the Samaritans for expelling them from their country. Ah, said the Lord to them, and what spirit is this? this is not my spirit, which is sweet and gentle; for I am come not to destroy but to save souls: *The Son of Man came not to destroy souls, but to save.*<sup>3</sup> And would you in-

<sup>1</sup> "Quod si zelum amarum habetis, . . . nolite gloriari."—*James*, iii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> "Nescitis cujus spiritus estis."—*Luke*, ix. 55.

<sup>3</sup> "Filius hominis non venit animas perdere, sed salvare."—*Luke*, x. 56.



duce me to destroy them? Oh, hush! and never make the like request to me, for such is not according to my spirit. And, in fact, with what meekness did Jesus Christ treat the adulteress! *Woman*, said He, *hath no man condemned thee? Neither will I condemn thee! Go, and now sin no more.*<sup>1</sup> He was satisfied with merely warning her not to sin again, and sent her away in peace. With what meekness, again, did he seek the conversion of the Samaritan woman, and so, in fact, converted her! He first asked her to give him to drink; then he said to her: *If thou didst know who He is that saith to thee, Give me to drink!* and then he revealed to her that he was the expected Messiah. And, again, with what meekness did he strive to convert the impious Judas, admitting him to eat of the same dish with him, washing his feet and admonishing him in the very act of his betrayal: Judas, and dost thou thus betray me with a kiss? *Judas, dost thou betray the Son of Man with a kiss?*<sup>2</sup> And see how he converted Peter after his denial of him! *And the Lord turning, looked on Peter.*<sup>3</sup> On leaving the house of the high-priest, without making him a single reproach, he cast on him a look of tenderness, and thus converted him; and so effectually did he convert him, that during his whole life long Peter never ceased to bewail the injury he had done to his Master.

Oh, how much more is to be gained by meekness than by harshness! St. Francis de Sales said there was nothing more bitter than the bitter almond, but if made into a preserve, it becomes sweet and agreeable: thus corrections, though in their nature very unpleasant, are rendered pleasant by love and meekness, and so are attended with more beneficial results. St. Vincent of Paul said

<sup>1</sup> "Mulier, . . . nemo te condemnavit? . . . Nec ego te condemnabo. Vade, et jam amplius noli peccare."—*John*, viii. 10, 11.

<sup>2</sup> "Juda! osculo Filium hominis tradis?"—*Luke*, xxii. 48.

<sup>3</sup> "Conversus Dominus respexit Petrum."—*Luke*, xxii. 61.

of himself, that in the government of his own congregation he had never corrected any one with severity, except on three occasions, when he supposed there was reason to do so, but that he regretted it ever afterwards, because he found it turned out badly; whereas he had always admirably succeeded by gentle correction.<sup>1</sup>

St. Francis de Sales obtained from others whatever he wished by his meek behavior; and by this means he managed to gain the most hardened sinners to God. It was the same with St. Vincent of Paul, who taught his disciples this maxim: "Affability, love, and humility have a wonderful efficacy in winning the hearts of men, and in prevailing on them to undertake things most repugnant to nature." He once gave a great sinner to the care of one of his Fathers, to bring him to sentiments of true repentance; but that Father, in spite of all his endeavors, found his labor fruitless, so that he begged the saint to speak a word to him. The saint accordingly spoke with him, and converted him. That sinner subsequently declared that the singular sweetness of Father Vincent had worked upon his heart. Wherefore it was that the saint could not bear his missionaries to treat sinners with severity; and he told them that the infernal spirit took advantage of the strictness of some to work the greater ruin of souls.

Kindness should be observed towards all on all occasions and at all times. St. Bernard remarks,<sup>2</sup> that certain persons are gentle as long as things fall out to their taste; but scarcely do they experience some opposition or contradiction than they are instantly on fire, like Mount Vesuvius itself. Such as these may be called burning coals, but hidden under the embers. Whoever would become a saint, must, during this life, resemble the lily among thorns, which, however much it may be

<sup>1</sup> *Abelly*, l. 3, ch. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *In Adv. D.* s. 4.

pricked by them, never ceases to be a lily; that is, it is always equally sweet and serene. The soul that loves God maintains an imperturbable peace of heart; and he shows this in her very countenance, being ever mistress of herself, alike in prosperity and adversity, according to the lines of Cardinal Petrucci:

“Of outward things he views the varying guise,  
While in his soul's most inmost depth  
Undimmed God's image lies.”

Adversity brings out a person's real character. St. Francis de Sales very tenderly loved the Order of the Visitation, which had cost him so much labor. He saw it several times in imminent danger of dissolution on account of the persecutions it underwent; but the saint never for a moment lost his peace, and was ready, if such was the will of God, to see it entirely destroyed; and then it was that he said: “For some time back the trying oppositions and secret contrarieties which have befallen me afford me so sweet a peace, that nothing can equal it; and they give me such an earnest of the immediate union of my soul with God, that, in truth, they form the sole desire of my heart.”<sup>1</sup>

Whenever it happens that we have to reply to some one who insults us, let us be careful to answer with meekness: *A mild answer breaketh wrath.*<sup>2</sup> A mild reply is enough to quench every spark of anger. And in case we feel irritated, it is best to keep silence, because then it seems only just to give vent to all that rises to our lips; but when our passion has subsided, we shall see that all our words were full of faults.

And when it happens that we ourselves commit some fault, we must also practise meekness in our own regard. To be exasperated at ourselves after a fault is not humility, but a subtle pride, as if we were anything else than

<sup>1</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 10.

<sup>2</sup> “*Responsio mollis frangit iram.*”—*Prov.* xv. 1.

the weak and miserable things that we are. St. Teresa said: "The humility that disturbs does not come from God, but from the devil."<sup>1</sup> To be angry at ourselves after the commission of a fault is a fault worse than the one committed, and will be the occasion of many other faults; it will make us leave off our devotions, prayers, and communions; or if we do practise them, they will be done very badly. St. Aloysius Gonzaga said that we cannot see in troubled waters, and that the devil fishes in them. A soul that is troubled knows little of God and of what it ought to do. Whenever, therefore, we fall into any fault, we should turn to God with humility and confidence, and craving his forgiveness, say to him, with St. Catharine of Genoa: "O Lord, this is the produce of my own garden! I love Thee with my whole heart, and I repent of the displeasure I have given Thee! I will never do the like again: grant me Thy assistance!"

*Affections and Prayers.*

O blessed chains that bind the soul with God, oh, enfold me still closer, and in links so firm that I may never be able to loosen myself from the love of my God! My Jesus, I love Thee; O treasure, O life of my soul, to Thee I cling, and I give myself wholly unto Thee! No, indeed, my beloved Lord, I wish never more to cease to love Thee. Thou who, to atone for my sins, didst allow Thyself to be bound as a criminal, and so bound to be led to death through the streets of Jerusalem,—Thou who didst consent to be nailed to the cross, and didst not leave it until life itself had left Thee, oh, suffer me never to be separated from Thee again; I regret above every other evil, to have at one time turned my back upon Thee, and henceforth I purpose by Thy grace to die rather than to give Thee the slightest displeasure. O my Jesus, I abandon myself to Thee. I love Thee with my whole heart; I love Thee more than myself. I have offended Thee in times past; but now I bitterly repent of it, and I would willingly die of grief. Oh, draw me entirely to Thyself!

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 30.

I renounce all sensible consolations ; I wish for Thee alone, and nothing more. Make me love Thee, and then do with me what Thou wilt.

O Mary, my hope, bind me to Jesus ; and grant me to live and die in union with him, in order to come one day to the happy kingdom, where I shall have no more fear of ever being separated from his love !

---

## CHAPTER III.

### CHARITY ENVIETH NOT.

*(Charitas non æmulatur.)*

The Soul that loves Jesus Christ does not envy the Great Ones of this World, but only those who are Greater Lovers of Jesus Christ.

ST. GREGORY explains this next characteristic of charity in saying, that as charity despises all earthly greatness, it cannot possibly provoke her envy. "She envieth not, because, as she desireth nothing in this world, she cannot envy earthly prosperity." <sup>1</sup>

Hence we must distinguish two kinds of envy, one evil and the other holy. The evil kind is that which envies and repines at the worldly goods possessed by others on this earth. But holy envy, so far from wishing to be like, rather compassionates the great ones of the world, who live in the midst of honors and earthly pleasures. She seeks and desires God alone, and has no other aim besides that of loving him as much as she can ; and therefore she has a pious envy of those who love him more than she does, for she would, if possible, surpass the very seraphim in loving him.

This is the sole end which pious souls have in view on

<sup>1</sup> "Non æmulatur ; quia, per hoc quod in præsentī mundo nihil appetit, invidere terrenis successibus nescit."—*Mor.* l. 10, c. 8.

earth—an end which so charms and ravishes the heart of God with love, that it causes him to say: *Thou hast wounded My heart, My sister; My spouse, thou hast wounded My heart with one of thy eyes.*<sup>1</sup> By “one of thy eyes” is meant that one end which the espoused soul has in all her devotions and thoughts, namely, to please Almighty God. Men of the world look on things with many eyes, that is, have several inordinate views in their actions; as, for instance, to please others, to become honored, to obtain riches, and if nothing else, at least to please themselves; but the saints have but a single eye, with which they keep in view, in all that they do, the sole pleasure of God; and with David they say: *What have I in heaven, and besides Thee what do I desire upon earth?*<sup>2</sup> What do I wish, O my God, in this world or in the next, save Thee alone? Thou art my riches, Thou art the only Lord of my heart. “Let the rich,” said St. Paulinus, “enjoy their riches, let the kings enjoy their kingdoms, Thou, O Christ, art my treasure and my kingdom!”<sup>3</sup>

And here we must remark, that we must not only perform good works, but we must perform them well. In order that our works may be good and perfect, they must be done with the sole end of pleasing God. This was the admirable praise bestowed on Jesus Christ: *He hath done all things well.*<sup>4</sup> Many actions may in themselves be praiseworthy, but from being performed for some other purpose than for the glory of God, they are often of little or no value in his sight. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said, “God rewards our actions by the

<sup>1</sup> “Vulnerasti cor meum, soror mea Sponsa, vulnerasti cor meum in uno oculorum tuorum.”—*Cant.* iv. 9.

<sup>2</sup> “Quid enim mihi est in cœlo? et a te quid volui super terram? . . . Deus cordis mei, et pars mea, Deus, in æternum.”—*Ps.* lxxii. 25, 26.

<sup>3</sup> “Sibi habeant divitiarum suas divites, sibi regna sua reges; nobis gloria, et possessio, et regnum, Christus est.”—*Ep. ad Aprum.*

<sup>4</sup> “Bene omnia fecit.”—*Mark,* vii. 37.



weight of pure intention.”<sup>1</sup> As much as to say, that according as our intention is pure, so does the Lord accept of and reward our actions. But, O God, how difficult it is to find an action done solely for Thee ! I remember a holy old man, a religious, who had labored much in the service of God, and died in the reputation of sanctity ; now one day, as he cast a glance back at his past life, he said to me in a tone of sadness and fear, “Wo is me ! when I consider all the actions of my past life, I do not find one done entirely for God.” Oh, this accursed self-love, that makes us lose all or the greater part of the fruit of our good actions ! How many in their most holy employments, as of preaching, hearing confessions, giving missions, labor and exert themselves very much, and gain little or nothing because they do not regard God alone, but worldly honor, or self-interest, or the vanity of making an appearance, or at least their own inclination !

Our Lord has said, *Take heed that you do not your justice before men, to be seen by them ; otherwise you shall not have a reward of your Father who is in heaven.*<sup>2</sup> He that works for his own gratification already receives his wages: *Amen I say to you, they have received their reward.*<sup>3</sup> But a reward, indeed, which dwindles into a little smoke, or the pleasure of a day that quickly vanishes, and confers no benefit on the soul. The Prophet Aggeus says, that whoever labors for anything else than to please God, puts his reward in a sack full of holes, which, when he comes to open, he finds entirely empty: *And he that hath earned wages, put them into a bag with holes.*<sup>4</sup> And hence it

<sup>1</sup> *Pucc.* p. I, ch. 58.

<sup>2</sup> “Attendite ne justitiam vestram faciatis coram hominibus, ut videamini ab eis ; alioquin mercedem non habebitis apud Patrem vestrum qui in cœlis est.”—*Matt.* vi. I.

<sup>3</sup> “Amen, dico vobis, receperunt mercedem suam.”—*Matt.* vi. 5.

<sup>4</sup> “Et qui mercedes congregavit, misit eas in sacculum pertusum.”—*Agg.* i. 6.

is that such persons, in the event of their not gaining the object for which they entered on some undertaking, are thrown into great trouble. This is a sign that they had not in view the glory of God alone. He that undertakes a thing solely for the glory of God, is not troubled at all, though his undertaking may fail of success; for, in truth, by working with a pure intention, he has already gained his object, which was to please Almighty God.

The following are the signs which indicate whether we work solely for God in any spiritual undertaking. 1. If we are not disturbed at the failure of our plans, because when we see it is not God's will, neither is it any longer our will. 2. If we rejoice at the good done by others, as heartily as if we ourselves had done it. 3. If we have no preference for one charge more than for another, but willingly accept that which obedience to Superiors enjoins us. 4. If after our actions we do not seek the thanks or approbation of others, nor are in any way affected if we be found fault with or scolded, being satisfied with having pleased God. And if when the world applauds us we are not puffed up, but meet the vain glory, which might make itself felt, with the reply of the venerable John of Avila: "Get away, thou comest too late, for all has been already given to God."

This is to enter into the joy of the Lord; that is, to enjoy the enjoyment of God, as is promised to his faithful servants: *Well done, thou good and faithful servant; because thou hast been faithful over a few things, . . . enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.*<sup>1</sup> And if it falls to our lot to do something pleasing to God, what more, asks St. John Chrysostom, can we desire? "If thou art found worthy to perform something that pleases God, dost thou seek other recompense than this?"<sup>2</sup> The greatest reward, the

<sup>1</sup> "Euge, serve bone et fidelis: quia super pauca fuisti fidelis, super multa te constituam; intra in gaudium Domini tui."—*Matt.* xxv. 21.

<sup>2</sup> "Si dignus fueris agere aliquid quod Deo placet, aliam, præter id, mercedem requiris?" *Private Use Only* 2.

brightest fortune, that can befall a creature, is to give pleasure to his Creator.

And this is what Jesus Christ looks for from a soul that loves him: *Put me*, he says, *as a seal upon thy heart, as a seal upon thy arm.*<sup>1</sup> He desires us to place him as a seal on our heart and on our arm: on our heart, in order that whatever we intend doing, we may intend solely for the love of God; on our arm, in order that whatever we do, all may be done to please God; so that God may be always the sole end of all our thoughts and of all our actions. St. Teresa said, that he who would become a saint must live free from every other desire than that of pleasing God; and her first daughter, the Venerable Beatrice of the Incarnation, said, “No sum whatever could repay the slightest thing done for God.”<sup>2</sup> And with reason; for all things done to please God are acts of charity which unite us to God, and obtain for us everlasting rewards.

Purity of intention is called the heavenly alchemy by which iron is turned into gold; that is to say, the most trivial actions (such as to work, to take one's meals, to take recreation or repose), when done for God, become the gold of holy love. Wherefore St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi believes for certain that those who do all with a pure intention, go straight to Paradise, without passing through purgatory. It is related (in the *Spiritual Treasury*) that it was the custom of a pious hermit, before setting about any work, to pause a little, and lift his eyes to heaven; on being questioned why he did so, he replied, “I am taking my aim.” By which he meant, that as the archer, before shooting his arrow, takes his aim, that he may not miss the mark, so before each action he made God his aim, in order that it might be sure of pleas-

<sup>1</sup> “Pone me ut signaculum super cor tuum, ut signaculum super brachium tuum.”—*Cant.* viii. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Found.* ch. 12.

ing him. We should do the same ; and even during the performance of our actions, it is very good for us from time to time to renew our good intention.

Those who have nothing else in view in their undertakings than the divine will, enjoy that holy liberty of spirit which belongs to the children of God; and this enables them to embrace everything that pleases Jesus Christ, however revolting it may be to their own self-love or human respect. The love of Jesus Christ establishes his lovers in a state of total indifference; so that all is the same to them, be it sweet or bitter; they desire nothing for their own pleasure, but all for the pleasure of God. With the same feelings of peace, they address themselves to small and great works; to the pleasant and the unpleasant: it is enough for them if they please God.

Many, on the other hand, are willing to serve God, but it must be in such an employment, in such a place, with such companions, or under such circumstances, or else they either quit the work, or do it with an ill-will. Such persons have not freedom of spirit, but are slaves of self-love; and on that account gain very little merit by what they do ; they lead a troubled life, because the yoke of Jesus Christ becomes a burden to them. The true lovers of Jesus Christ care only to do what pleases him; and for the reason that it pleases him, when he wills, and where he wills, and in the manner he wills: and whether he wishes to employ them in a state of life honored by the world, or in a life of obscurity and insignificance. This is what is meant by loving Jesus Christ with a pure love; and in this we ought to exercise ourselves, battling against the craving of our self-love, which would urge us to seek important and honorable functions, and such as suit our inclinations.

We must, moreover, be detached from all exercises, even spiritual ones, when the Lord wishes us to be occu-

pied in other works of his good pleasure. One day, Father Alvarez, finding himself overwhelmed with business, was anxious to get rid of it, in order to go and pray, because it seemed to him that during that time he was not with God; but our Lord then said to him: "Though I do not keep thee with me, let it suffice thee that I make use of thee."<sup>1</sup> This is a profitable lesson for those who are sometimes disturbed at being obliged, by obedience or by charity, to leave their accustomed devotions; let them be assured that such disturbances on like occasions do not come from God, but either from the devil or from self-love. "Give pleasure to God, and die." This is the grand maxim of the saints.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my Eternal God, I offer Thee my whole heart; but what sort of heart, O God, is it that I offer Thee? A heart, created, indeed, to love Thee; but which, instead of loving Thee, has so many times rebelled against Thee. But behold, my Jesus, if there was a time when my heart rebelled against Thee, now it is deeply grieved and penitent for the displeasure it has given Thee. Yes, my dear Redeemer, I am sorry for having despised Thee; and I am determined to do all to obey Thee, and to love Thee at every cost. Oh, draw me wholly to Thy love; do this for the sake of the love which made Thee die for me on the cross. I love Thee, my Jesus; I love Thee with all my soul; I love Thee more than myself, O true and only lover of my soul; for I find none but Thee who have sacrificed their life for me. I weep to think that I have been so ungrateful to Thee. Unhappy that I am! I was already lost; but I trust that by Thy grace Thou hast restored me to life. And this shall be my life, to love Thee always, my sovereign good. Make me love Thee, O infinite love, and I ask Thee for nothing more!

O Mary my mother, accept of me for thy servant, and gain acceptance for me with Jesus thy Son.

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 2.



## CHAPTER IV.

CHARITY DEALETH NOT PERVERSELY.

*(Charitas non agit perperam.)*

He that loves Jesus Christ avoids Lukewarmness, and seeks Perfection; the Means of which are : 1. Desire ; 2. Resolution ; 3. Mental Prayer ; 4. Communion ; 5. Prayer.

ST. GREGORY, in his explanation of these words, "dealeth not perversely," says that charity, giving herself up more and more to the love of God, ignores whatever is not right and holy.<sup>1</sup> The Apostle had already written to the same effect, when he calls charity a bond that unites the most perfect virtues together in the soul. *Have charity, which is the bond of perfection.*<sup>2</sup> And whereas charity delights in perfection, she consequently abhors that lukewarmness with which some persons serve God, to the great risk of losing charity, divine grace, their very soul, and their all.

## I.

## Lukewarmness.

It must be observed that there are two kinds of tepidity or lukewarmness : the one unavoidable, the other avoidable.

I.—From the lukewarmness that is *unavoidable*, the saints themselves are not exempt; and this comprises all the failings that are committed by us without full consent, but merely from our natural frailty. Such are, for example, distractions at prayers, interior disquietudes, useless words, vain curiosity, the wish to appear, tastes

<sup>1</sup> "Non agit perperam. Quia (charitas), quæ se in solum Dei amorem dilatat, quidquid a rectitudine discrepat, ignorat."—*Mor.* l. 10, c. 8.

<sup>2</sup> "Charitatem habete, quod est vinculum perfectionis."—*Col.* iii. 14.



in eating and drinking, the movements of concupiscence not instantly repressed, and such like. We ought to avoid these defects as much as we possibly can; but, owing to the weakness of our nature, caused by the infection of sin, it is impossible to avoid them altogether. We ought, indeed, to detest them after committing them, because they are displeasing to God; but, as we remarked in the preceding chapter, we ought to beware of making them a subject of alarm or disquietude. St. Francis de Sales writes as follows: "All such thoughts as create disquietude are not from God, who is the prince of peace; but they proceed always from the devil, or from self-love, or from the good opinion which we have of ourselves."<sup>1</sup> Such thoughts, therefore, as disturb us, must be straightway rejected, and made no account of.

It was said also by the same saint, with regard to indeliberate faults, that as they were involuntarily committed, so are they cancelled involuntarily. An act of sorrow, an act of love, is sufficient to cancel them. The Venerable Sister Mary Crucified, a Benedictine nun, saw once a globe of fire, on which a number of straws were cast, and were all forthwith reduced to ashes. She was given to understand by this figure that one act of divine love, made with fervor, destroys all the defects that we may have in our soul. The same effect is produced by the holy Communion; according to what we find in the Council of Trent, where the Eucharist is called "an antidote by which we are freed from daily faults."<sup>2</sup> Thus the like faults, though they are indeed faults, do not hinder perfection—that is, our advancing toward perfection; because in the present life no one attains perfection before he arrives at the kingdom of the blessed.

II. The tepidity, then, that does hinder perfection is that tepidity which is avoidable when a person commits

<sup>1</sup> *Lettre* 51.

<sup>2</sup> "Antidotum, quo liberemur a culpis quotidianis."

deliberate venial faults; because all these faults committed with open eyes can effectually be avoided by the divine grace, even in the present life. Wherefore St. Teresa said: "May God deliver you from deliberate sin, however small it may be."<sup>1</sup> Such, for example, are wilful untruths, little detractions, imprecations, expressions of anger, derisions of one's neighbor, cutting words, speeches of self-esteem, animosities nourished in the heart, inordinate attachments to persons of a different sex. "These are a sort of worm" (wrote the same saint) "which is not detected before it has eaten into the virtues."<sup>2</sup> Hence, in another place, the saint gave this admonition: "By means of small things the devil goes about making holes for great things to enter."<sup>3</sup>

We should therefore tremble at such deliberate faults; since they cause God to close his hands from bestowing upon us his clearer lights and stronger helps, and they deprive us of spiritual sweetnesses; and the result of them is to make the soul perform all spiritual exercises with great weariness and pain; and so, in course of time, she begins to leave off prayer, Communions, visits to the Blessed Sacrament, and novenas; and, in fine, she will probably leave off all, as has not unfrequently been the case with many unhappy souls.

This is the meaning of that threat which our Lord makes to the tepid: *Thou art neither cold nor hot; I would thou wert cold or hot: but because thou art lukewarm . . . I will begin to vomit thee out of My mouth.*<sup>4</sup> How wonderful! He says, *I would thou wert cold!* What! and is it better to be cold, that is, deprived of grace, than to be tepid?

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Inter. Castle*, ch. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Found.* ch. 29.

<sup>4</sup> "Neque frigidus es, neque calidus; utinam frigidus esses, aut calidus! sed, quia tepidus es, . . . incipiam te evomere."—*Apoc.* iii. 15, 16.

Yes, in a certain sense it is better to be cold; because a person who is cold may more easily change his life, being stung by the reproaches of conscience; whereas a tepid person contracts the habit of slumbering on in his faults, without bestowing a thought, or taking any trouble to correct himself; and thus he makes his cure, as it were, desperate. St. Gregory says, "Tepidity, which has cooled down from fervor, is a hopeless state."<sup>1</sup> The Ven. Father Louis da Ponte said that he had committed many defects in the course of his life; but that he never had made a truce with his faults. Some there are who shake hands with their faults, and from that springs their ruin; especially when the fault is accompanied with some passionate attachment of self-esteem, of ambition, of liking to be seen, of heaping up money, of resentment against a neighbor, or of inordinate affection for a person of different sex. In such cases there is great danger of those hairs, as it were, becoming chains, as St. Francis of Assisi said, which will drag down the soul to hell. At all events, such a soul will never become a saint, and will forfeit that beautiful crown, which God had prepared for her, had she faithfully corresponded to grace. The bird no sooner feels itself loosed from the snare than it immediately flies; the soul, as soon as she is loosed from earthly attachments, immediately flies to God; but while she is bound, though it be but by the slightest thread, it is enough to prevent her from flying to God. Oh, how many spiritual persons there are who do not become saints, because they will not do themselves the violence to break away from certain little attachments!

All the evil arises from the little love they have for Jesus Christ. Those who are puffed up with self-esteem; those who frequently take to heart occurrences that fall out contrary to their wishes; who practise great indul-

<sup>1</sup> "Tepor (quia fervore defecit) in desperatione est."—*Past.* p. 3, *adm.* 35.

gence towards themselves on account of their health; who keep their heart open to external objects, and the mind always distracted, with an eagerness to listen to, and to know, so many things that have nothing to do with the service of God, but merely serve to gratify private curiosity; who are ready to resent every little inattention from others, and consequently are often troubled, and grow remiss in prayer and recollection. One moment they are all devotion and joy, the next all impatience and melancholy, just as things happen, according to or against their humor; all such persons do not love Jesus Christ, or love him very little, and cast discredit on true devotion.

But suppose any one should find himself sunk in this unhappy state of tepidity, what has he to do? Certainly it is a hard thing for a soul grown lukewarm to resume her ancient fervor; but our Lord has said, that what man cannot do, God can very well do. *The things that are impossible with man, are possible with God.*<sup>1</sup> Whoever prays and employs the means is sure to accomplish his desire.

## II.

### Remedies against Lukewarmness.

The means to cast off tepidity, and to tread in the path of perfection, are five in number: 1. The desire of perfection; 2. The resolution to attain it; 3. Mental prayer; 4. Frequent Holy Communion; 5. Prayer.

#### 1. *Desire of Perfection.*

The first means, then, is the desire of perfection. Pious desires are the wings which lift us up from earth; for, as St. Laurence Justinian says, desire "supplies strength,

<sup>1</sup> "Quæ impossibilia sunt apud homines, possibilia sunt apud Deum."  
—*Luke*, xviii. 27.

and renders pain more light:"<sup>1</sup> on the one hand it gives strength to walk towards perfection, and on the other hand it lightens the fatigue of the journey. He who has a real desire of perfection fails not to advance continually towards it; and so advancing, he must finally arrive at it. On the contrary, he who has not the desire of perfection will always go backwards, and always find himself more imperfect than before. St. Augustine says, that "not to go forward in the way of God is to go backward."<sup>2</sup> He that makes no efforts to advance will find himself carried backward by the current of his corrupt nature.

They, then, who say "God does not wish us all to be saints" make a great mistake. Yes, for St. Paul says, *This is the Will of God, your sanctification.*<sup>3</sup> God wishes all to be saints, and each one according to his state of life: the religious as a religious; the secular as a secular; the priest as a priest; the married as married; the man of business as a man of business; the soldier as a soldier; and so of every other state of life.

Most beautiful, indeed, are the instructions which my great patroness St. Teresa gives on this subject. She says, in one place, "Let us enlarge our thoughts; for hence we shall derive immense good." Elsewhere she says: "We must beware of having poor desires; but rather put our confidence in God, in order that, by forcing ourselves continually onwards, we may by degrees arrive where, by the divine grace, so many saints have arrived."<sup>4</sup> And in confirmation of this she quoted her own experience, having known how courageous souls make considerable progress in a short period of time.

<sup>1</sup> "Vires subministrat, pœnam exhibet leviolem."—*De Disc. mon.* c. 6.

<sup>2</sup> "Non progredi, jam reverti est."—*Ep.* 17, *E. B. app.*

<sup>3</sup> "Hæc est voluntas Dei, sanctificatio vestra."—I *Thess.* iv. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Life*, ch. 13.

"Because," said she, "the Lord takes as much delight in our desires, as if they were put into execution." In another place she says: "Almighty God does not confer extraordinary favors, except where his love has been earnestly sought after."<sup>1</sup> Again, in another passage, she remarks: "God does not fail to repay every good desire even in this life,<sup>2</sup> for he is the friend of generous souls, provided only they do not trust in themselves."<sup>3</sup> This saint herself was endowed with just such a spirit of generosity; so that she once even said to our Lord, that were she to behold others in paradise enjoying him more than herself, she should not care; but were she to behold any one loving him more than she should love him, this she declared she knew not how she could endure.<sup>4</sup>

We must, therefore, have a great courage: *The Lord is good to the soul that seeketh him.*<sup>5</sup> God is surpassingly good and liberal towards a soul that heartily seeks him. Neither can past sins prove a hindrance to our becoming saints, if we only have the sincere desire to become so. St. Teresa remarks: "The devil strives to make us think it pride to entertain lofty desires, and to wish to imitate the saints; but it is of great service to encourage ourselves with the desire of great things, because, although the soul has not all at once the necessary strength, yet she nevertheless makes a bold fight, and rapidly advances."<sup>6</sup>

The Apostle writes: *To them that love God, all things work together unto good.*<sup>7</sup> And the gloss or ancient commentary adds "even sins;"<sup>8</sup> even past sins can contrib-

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 35.

<sup>2</sup> *Life*, ch. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Life*, ch. 13.

<sup>4</sup> *Rib.* l. 4, c. 10.

<sup>5</sup> "Bonus est Dominus . . . animæ quærenti illum."—*Lam.* iii. 25.

<sup>6</sup> *Life*, ch. 13.

<sup>7</sup> "Diligentibus Deum omnia cooperantur in bonum."—*Rom.* viii. 28.

<sup>8</sup> "Etiam peccata."



ute to our sanctification, inasmuch as the recollection of them keeps us more humble, and more grateful, when we witness the favors which God lavishes upon us, after all our outrages against him. I am capable of nothing (the sinner should say), nor do I deserve anything; I deserve nothing but hell; but I have to deal with a God of infinite bounty, who has promised to listen to all that pray to him. Now, as he has rescued me from a state of damnation, and wishes me to become holy, and now proffers me his help, I can certainly become a saint, not by my own strength, but by the grace of my God, who strengthens me: *I can do all things in Him that strengtheneth me.*<sup>1</sup> When, therefore, we have once good desires, we must take courage, and trusting in God, endeavor to put them in execution; but if afterwards we encounter any obstacle in our spiritual enterprises, let us repose quietly on the will of God. God's will must be preferred before every good desire of our own. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi would sooner have remained void of all perfection than possess it without the will of God.

## 2. *Resolution.*

The second means of perfection is the resolution to belong wholly to God. Many are called to perfection; they are urged on towards it by grace, they conceive a desire of it; but because they never really resolve to acquire it, they live and die in the ill-odor of their tepid and imperfect life. The desire of perfection is not enough, if it be not followed up by a stern resolve to attain it. How many souls feed themselves on desires alone, but never make withal one step in the way of God! It is of such desires that the wise man speaks when he says: *Desires kill the slothful.*<sup>2</sup> The slothful man is ever desiring, but never resolves to take the means suit-

<sup>1</sup> "Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat."—*Phil.* iv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Desideria occidunt pigrum."—*Prov.* xxi. 25.

able to his state of life to become a saint. He says: "Oh, if I were but in solitude, and not in this house! Oh, if I could but go and reside in another monastery, I would give myself entirely up to God!" And meanwhile he cannot support a certain companion; he cannot put up with a word of contradiction; he is dissipated about many useless cares; he commits a thousand faults of gluttony, of curiosity, and of pride; and yet he sighs out to the wind: "Oh, if I had but!" or "Oh, if I could but!" etc. Such desires do more harm than good; because some regale themselves upon them, and in the meantime go on leading a life of imperfection. It was a saying of St. Francis de Sales: "I do not approve of a person who, being engaged in some duty or vocation, stops to sigh for some other kind of life than is compatible with his actual position, or for other exercises unfitted for his present state; for it merely serves to dissipate his heart, and makes him languish in his necessary duties."<sup>1</sup>

We must, therefore, desire perfection, and resolutely take the means towards it. St. Teresa says: "God only looks for one resolution on our part, and will afterwards do all the rest himself;<sup>2</sup> the devil has no fear of irresolute souls."<sup>3</sup> For this reason mental prayer must be used, in order to take the means which lead to perfection. Some make much prayer, but never come to a practical conclusion. The same saint said: "I would rather have a short prayer, which produces great fruits, than a prayer of many years, wherein a soul never gets further than resolving to do something worthy of Almighty God."<sup>4</sup> And elsewhere she says: "I have learned by experience that whoever, at the beginning, brings himself to the resolution of doing some great work, however difficult it

<sup>1</sup> *Introd.* ch. 37.<sup>2</sup> *Found.* ch. 28.<sup>3</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 24<sup>4</sup> *Life*, ch. 39.

may be, if he does so to please God, he has no reason to be afraid."

The first resolution must be to make every effort, and to die rather than commit any deliberate sin whatever, however small it may be. It is true that all our endeavors, without the divine assistance, cannot enable us to vanquish temptations; but God wishes us on our part frequently to use this violence with ourselves, because then he will afterwards supply us with his grace, will succor our weakness, and enable us to gain the victory. This resolution removes from us every obstacle to our going forward, and at the same time gives us great courage, because it affords us an assurance of being in the grace of God. St. Francis de Sales writes: "The best security we can possess in this world of being in the grace of God, consists not indeed in feeling that we have his love, but in a pure and irrevocable abandonment of our entire being into his hands, and in the firm resolution of never consenting to any sin, either great or small."<sup>1</sup> This is what is meant by being of a delicate conscience. Be it observed, that it is one thing to be of a delicate conscience, and another to be of a scrupulous conscience. To be of a delicate conscience is requisite to become a saint; but to be scrupulous is a defect, and does harm; and on this account we must obey our directors, and rise above scruples, which are nothing else but vain and unreasonable alarms.

Hence it is necessary to resolve on choosing the best, not only what is agreeable to God, but what is most agreeable to him, without any reserve. St. Francis de Sales says: "We must start with a strong and constant resolution to give ourselves wholly to God, and protest to him that for the future we wish to be his without any reserve, and then we must afterwards often renew this

<sup>1</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 9.

same resolution.”<sup>1</sup> St. Andrew Avellini made a vow to advance daily in perfection. It is not necessary for every one who wishes to become a saint to make it the matter of a vow; but he must endeavor every day to make some steps forward in perfection. St. Laurence Justinian has written: “When a person is really making way, he feels in himself a continual desire of advancing; and the more he improves in perfection, the more this desire increases; because as his interior light increases each day more and more, he seems to himself always to be wanting in every virtue, and to be doing no good at all; and if, perchance, he is aware of some good he does, it always appears to him very imperfect, and he makes small account of it. The consequence is, he is continually laboring to acquire perfection without ever feeling wearied.”

And we must begin quickly, and not wait for the morrow. Who knows whether we shall afterwards find time or not! Ecclesiastes counsels us: *Whatsoever thy hand is able to do, do it earnestly.*<sup>2</sup> What thou canst do, do it quickly, and defer it not; and he adduces the reason why: *For neither work, nor reason, nor wisdom, nor knowledge shall be in hell, whither thou art hastening.*<sup>3</sup> Because in the next life there is no more time to work, nor free-will to merit, nor prudence to do well, nor wisdom or experience to take good counsel by, for after death what is done is done.

A nun of the convent of Torre de Specchi in Rome, whose name was Sister Bonaventura, led a very lukewarm sort of life. There came a religious, Father Lancicius, to give the spiritual exercises to the nuns, and Sister Bonaventura, feeling no inclination to shake off

<sup>1</sup> *Love of God*, B. 12, ch. 8.

<sup>2</sup> “Quodcumque facere potest manus tua, instanter operare.”—*Eccles.* ix. 10.

<sup>3</sup> “Quia nec opus, nec ratio, nec sapientia nec scientia, erunt apud inferos, quo tu properas.”—*Ibid.*

her tepidity, began to listen to the exercises with no good will. But at the very first sermon she was won by divine grace, so that she immediately went to the feet of the Father who preached, and said to him, with a tone of real determination, "Father, I wish to become a saint, and quickly a saint." And, by the assistance of God, she did so; for she lived only eight months after that event, and during that short time she lived and died a saint.

David said: *And I said, now have I begun.*<sup>1</sup> So likewise exclaimed St. Charles Borromeo: "To-day I begin to serve God." And we should act in the same way as if we had hitherto done no good whatever; for, indeed, all that we do for God is nothing, since we are bound to do it. Let us therefore each day resolve to begin afresh to belong wholly to God. Neither let us stop to observe what or how others do. They who become truly saints are few. St. Bernard says: "One cannot be perfect without being singular."<sup>2</sup> If we would imitate the common run of men, we should always remain imperfect, as for the most part they are. We must overcome all, renounce all, in order to gain all. St. Teresa said: "Because we do not come to the conclusion of giving all our affection to God, so neither does he give all his love to us."<sup>3</sup> Oh, God, how little is all that is given to Jesus Christ, who has given his blood and his life for us! "However much we give," says the same saint, "is but dirt, in comparison of one single drop of blood shed for us by our Blessed Lord."<sup>4</sup> The saints know not how to spare themselves, when there is a question of pleasing a God who gave himself wholly, without reserve, on purpose to oblige us to deny him nothing. St. John Chrysostom

<sup>1</sup> "Et dixi: Nunc coepi."—*Ps.* lxxvi. 11.

<sup>2</sup> "Perfectum esse non potest nisi singulare."

<sup>3</sup> *Life*, ch. 11.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* ch. 39.

wrote: "He gave all to thee, and kept nothing for himself."<sup>1</sup> God has bestowed his entire self upon thee; there is, then, no excuse for thee to behave reservedly with God. He has even died for us all, says the Apostle, in order that each one of us may live only for him who died for us: *Christ died for all; that they also who live may not now live to themselves, but unto Him who died for them.*<sup>2</sup>

### 3. *Mental Prayer.*

The third means of becoming a saint is *mental prayer*. John Gerson writes:<sup>3</sup> "That he who does not meditate on the eternal truths cannot, without a miracle, lead the life of a Christian. The reason is, because without mental prayer light fails us, and we walk in the dark. The truths of faith are not seen by the eyes of the body, but by the eyes of the mind, when we meditate; he that fails to meditate on them, fails to see them, and therefore walks in the dark; and being in the dark, he easily grows attached to sensible things, for the sake of which he then comes to despise the eternal." St. Teresa wrote as follows to the Bishop of Osma: "Although we seem to discover in ourselves no imperfections; yet, when God opens the eyes of the soul, which he is wont to do in prayer, then they plainly appear."<sup>4</sup> And St. Bernard had before said, that he who does not meditate "does not abhor himself, merely because he does not know himself."<sup>5</sup> "Prayer," says the saint, "regulates the affections, directs the actions,"<sup>6</sup> keeps the affections of the soul in order, and directs all our actions to God; but without prayer the affections

<sup>1</sup> "Totum tibi dedit, nihil sibi reliquit."

<sup>2</sup> "Pro omnibus mortuus est Christus, ut et qui vivunt, jam non sibi vivant, sed ei qui pro ipsis mortuus est."—2 *Cor.* v. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *De Med. cons.* 7.

<sup>4</sup> *Lettre* 8.

<sup>5</sup> "Seipsum non exhorret, quia nec sentit."—*De Cons.* l. I, c. 2.

<sup>6</sup> "Consideratio regit affectus, dirigit actus."—*Ibid.* c. 7.



become attached to the earth, the actions conform themselves to the affections, and in this manner all runs into disorder.

We read of an awful example of this in the life of the Venerable Sister Mary Crucified of Sicily. Whilst this servant of God was praying, she heard a devil making a boast that he had succeeded in withdrawing a religious from the community-prayer; and she saw in spirit, that after this omission the devil tempted her to consent to a grievous sin, and that she was on the point of yielding. She forthwith accosted her, and by a timely admonition prevented her from falling. Abbé Dioclès said, that whoever leaves off prayer "very shortly becomes either a beast or a devil."<sup>1</sup>

He therefore that leaves off prayer will leave off loving Jesus Christ. Prayer is the blessed furnace in which the fire of holy love is enkindled and kept alive: *And in my meditation a fire shall flame out.*<sup>2</sup> It was said by St. Catharine of Bologna: "The person that foregoes the practice of prayer cuts that string which binds the soul to God." It follows that the devil, finding the soul cold in divine love, will have little difficulty in inducing her to partake of some poisonous fruit or other. St. Teresa said, on the contrary, "Whosoever perseveres in prayer, let him hold for a certainty, that with however many sins the devil may surround him, the Lord will eventually bring him into the haven of salvation."<sup>3</sup> In another place she says, "Whoever halts not in the way of prayer arrives sooner or later."<sup>4</sup> And elsewhere she writes, "that it is on this account that the devil labors so hard to withdraw souls from prayer, because he well knows that he has missed gaining those who faithfully perse-

<sup>1</sup> *Pall. Hist. laus.* c. 98.

<sup>2</sup> "In meditatione mea exardescet ignis."—*Ps.* xxxviii. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Life.* ch. 8.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* ch. 19.

vere in prayer." Oh, how great are the benefits that flow from prayer! In prayer we conceive holy thoughts, we practise devout affections, we excite great desires, and form efficacious resolutions to give ourselves wholly to God; and thus the soul is led for his sake to sacrifice earthly pleasures and all disorderly appetites. It was said by St. Aloysius Gonzaga: "There will never be much perfection without much prayer." Let him who longs for perfection mark well this notable saying of the saint.

We should not go to prayer in order to taste the sweetness of divine love; whoever prays from such a motive will lose his time, or at least derive little advantage from it. A person should begin to pray solely to please God, that is, solely to learn what the will of God is in his regard, and to beg of him the help to put it in practice. The Venerable Father Antony Torres said: "To carry the cross without consolation makes souls fly to perfection. Prayer unattended with sensible consolations confers greater fruit on the soul. But pitiable is the poor soul that leaves off prayer, because she finds no relish in it." St. Teresa said: "When a soul leaves off prayer, it is as if she cast herself into hell without any need of devils."<sup>1</sup>

It results, too, from the practice of prayer, that a person constantly thinks of God. "The true lover" (says St. Teresa) "is ever mindful of the beloved one. And hence it follows that persons of prayer are always speaking of God, knowing, as they do, how pleasing it is to God that his lovers should delight in conversing about him, and on the love he bears them, and that thus they should endeavor to enkindle it in others."<sup>2</sup> The same saint wrote: "Jesus Christ is always found present at the conversations of the servants of God, and he is very much gratified to be the subject of their delight."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 19.<sup>2</sup> *Found.* ch. 5.<sup>3</sup> *Life*, ch. 34.

Prayer, again, creates that desire of retiring into solitude, in order to converse alone with God, and to maintain interior recollection in the discharge of necessary external duties; I say *necessary*, such as the management of one's family, or of the performance of duties required of us by obedience; because a person of prayer must love solitude, and avoid dissipation in superfluous and useless affairs, otherwise he will lose the spirit of recollection, which is a great means of preserving union with God: *My sister, my spouse is a garden enclosed.*<sup>1</sup> The soul espoused to Jesus Christ must be a garden closed against all creatures, and must not admit into her heart other thoughts, nor other business, but those of God or for God. Hearts thrown open never become saints. The saints, who have to labor in gaining souls to God, do not lose their recollection in the midst of all their labors, either of preaching, confessing, reconciling enemies, or assisting the sick. The same rule holds good with those who have to apply to study. How many from excessive study, and a desire to become learned, become neither holy nor learned, because true learning consists in the science of the saints; that is to say, in knowing how to love Jesus Christ; whereas, on the contrary, divine love brings with it knowledge and every good: *All good things came to me together with her,*<sup>2</sup> that is, with holy charity. The Venerable John Berchmans had an extraordinary love for study, but by his great virtue he never allowed study to interfere with his spiritual interests. The Apostle exhorts us: *Not to be more wise than it behoveth to be wise, but to be wise unto sobriety.*<sup>3</sup> A priest especially must have knowledge; he must know things, because he

<sup>1</sup> "Hortus conclusus, soror mea sponsa."—*Cant.* iv. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Venerunt autem mihi omnia bona pariter cum illa."—*Wisd.* vii. 11.

<sup>3</sup> "Non plus sapere, quam oportet sapere, sed sapere ad sobrietatem."—*Rom.* xii. 3.

has to instruct others in the divine law: *For the lips of the priest shall keep knowledge, and they shall seek the law at his mouth.*<sup>1</sup> He must have knowledge, *but unto sobriety.* He that leaves prayer for study shows that in his study he seeks himself, and not God. He that seeks God leaves study (if it be not absolutely necessary), in order not to omit prayer.

Besides, the greatest evil is, that without mental prayer we do not pray at all. I have spoken frequently in my spiritual works of the necessity of prayer, and more especially in a little volume entitled, *On Prayer, the great Means, etc.*; and in the present chapter also I will briefly say a few other things. It will be sufficient then to quote here the opinion of the Venerable Palafox, Bishop of Osma, in his remarks on the letters of St. Teresa: "How can charity last, unless God grant us perseverance? How will the Lord grant us perseverance unless we ask it of him? And how shall we ask it of him except by prayer? Without prayer there is no communication with God for the preservation of virtue."<sup>2</sup> And so it is, because he that neglects mental prayer sees very little into the wants of his soul, he knows little of the dangers of his salvation, of the means to be used in order to overcome temptations; and so, understanding little of the necessity of prayer, he leaves off praying, and will certainly be lost.

Then as regards subjects for meditation, nothing is more useful than to meditate on the Four Last Things—death, judgment, hell, and heaven; but it is of especial advantage to meditate on death, and to imagine ourselves expiring on the bed of sickness, with the crucifix in our hands, and on the point of entering into eternity. But above all, to one that loves Jesus Christ, and is

<sup>1</sup> "Labia enim sacerdotis custodient scientiam, et legem requirent ex ore ejus."—*Mal.* ii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Lettre* 8.

anxious always to increase in his love, no consideration is more efficacious than that of the Passion of the Redeemer. St. Francis de Sales calls "Mount Calvary the mountain of lovers." All the lovers of Jesus Christ love to abide on this mountain, where no air is breathed but the air of divine love. When we see a God dying for our love, and dying in order to gain our love (*He loved us, and delivered Himself up for us*<sup>1</sup>), it is impossible not to love him ardently. Such darts of love continually issue forth from the wounds of Christ crucified as pierce even hearts of stone. Oh, happy is he who is ever going during this life to the heights of Calvary! O blessed Mount! O lovely Mount! O beloved Mount! and who shall ever leave thee more! A Mount that sends forth flames to enkindle the souls that perseveringly abide upon thee!

#### 4. *Frequent Communion.*

The fourth means of perfection, and even of perseverance in the grace of God, is frequently to receive the Holy Communion, of which we have already spoken in the Introduction, § II., page 275, where we affirmed that a soul can do nothing more pleasing to Jesus Christ than to receive him often in the Sacrament of the Altar. St. Teresa said: "There is no better help to perfection than frequent Communion: oh, how admirably does the Lord bring such a soul to perfection!" And she adds, that, ordinarily speaking, they who communicate most frequently are found further advanced in perfection; and that there is greater spirituality in those communities where frequent Communion is the custom. For this reason it is that, as we find declared in a decree of Innocent XI., in 1679, the holy Fathers have so highly extolled, and so much promoted, the practice of frequent and even of daily Communion. Holy Communion, as the Council

<sup>1</sup> "Dilexit nos et tradidit semetipsum pro nobis."—*Eph.* v. 2.

of Trent tells us, delivers us from daily faults, and preserves us from mortal ones. St. Bernard asserts<sup>1</sup> that Communion represses the movements of anger and incontinence, which are the two passions that most frequently and most violently assail us. St. Thomas says,<sup>2</sup> that Communion defeats the suggestions of the devil. And finally, St. John Chrysostom says, that Communion pours into our souls a great inclination to virtue, and a promptitude to practise it ; and at the same time imparts to us a great peace, by which the path of perfection is made very sweet and easy to us. Besides, there is no sacrament so capable of kindling the divine love in souls as the Holy Sacrament of the Eucharist, in which Jesus Christ bestows on us his whole self, in order to unite us all to himself by means of holy love. Wherefore the Venerable Father John of Avila said : “Whoever deters souls from frequent Communion does the work of the devil.” Yes; for the devil has a great horror of this sacrament, from which souls derive immense strength to advance in divine love.

But the proper preparation is requisite to communicate well. The first preparation, or, in other terms, the remote preparation, to be able to go to Communion daily, or several times in the week, is: 1. To keep free from all deliberate affection to sin—that is, to sin committed, as we say, with the eyes open. 2. The practice of much mental prayer. 3. The mortification of the senses and of the passions. St. Francis de Sales<sup>3</sup> teaches as follows: “Whoever has overcome the greatest part of his bad inclinations, and has arrived at a notable degree of perfection, can communicate every day.” The angelic Doctor St. Thomas says,<sup>4</sup> that any one who knows by experience that his soul derives an increase of divine love from the Holy Communion may communicate

<sup>1</sup> *In Cæna D.* s. I.

<sup>2</sup> P. 3, q. 79, a. 6.

<sup>3</sup> *Introd.* ch. 20.

<sup>4</sup> *In 4 Sent.* d. 12, q. 3, a. 1, s. 2.



daily. Hence Innocent XI., in the above-mentioned decree, said that the greater or less frequency of Holy Communion must rest on the decision of the confessor who ought to be guided in this matter by the profit which he sees accrue to the souls under his direction. In the next place, the proximate preparation for Communion is that which is made on the morning itself of Communion, for which there is need of at least half an hour of mental prayer.

To reap also more abundant fruit from Communion, we must make a long thanksgiving. Father John of Avila said that the time after communion is "a time to gain treasures of graces." St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi used to say that no time can be more calculated to inflame us with divine love than the time immediately after our Communion. And St. Teresa says: "After Communion let us be careful not to lose so good an opportunity of negotiating with God. His divine majesty is not accustomed to pay badly for his lodging, if he meets with a good reception."<sup>1</sup>

There are certain pusillanimous souls, who, on being exhorted to communicate more frequently, reply: "But I am not worthy." But, do you not know, that the more you refrain from Communion, the more unworthy you become of it? Because, deprived of Holy Communion, you will have less strength, and will commit many faults. Well, then, obey your director, and be guided by him: faults do not forbid Holy Communion, when they are not committed with full will; besides, among your failings, the greatest is, not to submit to what your spiritual Father says to you.

"But in my past life I was very bad." And I reply, that you must know, that he who is weakest has most need of the physician and of medicine. Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament is our physician and medicine as well.

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perfection*, ch. 35.

St. Ambrose said: "I, who am always sinning, have always need of medicine."<sup>1</sup> You will then say, perhaps: "But my confessor does not tell me to communicate oftener." If, then, he does not tell you to do so, ask his permission to communicate oftener. Should he deny you, obey him; but in the mean time make him the request. "It would seem pride." It would be pride if you were to wish to communicate against his will, but not when you ask his consent with humility. This heavenly bread requires hunger. Jesus loves to be desired, says a devout author; "He thirsts to be thirsted for."<sup>2</sup> And what a thought is this: "To-day I have communicated, and to-morrow I have to communicate." Oh, how such a reflection keeps the soul attentive to avoid all defects and to do the will of God! "But I have no devotion." If you mean sensible devotion, it is not necessary, neither does God always grant it even to his most beloved souls. It is enough for you to have the devotion of a will determined to belong wholly to God, and to make progress in his divine love. John Gerson says,<sup>3</sup> that he who abstains from Communion because he does not feel that devotion which he would like to feel, acts like a man who does not approach the fire because he does not feel warm.

Alas, my God, how many souls, for want of applying themselves to lead a life of greater recollection and more detachment from earthly things, care not to seek Holy Communion! and this is the true cause of their not wishing to communicate more frequently. They are well aware that to be wishing always to appear, to dress with vanity, to be fond of nice eating and drinking, of bodily comforts, of conversations and amusements, does not

<sup>1</sup> "Qui semper pecco, semper debeo habere medicum."—*De Sacram.*

l. 4, c. 6.

<sup>2</sup> "Sitit sitiri Deus."—*Tetr. Sent.* 37.

<sup>3</sup> *Sup. Magn. tr.* 9, p. 3.

harmonize with frequent Communion ; they know that more prayer is required, more mortification, as well internal as external, more seclusion ; and on this account they are ashamed to approach the altar more frequently. Without doubt, such souls are right to refrain from frequent Communion as long as they find themselves in that unhappy state of lukewarmness ; but whoever is called to a more perfect life should lay aside this lukewarmness, if he would not greatly risk his eternal salvation.

It will be found likewise to contribute very much to keep fervor alive in the soul, often to make a *spiritual Communion*, so much recommended by the Council of Trent,<sup>1</sup> which exhorts all the faithful to practise it. The spiritual Communion, as St. Thomas says,<sup>2</sup> consists in an ardent desire to receive Jesus Christ in the Holy Sacrament ; and therefore the saints were careful to make it several times in the day. The method of making it is this: "My Jesus, I believe that Thou art really present in the Most Holy Sacrament. I love Thee, and I desire Thee; come to my soul. I embrace Thee; and I beseech Thee never to allow me to be separated from Thee again." Or more briefly thus: "My Jesus, come to me; I desire Thee; I embrace Thee; let us remain ever united together." This spiritual Communion may be practised several times a day: when we make our prayer, when we make our visit to the Blessed Sacrament, and especially when we attend Mass at the moment of the priest's Communion. The Dominican Sister Blessed Angela of the Cross said: "If my confessor had not taught me this method of communicating spiritually several times a day, I should not have trusted myself to live."

##### 5. *Prayer.*

The fifth and most necessary means for the spiritual

<sup>1</sup> Sess. xiii. cap. 8.

<sup>2</sup> P. 3. q. 79, a. 1.

life, and for obtaining the love of Jesus Christ, is *prayer*. In the first place, I say that by this means God convinces us of the great love he bears us. What greater proof of affection can a person give to a friend than to say to him, "My friend, ask anything you like of me, and I will give it you?" Now, this is precisely what our Lord says to us: *Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find.*<sup>1</sup> Wherefore prayer is called all-powerful with God to obtain every blessing: "Prayer, though it is one, can effect all things," as Theodoret says;<sup>2</sup> whoever prays, obtains from God whatever he chooses. The words of David are beautiful: *Blessed be God who hath not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me.*<sup>3</sup> Commenting on this passage, St. Augustine says, "As long as thou seest thyself not failing in prayer, be assured that the divine mercy will not fail thee either." And St. John Chrysostom: "We always obtain, even while we are still praying."<sup>4</sup> When we pray to God he grants us the grace we ask for, even before we have ended our petition. If then we are poor, let us blame only ourselves, since we are poor merely because we wish to be poor, and so we are undeserving of pity. What sympathy can there be for a beggar, who, having a very rich master, and one most desirous to provide him with everything if he will only ask for it, nevertheless chooses still to continue in his poverty sooner than ask for what he wants? "Behold," says the Apostle, "our God is ready to enrich all who call upon him:" *Rich unto all that call upon Him.*<sup>5</sup>

Humble prayer, then, obtains all from God; but we

<sup>1</sup> "Petite, et dabitur vobis; quærite, et invenietis."—*Matt.* vii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Oratio cum sit una omnia potest."—*Ap. Rodr.* p. I, tr. 5, c. 14; *Wisd.* vii. 27.

<sup>3</sup> "Benedictus Deus, qui non amovit orationem meam et misericordiam suam a me."—*Ps.* lxxv. 20.

<sup>4</sup> "Semper obtinemus, etiam dum adhuc oramus."

<sup>5</sup> "Dives in omnibus qui invocant illum."—*Rom.* x. 12.

must be persuaded at the same time, that if it be useful, it is no less necessary for our salvation. It is certain that we absolutely require the divine assistance, in order to overcome temptations; and sometimes, in certain more violent assaults, the sufficient grace which God gives to all, might possibly enable us to resist them; but on account of our inclination to evil, it will not ordinarily be sufficient, and we shall stand in need of a special grace. Whoever prays obtains this grace; but whoever prays not, obtains it not, and is lost. And this is more especially the case with regard to the grace of *final perseverance*, of dying in the grace of God, which is the grace absolutely necessary for our salvation, and without which we should be lost forever. St. Augustine<sup>1</sup> says of this grace, that God only bestows it on those who pray. And this is the reason why so few are saved, because few indeed are mindful to beg of God this grace of perseverance.

In fine, the holy Fathers say, that prayer is necessary for us, not merely as a *necessity of precept* (so that divines say, that he who neglects for a month to recommend to God the affair of his salvation is not exempt from mortal sin), but also as a *necessity of means*, which is as much as to say, that whoever does not pray cannot possibly be saved. And the reason of it is, in short, because we cannot obtain eternal salvation without the help of divine grace, and this grace Almighty God only accords to those who pray. And because temptations, and the dangers of falling into God's displeasure, continually beset us, so ought our prayers to be continual. Hence St. Thomas declares that continual prayer is necessary for a man to save himself: "Unceasing prayer is necessary to man, that he may enter heaven."<sup>2</sup> And Jesus Christ

<sup>1</sup> *De Dono pers.* c. 16.

<sup>2</sup> "Necessaria est homini jugis oratio, ad hoc quod cœlum introeat."  
—P. 3, q. 39, a. 5.

himself had already said the same thing: *We ought always to pray, and not to faint.*<sup>1</sup> And afterwards the Apostle: *Pray without ceasing.*<sup>2</sup> During the interval in which we shall cease to pray, the devil will conquer us. And though the grace of perseverance can in no wise be merited by us, as the Council of Trent teaches us,<sup>3</sup> nevertheless St. Augustine says, "that in a certain sense we can merit it by prayer."<sup>4</sup> The Lord wishes to dispense his grace to us, but he will be entreated first; nay more, as St. Gregory remarks, he wills to be importuned, and in a manner constrained by our prayers: "God wishes to be prayed to,—he wishes to be compelled,—he wishes to be, as it were, vanquished by our importunity."<sup>5</sup> St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said, "that when we ask graces of God, he not only hears us, but in a certain sense thanks us." Yes, because God, as the infinite goodness, in wishing to pour out himself upon others, has, so to speak, an infinite longing to distribute his gifts; but he wishes to be besought: hence it follows, that when he sees himself entreated by a soul, he receives so much pleasure, that in a certain sense he thanks that soul for it.

Well, then, if we wish to preserve ourselves in the grace of God till death, we must act the mendicant, and keep our mouths open to beg for God's help, always repeating, "My Jesus, mercy; never let me be separated from Thee; O Lord, come to my aid; My God, assist me!" This was the unceasing prayer of the ancient Fathers of the desert: "Incline unto my aid, O God;

<sup>1</sup> "Oportet semper orare, et non deficere."—*Luke*, xviii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> "Sine intermissione orate."—I *Thess.* v. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Sess.* vi. *cap.* 13.

<sup>4</sup> "Hoc Dei donum suppliciter emereri potest."—*De Dono pers.* c. 6.

<sup>5</sup> "Vult Deus rogari, vult cogi, vult quadam importunitate vinci."—*In Ps.* vi. *pæn.*



O Lord, make haste to help me! <sup>1</sup> O Lord, help me, and help me soon; for if Thou delayest Thy assistance, I shall fall and perish!" And this above all must be practised in the moment of temptation; he who acts otherwise is lost.

And let us have a great faith in prayer. God has promised to hear him that prays: *Ask, and you shall receive.*<sup>2</sup> How can we doubt, says St. Augustine, since God has bound himself by express promise, and cannot fail to grant us the favors we ask of him? "By promising he has made himself our debtor."<sup>3</sup> In recommending ourselves to God, we must have a sure confidence that God hears us, and then we shall obtain whatever we want. Behold what Jesus Christ says: *All things, whatsoever you ask when ye pray, believe that you shall receive, and they shall come unto you.*<sup>4</sup>

"But," some one may say, "I am a sinner, and do not deserve to be heard." But Jesus Christ says: *Every one that asketh, receiveth.*<sup>5</sup> Every one, be he just, or be he a sinner. St. Thomas teaches us that the efficacy of prayer to obtain graces does not depend on our merits, but on the mercy of God, who has promised to hear every one who prays to him.<sup>6</sup> And our Redeemer, in order to remove from us all fear when we pray, said: *Amen, amen, I say to you, if you shall ask the Father anything in My name, He will give it you.*<sup>7</sup> As though he would say: Sinners,

<sup>1</sup> "Deus, in adjutorium meum intende; Domine, ad adjuvandum me festina."—*Ps.* lxix. 2.

<sup>2</sup> "Petite, et accipietis."—*John*, xvi. 24.

<sup>3</sup> "Promittendo, debitorem se fecit."—*Serm.* 110, *E. B.*

<sup>4</sup> "Omnia quæcumque orantes petitis, credite quia accipietis, et evenient vobis."—*Mark*, xi. 24.

<sup>5</sup> "Omnis qui petit, accipit."—*Luke*, xi. 10.

<sup>6</sup> "Oratio in impetrando non innitur merito, sed divinæ misericordiæ."—2. 2, q. 178, a. 2.

<sup>7</sup> "Amen, amen, dico vobis: si quid petieritis Patrem in nomine meo, dabit vobis."—*John*, xvi. 23.

you have no merits of your own to obtain graces, wherefore do in this manner; when you would obtain graces, ask them of my Father in my name; that is, through my merits and through my love; and then ask as many as you choose, and they shall be granted to you. But let us mark well those words, "In My name;" which signify (as St. Thomas explains it), "in the name of the Saviour;" or, in other words, that the graces which we ask must be graces which regard our eternal salvation; and consequently we must remark that the promise does not regard temporal favors; these our Lord grants, when they are profitable for our eternal welfare; if they would prove otherwise, he refuses them. So that we should always ask for temporal favors, on condition that they will benefit our soul. But should they be spiritual graces, then they require no condition; but with confidence, and a sure confidence, we should say: "Eternal Father, in the name of Jesus Christ deliver me from this temptation: grant me holy perseverance, grant me Thy love, grant me heaven." We can likewise ask these graces of Jesus Christ in his own name; that is, by his merits, since we have his promise also to this effect: *If you shall ask Me anything in My name, that I will do.*<sup>1</sup>

And whilst we pray to God, let us not forget to recommend ourselves at the same time to Mary, the dispenser of graces. St. Bernard says, that it is Almighty God who bestows the graces; but he bestows them through the hands of Mary: "Let us seek grace, and let us seek it through Mary; because what she seeks she finds, and cannot be refused."<sup>2</sup> If Mary prays for us, we are safe; for every petition of Mary is heard, and she can never meet with a repulse.

<sup>1</sup> "Si quid petieritis me in nomine meo, hoc faciam."—*John*, xiv. 14.

<sup>2</sup> "Quæramus gratiam, et per Mariam quæramus; quia, quod quærit, invenit, et frustrari non potest."—*De Aquæd.*

*Affections and Prayers.*

O Jesus, my love, I am determined to love Thee as much as I can, and I wish to become a saint ; and I wish to become a saint for this reason, in order to give Thee pleasure, and to love Thee exceedingly in this life and the next ! I can do nothing of myself, but Thou canst do all things ; and I know that Thou wishest me to become a saint. I see already that by Thy grace my soul sighs only for Thee, and seeks nothing else but Thee. I wish to live no more for myself ; Thou desirest me to be wholly Thine, and I desire to be wholly Thine. Come, and unite me to Thyself, and Thyself to me. Thou art infinite goodness ; Thou art he who hast loved me so much ; Thou art, indeed, too loving and too lovely ; how, then, can I love anything but Thee ? I prefer Thy love before all the things of this world ; Thou art the sole object, the sole end of all my affections. I leave all to be occupied solely in loving Thee, my Redeemer, my Comforter, my hope, my love, and my all. I will not despair of becoming a saint on account of the sins of my past life ; for I know, my Jesus, that Thou didst die in order to pardon the truly penitent. I love Thee now with my whole heart, with my whole soul ; I love Thee more than myself, and I bewail, above every other evil, ever having had the misfortune to despise Thee, my sovereign good. Now I am no longer my own, I am Thine ; O God of my heart, dispose of me as Thou pleasest. In order to please Thee, I accept of all the tribulations Thou mayest choose to send me—sickness, sorrow, troubles, ignominies, poverty, persecution, desolation—I accept all to please Thee : in like manner I accept of the death Thou hast decreed for me, with all the anguish and crosses which may accompany it : it is enough if Thou grantest me the grace to love Thee exceedingly. Lend me Thy assistance ; give me strength henceforth to compensate, by my love, for all the bitterness that I have caused Thee in past time, O only love of my soul !

O Queen of Heaven, O Mother of God, O great advocate of sinners, I trust in thee !

## CHAPTER V.

## CHARITY IS NOT PUFFED UP.

*(Charitas non inflatur.)*

He that loves Jesus Christ is not vain of his own Worth, but humbles himself, and is glad to be humbled by Others.

A PROUD person is like a balloon filled with air, which seems, indeed, great; but whose greatness, in reality, is nothing more than a little air; which, as soon as the balloon is opened, is quickly dispersed. He who loves God is humble, and is not elated at seeing any worth in himself; because he knows that whatever he possesses is the gift of God, and that of his own he has only nothingness and sin; so that this knowledge of the divine favors bestowed on him humbles him the more; whilst he is conscious of being so unworthy, and yet so favored by God.

St. Teresa says, in speaking of the especial favors she received from God: "God does with me as they do with a house, which, when about to fall, they prop up with supports." When a soul receives a loving visit from God, and feels within herself an unwonted fervor of divine love, accompanied with tears, or with a great tenderness of heart, let her beware of supposing that God so favors her, in reward for some good action; but let her then humble herself the more, concluding that God caresses her in order that she may not forsake him; otherwise, were she to make such favors the subject of vain complacency, imagining herself more privileged, because she receives greater gifts from God than others, such a fault would induce God to deprive her of his favors. Two things are chiefly requisite for the stability of a house—the foundation and the roof; the founda-

tion in us must be humility, in acknowledging ourselves good for nothing, and capable of nothing; and the roof is the divine assistance, in which alone we ought to put all our trust.

Whenever we behold ourselves unusually favored by God, we must humble ourselves the more. When St. Teresa received any special favor, she used to strive to place before her eyes all the faults she had ever committed; and thus the Lord received her into closer union with himself: the more a soul confesses herself undeserving of any favors, the more God enriches her with his graces. Thais, who was first a sinner and then a saint, humbled herself so profoundly before God that she dared not even mention his name; so that she had not the courage to say, "My God;" but she said, "My Creator, have mercy on me!"<sup>1</sup> And St. Jerome writes, that in recompense for such humility, she saw a glorious throne prepared for her in heaven. In the life of St. Margaret of Cortona we read the same thing; that, when our Lord visited her one day with greater tokens of tenderness and love, she exclaimed: "But, O Lord, hast Thou then forgotten what I have been? Is it possible that Thou canst repay all my outrages against Thee with so exquisite sweetness?" And God replied, that when a soul loves him, and cordially repents of having offended him, he forgets all her past infidelities; as, indeed, he formerly spoke by the mouth of Ezechiel: *But if the wicked do penance . . . I will not remember all his iniquities.*<sup>2</sup> And in proof of this, he showed her a high throne, which he had prepared for her in heaven in the midst of the seraphim. Oh, that we could only well comprehend the value of humility! A single act of humility is worth more than all the riches of the universe.

<sup>1</sup> "Qui plasmasti me, miserere mei."—*Vitæ Patr.* l. i.

<sup>2</sup> "Si autem impius egerit pœnitentiam, . . . omnium iniquitatum ejus, quas operatus est, non recordabor."—*Ezech.* xviii. 21, 22.

It was the saying of St. Teresa, "Think not that thou hast advanced far in perfection, till thou considerest thyself the worst of all, and desirest to be placed below all." And on this maxim the saint acted, and so have done all the saints; St. Francis of Assisi, St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, and the rest, considered themselves the greatest sinners in the world, and were surprised that the earth sheltered them, and did not rather open under their feet to swallow them up alive; and they expressed themselves to this effect with the sincerest conviction. The Venerable Father John of Avila, who, from his earliest infancy had led a holy life, was on his deathbed; and the priest who came to attend him said many sublime things to him, taking him for what indeed he was, a great servant of God and a learned man; but Father Avila thus spoke to him: "Father, I pray you to make the recommendation of my soul, as of the soul of a criminal condemned to death; for such I am." This is the opinion which saints entertain of themselves in life and death.

We, too, must act in this manner, if we would save our souls, and keep ourselves in the grace of God till death, reposing all our confidence in God alone. The proud man relies on his own strength, and falls on that account; but the humble man, by placing all his trust in God alone, stands firm and falls not, however violent and multiplied the temptations may be; for his watchword is: *I can do all things in Him that strengtheneth me.*<sup>1</sup> The devil at one time tempts us to presumption, at another time to diffidence; whenever he suggests to us that we are in no danger of falling, then we should tremble the more; for were God but for an instant to withdraw his grace from us, we are lost. When, again, he tempts us to diffidence, then let us turn to God, and thus address him with great confidence: *In Thee, O Lord, have I hoped,*

<sup>1</sup> "Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat."—*Phil.* iv. 13.



*I shall never be confounded.*<sup>1</sup> My God, in Thee I have put all my hopes; I hope never to meet with confusion, nor to be bereft of Thy grace. We ought to exercise ourselves continually, even to the very last moments of our life, in these acts of diffidence in ourselves and of confidence in God, always beseeching God to grant us humility.

But it is not enough, in order to be humble, to have a lowly opinion of ourselves, and to consider ourselves the miserable beings that we really are; the man who is truly humble, says Thomas à Kempis,<sup>2</sup> despises himself, and wishes also to be despised by others. This is what Jesus Christ so earnestly recommends us to practise, after his example: *Learn of Me, because I am meek and humble of heart.*<sup>3</sup> Whoever styles himself the greatest sinner in the world, and then is angry when others despise him, plainly shows humility of tongue, but not of heart. St. Thomas Aquinas says, that a person who resents being slighted may be certain that he is far distant from perfection, even though he should work miracles. The divine Mother sent St. Ignatius Loyola from heaven to instruct St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi in humility; and behold the lesson which the saint gave her: "Humility is a gladness at whatever leads us to despise ourselves."<sup>4</sup> Mark well, a *gladness*; if the feelings are stirred with resentment at the contempt we receive, at least let us be glad in spirit.

And how is it possible for a soul not to love contempt, if she loves Jesus Christ, and beholds how her God was buffeted and spit upon, and how he suffered in his Passion! *Then did they spit in His face and buffeted Him; and*

<sup>1</sup> "In te, Domine, speravi; non confundar in æternum."—*Ps.* xxx. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Imit. Chr.* B. 3, c. 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Discite a me, quia mitis sum et humilis corde."—*Matt.* xi. 29.

<sup>4</sup> *Cepar.* c. 11.

*others struck His face with the palms of their hands.*<sup>1</sup> For this purpose our Redeemer wishes us to keep his image exposed on our altars, not indeed representing him in glory, but nailed to the cross, that we might have his ignominies constantly before our eyes; a sight which made the saints rejoice at being vilified in this world. And such was the prayer which St. John of the Cross addressed to Jesus Christ, when he appeared to him with the cross upon his shoulders: "O Lord, let me suffer, and be despised for Thee!"<sup>2</sup> My Lord, on beholding Thee so reviled for my love, I only ask of Thee to let me suffer and be despised for Thy love.

St. Francis de Sales said,<sup>3</sup> "To support injuries is the touchstone of humility and of true virtue." If a person pretending to spirituality practises prayer, frequent Communion, fasts, and mortifies himself, and yet cannot put up with an affront, or a biting word, of what is it a sign? It is a sign that he is a hollow cane, without humility and without virtue. And what indeed can a soul do that loves Jesus Christ, if she is unable to endure a slight for the love of Jesus Christ, who has endured so much for her? Thomas à Kempis, in his golden little book of the Imitation of Christ, writes as follows: "Since you have such an abhorrence of being humbled, it is a sign that you are not dead to the world, have no humility, and that you do not keep God before your eyes. He that has not God before his eyes, is disturbed at every syllable of censure that he hears."<sup>4</sup> Thou canst not endure cuffs and blows for God; endure at least a passing word.

Oh, what surprise and scandal does that person occa-

<sup>1</sup> "Tunc exspuerunt in faciem ejus, et colaphis eum ceciderunt; alii autem palmas in faciem ejus dederunt."—*Matt.* xxvi. 67.

<sup>2</sup> "Domine, pati et contemni pro te."

<sup>3</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 10.

<sup>4</sup> *Imit. Chr.* B. 3, c. 46.

sion, who communicates often, and then is ready to resent every little word of contempt! On the contrary, what edification does a soul give that answers contempts with words of mildness, spoken in order to conciliate the offender; or perhaps makes no reply at all, nor complains of it to others, but continues with placid looks, and without showing the least sign of indignation! St. John Chrysostom says, that a meek person is not only serviceable to himself but likewise to others, by the good example he sets them of meekness in bearing contempt: "The meek man is useful to himself and to others."<sup>1</sup> Thomas à Kempis mentions, with regard to this subject, several things in which we should practise humility; he says as follows: "What others say shall command an attentive hearing, and what you say shall be taken no notice of. Others shall make a request and obtain it; you shall ask for something and meet with a refusal. Others shall be magnified in the mouths of men, and on you no one shall bestow a word. Such and such an office shall be conferred on others, but you shall be passed by as unfit for anything. With such like trials the Lord is wont to prove his faithful servant; and to see how far he has learned to overcome himself and to hold his peace. Nature, indeed, will at times not like it; but you will derive immense profit thereby, if you support all in silence."<sup>2</sup>

It was a saying of St. Jane of Chantal, that "a person who is truly humble takes occasion from receiving some humiliation to humble himself the more."<sup>3</sup> Yes, for he who is truly humble never supposes himself humbled as much as he deserves. Those who behave in this manner are styled *blessed* by Jesus Christ. They are not called blessed who are esteemed by the world, who are honored

<sup>1</sup> "Mansuetus utilis sibi et aliis."—*In Act. hom.* 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Imit. Chr.* B. 3, c. 49.

<sup>3</sup> *Marsol.* l. 4, ch. 8.

and praised, as noble, as learned, as powerful; but they who are spoken ill of by the world, who are persecuted and calumniated; for it is for such that a glorious reward is prepared in heaven, if they only bear all with patience: *Blessed are you when they shall revile you and persecute you, and speak all that is evil against you untruly for My sake : be glad and rejoice, for your reward is very great in heaven.*<sup>1</sup>

The grand occasion for practising humility is when we receive correction for some fault from Superiors or from others. Some people resemble the hedgehog: they seem all calmness and meekness as long as they remain untouched; but no sooner does a Superior or a friend touch them, by an observation on something which they have done imperfectly, than they forthwith become all prickles, and answer warmly, that so and so is not true, or that they were right in doing so, or that such a correction is quite uncalled for. In a word, to rebuke them is to become their enemy; they behave like a person who raves at the surgeon for paining them in the cure of their wounds. "He is angry with the surgeon,"<sup>2</sup> writes St. Bernard. "When the virtuous and humble man is corrected for a fault," says St. John Chrysostom, "he grieves for having committed it; the proud man on the other hand, on receiving correction, grieves also; but he grieves that his fault is detected; and on this account he is troubled, gives answers, and is angry with the person who corrects him." This is the golden rule given by St. Philip Neri, to be observed with regard to receiving correction: "Whoever would really become a saint must never excuse himself, although what is laid to his charge be not true."<sup>3</sup> And

<sup>1</sup> "Beati estis, cum maledixerint vobis, et persecuti vos fuerint, et dixerint omne malum adversum vos mentientes, propter me; gaudete et exultate, quoniam merces vestra copiosa est in cœlis."—*Matt. v. 11.*

<sup>2</sup> "Medicanti irascitur."—*In Cant. s. 42.*

<sup>3</sup> *Bacci*, l. 2, ch. 17.

there is only one case to be excepted from this rule, and that is when self-defence may appear necessary to prevent scandal. Oh, what merit with God has that soul that is wrongfully reprehended, and yet keeps silence, and refrains from defending itself! St. Teresa said: "There are occasions when a soul makes more progress and acquires a greater degree of perfection by refraining from excusing herself than by listening to ten sermons; because by not excusing herself she begins to obtain freedom of spirit, and to be heedless whether the world speaks well or ill of her."

*Affections and Prayers.*

O Incarnate Word! I entreat Thee, by the merits of Thy holy humility, which led Thee to embrace so many ignominies and injuries for our love, deliver me from all pride, and grant me a share of Thy humility. And what right have I to complain of any affront whatever that may be offered me, after having so often deserved hell? O my Jesus, by the merit of all the scorn and affronts endured for me in Thy Passion, grant me the grace to live and die humbled on this earth, as Thou didst live and die humbled for my sake. For Thy love I would willingly be despised and forsaken by all the world; but without Thee I can do nothing. I love Thee, O my sovereign good; I love Thee, O beloved of my soul! I love Thee; and I hope, through Thee, to fulfil my purpose of suffering all for Thee,—affronts, betrayals, persecutions, afflictions, dryness, and desolation; enough is it for me if Thou dost not forsake me, O sole object of the love of my soul. Suffer me never more to estrange myself from Thee. Enkindle in me the desire to please Thee. Grant me fervor in loving Thee. Give me peace of mind in suffering for Thee. Give me resignation in all contradictions. Have mercy on me. I deserve nothing; but I fix all my hopes in Thee, who hast purchased me with Thine own blood.

And I hope all from thee, too, O my Queen and my Mother Mary, who art the refuge of sinners!

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 16.

## CHAPTER VI.

## . CHARITY IS NOT AMBITIOUS.

*(Charitas non est ambitiosa.)***He that loves Jesus Christ desires Nothing but Jesus Christ.**

HE that loves God does not desire to be esteemed and loved by his fellow-men: the single desire of his heart is to enjoy the favor of Almighty God, who alone forms the object of his love. St. Hilary writes, that all honor paid by the world is the business of the devil.<sup>1</sup> And so it is; for the enemy traffics for hell, when he infects the soul with the desire of esteem; because, by thus laying aside humility, she runs great risks of plunging into every vice. St. James writes, that as God confers his graces with open hands upon the humble, so does he close them against the proud, whom he resists. *God resists the proud, and gives His grace to the humble.*<sup>2</sup> He says he *resists* the proud, signifying that he does not even listen to their prayers. And certainly, among the acts of pride we may reckon the desire to be honored by men, and self-exaltation at receiving honors from them.

We have a frightful example of this in the history of Brother Justin the Franciscan, who had even risen to a lofty state of contemplation; but because perhaps—and indeed without a perhaps—he nourished within himself a desire of human esteem, behold what befell him. One day Pope Eugenius IV. sent for him; and on account of the great opinion he had of his sanctity, showed him

<sup>1</sup> “Omnis sæculi honor diaboli negotium est.”—*In Matt.* c. 3, n. 5.

<sup>2</sup> “Deus superbis resistit; humilibus autem dat gratiam.”—*James*, iv. 6.



peculiar marks of honor, embraced him, and made him sit by his side. Such high honors filled Brother Justin full of self-conceit; on which St. John Capistran said to him, "Alas, Brother Justin, thou didst leave us an angel, and thou returnest a devil!" And in fact, the hapless Brother becoming daily more and more puffed up with arrogance, and insisting on being treated according to his own estimate of himself, he at last murdered a brother with a knife; he afterwards became an apostate, and fled into the kingdom of Naples, where he perpetrated other atrocities; and there he died in prison, an apostate to the last.

Hence it is that a certain great servant of God wisely said, that when we hear or read of the fall of some towering cedars of Libanus, of a Solomon, a Tertullian, an Osius, who had all the reputation of saints, it is a sign that they were not given wholly to God; but nourished inwardly some spirit of pride and so fell away. Let us therefore tremble, when we feel arise within us an ambition to appear in public, and to be esteemed by the world; and when the world pays us some tribute of honor, let us beware of taking complacency in it, which might prove the cause of our utter ruin.

Let us especially be on our guard against all ambitious seeking of preference, and sensibility in points of honor. St. Teresa said, "Where punctiliousness prevails, there spirituality will never prevail."<sup>1</sup> Many persons make profession of a spiritual life, but they are worshippers of self. They have the semblance of certain virtues, but they are ambitious of being praised in all their undertakings; and if nobody else praises them, they praise themselves: in short, they strive to appear better than others; and if their honor be touched, they lose their peace, they leave off Holy Communion, they

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 13.

omit all their devotions, and find no rest till they imagine they have got back their former standing. The true lovers of God do not so behave. They not only carefully shun every word of self-esteem and all self-complacency, but, further, they are sorry at hearing themselves commended by others, and their gladness is to behold themselves held in small repute by the rest of men.

The saying of St. Francis of Assisi is most true: "What I am before God, that I am." Of what use is it to pass for great in the eyes of the world, if before God we be vile and worthless? And on the contrary, what matters it to be despised by the world, provided we be dear and acceptable in the eyes of God? St. Augustine thus writes: "The approbation of him who praises neither heals a bad conscience, nor does the reproach of one who blames wound a good conscience."<sup>1</sup> As the man who praises us cannot deliver us from the chastisement of our evil doings, so neither can he who blames us rob us of the merit of our good actions. "What does it matter," says St. Teresa, "though we be condemned and reviled by creatures, if before Thee, O God! we are great and without blame?" The saints had no other desire than to live unknown, and to pass for contemptible in the estimation of all. Thus writes St. Francis de Sales: "But what wrong do we suffer when people have a bad opinion of us, since we ought to have such of ourselves? Perhaps we know that we are bad, and yet wish to pass off for good in the estimation of others."<sup>2</sup>

Oh, what security is found in the hidden life for such as wish cordially to love Jesus Christ! Jesus Christ himself set us the example, by living hidden and despised for thirty years in a workshop. And with the same view

<sup>1</sup> "Nec malam conscientiam sanat laudantis præconium, nec bonam vulnerat conviciantis opprobrium."—*Contra Petil.* l. 3, c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 3.

of escaping the esteem of men, the saints went and hid themselves in deserts and in caves. It was said by St. Vincent of Paul,<sup>1</sup> that a love of appearing in public, and of being spoken of in terms of praise, and of hearing our conduct commended, or that people should say that we succeed admirably and work wonders, is an evil which, while it makes us unmindful of God, contaminates our best actions, and proves the most fatal drawback to the spiritual life.

Whoever, therefore, would make progress in the love of Jesus Christ, must absolutely give a death-blow to the love of self-esteem. But how shall we inflict this blow? Behold how St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi instructs us: "That which keeps alive the appetite for self-esteem is the occupying a favorable position in the minds of all; consequently the death of self-esteem is to keep one's self hidden, so as not to be known to any one. And till we learn to die in this manner, we shall never be true servants of God."<sup>2</sup>

In order, then, to be pleasing in the sight of God, we must avoid all ambition of appearing and of making a parade in the eyes of men. And we must shun with still greater caution the ambition of governing others. Sooner than behold this accursed ambition set foot in the convent, St. Teresa<sup>3</sup> declared she would prefer to have the whole convent burned, and all the nuns with it. So that she signified her wish, that if ever one of her religious should be caught aiming at the Superiorship, she should be expelled from the community, or at least undergo perpetual confinement. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said, "The honor of a spiritual person consists in being put below all, and in abhorring all superiority over others. The ambition of a soul that loves God should be to excel all others in humility, according to

<sup>1</sup> *Abelly*, l. 3, ch. 34, 48.

<sup>2</sup> *Cepar.* c. 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 8.

the counsel of St. Paul: *In humility let each esteem others better than themselves.*"<sup>1</sup> In a word, he that loves God must make God the sole object of his ambition.

*Affections and Prayers.*

My Jesus, grant me the ambition of pleasing Thee, and make me forget all creatures and myself also. What will it profit me to be loved by the whole world, if I be not loved by Thee, the only love of my soul! My Jesus, Thou camest into the world to win our hearts; if I am unable to give Thee my heart, do Thou please to take it and replenish it with Thy love, and never allow me to be separated from Thee any more. I have, alas! turned my back upon Thee in the past; but now that I am conscious of the evil I have done, I grieve over it with my whole heart, and no affliction in the world can so distress me, as the remembrance of the offences that I have so often committed against Thee. I am consoled to think that Thou art infinite goodness, that Thou dost not disdain to love a sinner who loves Thee. My beloved Redeemer, O sweetest love of my soul, I have heretofore slighted Thee; but now at least I love Thee more than myself! I offer Thee myself and all that belongs to me. I have only the one wish to love Thee, and to please Thee. This forms all my ambition; accept of it, and be pleased to increase it, and exterminate in me all desire of earthly goods. Thou art indeed deserving of love, and great indeed are my obligations of loving Thee. Behold me then, I wish to be wholly Thine; and I will suffer whatever Thou pleasest, Thou who for love of me didst die of sorrow on the cross! Thou wishest me to be a saint; Thou canst make me a saint; in Thee I place my trust.

And I also confide in thy protection, O Mary, great Mother of God!

<sup>1</sup> "In humilitate superiores."—*Phil.* ii. 3.

## CHAPTER VII.

CHARITY SEEKETH NOT HER OWN.

*(Charitas non quærit quæ sua sunt.)*

He that loveth Jesus Christ seeks to detach Himself from every Creature.

WHOEVER desires to love Jesus Christ with his whole heart must banish from his heart all that is not God, but is merely self-love. This is the meaning of those words, "seeketh not her own;" not to seek ourselves, but only what pleaseth God. And this is what God requires of us all, when he says: *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart.*<sup>1</sup> Two things are needful to love God with our whole heart: 1. To clear it of earth. 2. To fill it with holy love. It follows, that a heart in which any earthly affections linger can never belong wholly to God. St. Philip Neri<sup>2</sup> said, "that as much love as we bestow on the creature, is so much taken from the Creator." In the next place, how must the earth be purged away from the heart? Truly by mortification and detachment from creatures. Some souls complain that they seek God, and do not find him; let them listen to what St. Teresa says: "Wean your heart from creatures, and seek God, and you will find him."<sup>3</sup>

The mistake is, that some indeed wish to become saints, but after their own fashion; they would love Jesus Christ, but in their own way, without forsaking those diversions, that vanity of dress, those delicacies in food: they love God, but if they do not succeed in ob-

<sup>1</sup> "Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo."—*Matt.* xxii. 37.

<sup>2</sup> *Bacci*, l. 22, ch. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *Avis* 36.

taining such or such an office, they live discontented; if, too, they happen to be touched in point of esteem, they are all on fire; if they do not recover from an illness, they lose all patience. They love God; but they refuse to let go that attachment for the riches, the honors of the world, for the vainglory of being reckoned of good family, of great learning, and better than others. Such as these practise prayer, and frequent Holy Communion; but inasmuch as they take with them hearts full of earth, they derive little profit. Our Lord does not even speak to them, for he knows that it is but a waste of words. In fact, he said as much to St. Teresa on a certain occasion: "I would speak to many souls, but the world keeps up such a noise about their ears, that my voice would never be heard by them. Oh, that they would retire a little from the world!" Whosoever, then, is full of earthly affections cannot even so much as hear the voice of God that speaks to him. But unhappy the man that continues attached to the sensible goods of this earth; he may easily become so blinded by them as one day to quit the love of Jesus Christ; and for want of forsaking these transitory goods he may lose God, the infinite good, forever. St. Teresa said: "It is a reasonable consequence, that he who runs after perishable goods should himself perish."

St. Augustine<sup>1</sup> informs us that Tiberius Cæsar desired that the Roman senate should enrol Jesus Christ among the rest of their gods; but the senate refused to do so, on the ground that he was too proud a God, and would be worshipped alone without any companions. It is quite true: God will be alone the object of our adoration and love; not indeed from pride, but because it is his just due, and because too of the love he bears us. For as he himself loves us exceedingly, he desires in re-

<sup>1</sup> *De Cons. Evang.* l. 1, c. 12.



turn all our love ; and is therefore jealous of any one else sharing the affections of our hearts, of which he desires to be the sole possessor: "Jesus is a jealous lover,"<sup>1</sup> says St. Jerome; and he is unwilling therefore for us to fix our affections on anything but himself. And whenever he beholds any created object taking a share of our hearts, he looks on it as it were with jealousy, as the Apostle St. James says, because he will not endure a rival, but will remain the sole object of all our love: *Do you think that the Scripture saith in vain: To envy doth the Spirit covet which dwelleth in you?*<sup>2</sup> The Lord in the sacred Canticles praises his spouse, saying: *My sister, my spouse, is a garden enclosed.*<sup>3</sup> He call her "a garden enclosed," because the soul that is his spouse keeps her heart shut against every earthly love, in order to preserve all for Jesus Christ alone. And does Jesus Christ perchance not deserve all our love? Ah, too much, too much has he deserved it, both for his own goodness and for his love towards us. The saints knew this well, and for this reason St. Francis de Sales said: "Were I conscious of one fibre in my heart that did not belong to God, I would forthwith tear it out."<sup>4</sup>

David longed to have wings free from all lime of worldly affections, in order to fly away and repose in God: *Who will give me wings like a dove, and I will fly and be at rest?*<sup>5</sup> Many souls would wish to see themselves released from every earthly trammel to fly to God, and would in reality make lofty flights in the way of sanctity, if they would but detach themselves from

<sup>1</sup> "Zelotypus est Jesus."—*Ep. ad Eust.*

<sup>2</sup> "An putatis quoniam inaniter Scriptura dicat: Ad invidiam concupiscit Spiritus qui habitat in vobis?"—*James*, iv. 5.

<sup>3</sup> "Hortus conclusus soror mea, Sponsa."—*Cant.* iv. 12.

<sup>4</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 9.

<sup>5</sup> "Quis dabit mihi pennas sicut columbæ, et volabo, et requiescam?"—*Ps.* liv. 7.

everything in this world; but whereas they retain some little inordinate affection, and will not use violence with themselves to get rid of it, they remain always languishing on in their misery, without ever so much as lifting a foot from the ground. St. John of the Cross said: "The soul that remains with her affections attached to anything, however small, will, notwithstanding many virtues which she may possess, never arrive at divine union; for it signifies little whether the bird be tied by a slight thread or a thick one; since, however slight it may be, provided she does not break it, she remains always bound, and unable to fly. Oh, what a pitiful thing it is to see certain souls, rich in spiritual exercises, in virtues and divine favors; yet, because they are not bold enough to break off some trifling attachment, they cannot attain to divine union, for which it only needed one strong and resolute flight to break effectually that fatal thread! Since, when once the soul is emptied of all affection to creatures, God cannot help communicating himself wholly to her." <sup>1</sup>

He who would possess God entirely must give himself up entirely to God: *My beloved to me and I to him*,<sup>2</sup> says the Sacred Spouse. My beloved has given himself entirely to me, and I give myself entirely to him. The love which Jesus Christ bears us causes him to desire all our love; and without all he is not satisfied. On this account we find St. Teresa thus writing to the Prioress of one of her convents: "Endeavor to train souls to a total detachment from everything created, because they are to be trained for the spouses of a king so jealous, that he would have them even forget themselves." St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi took a little book of devotion from one of her novices, merely because she observed that she was too much attached to it. Many souls ac-

<sup>1</sup> *Montée du C. l. I, ch. II.*

<sup>2</sup> "Dilectus meus mihi, et ego illi."—*Cant. ii. 16.*

quit themselves of the duty of prayer, of visiting the Blessed Sacrament, of frequenting Holy Communion; but nevertheless they make little or no progress in perfection, and all because they keep some fondness for something in their heart; and if they persist in living thus, they will not only be always miserable, but run the risk of losing all.

We must, therefore, beseech Almighty God, with David, to rid our heart of all earthly attachments: *Create a clean heart in me, O God.*<sup>1</sup> Otherwise we can never be wholly his. He has given us to understand very plainly, that whoever will not renounce everything in this world, cannot be his disciple: *Every one of you that doth not renounce all that he possesseth cannot be my disciple.*<sup>2</sup> For this reason the ancient Fathers of the desert were accustomed first to put this question to any youth who desired to associate himself with them: "Dost thou bring an empty heart, that the Holy Spirit may fill it?" Our Lord said the same thing to St. Gertrude, when she besought him to signify what he wished of her: "I wish nothing else, he said, but to find a heart devoid of creatures."<sup>3</sup> We must therefore say to God with great resolution and courage: O Lord, I prefer Thee to all; to health, to riches, to honors and dignities, to applause, to learning, to consolations, to high hopes, to desires, and even to the very graces and gifts which I may receive of Thee! In short, I prefer Thee to every created good which is not Thee, O my God. Whatever benefit Thou grantest me, O my God, nothing besides Thyself will satisfy me. I desire Thee alone, and nothing else.

When the heart is detached from creatures, the divine love immediately enters and fills it. Moreover, St. Ter-

<sup>1</sup> "Cor mundum crea in me, Deus."—*Ps.* l. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui non renuntiat omnibus quæ possidet, non potest meus esse discipulus."—*Luke*, xiv. 33.

<sup>3</sup> *Insin.* l. 4, c. 26.

esa said: "As soon as evil occasions are removed, the heart forthwith turns herself to love God." Yes, for the human heart cannot exist without loving; it must either love the Creator or creatures: if it does not love creatures, then assuredly it will love God. In short, we must leave all in order to gain all. "All for all,"<sup>1</sup> says Thomas à Kempis. As long as St. Teresa cherished a certain affection, though pure, towards one of her relatives, she did not wholly belong to God; but when afterwards she summoned courage, and resolutely cut off the attachment, then she deserved to hear these words from Jesus: "Now, Teresa, thou art all mine, and I am all thine."<sup>2</sup> One heart is quite too small to love this God, so loving and so lovely, and who merits an infinite love; and shall we then think of dividing this one little heart between creatures and God? The Venerable Louis da Ponte felt ashamed to speak thus to God: "O Lord, I love Thee above all things, above riches, honors, friends, relatives;" for it seemed to him as much as to say: "O Lord, I love Thee more than dirt, than smoke, and the worms of the earth!"

The Prophet Jeremias says, that the Lord is all goodness towards him who seeks him: *The Lord is good to the soul that seeketh him.*<sup>3</sup> But he understands it of a soul that seeks God alone. O blessed loss! O blessed gain! to lose worldly goods, which cannot satisfy the heart and are soon gone, in order to obtain the sovereign and eternal good, which is God! It is related that a pious hermit, one day while the king was hunting through the wood, began to run to and fro as if in search of something; the king, observing him thus occupied, inquired of him who he was and what he was doing; the hermit replied: "And may I ask your majesty

<sup>1</sup> "Totum pro toto."—*Imit. Chr.* B. 3, c. 37.

<sup>2</sup> *Life*, ch. 39.

<sup>3</sup> "Bonus est Dominus . . . animæ quærenti illum."—*Lam.* iii. 25.

what you are engaged about in this desert?" The king made answer: "I am going in pursuit of game." And the hermit replied: "I, too, am going in pursuit of God." With these words he continued his road and went away. During the present life this must likewise be our only thought, our only purpose, to go in search of God in order to love him, and in search of his will in order to fulfil it, ridding our heart of all love of creatures. And whenever some worldly good would present itself to our imaginations to solicit our love, let us be ready prepared with this answer: "I have despised the kingdom of this world, and all the charms of this life, for the sake of the love of my Lord Jesus Christ."<sup>1</sup> And what else are all the dignities and grandeurs of this world but smoke, filth, and vanity, which all disappear at death? Blessed he who can say: "My Jesus, I have left all for Thy love; Thou art my only love; Thou alone art sufficient for me."

Ah, when once the love of God takes full possession of a soul, she of her own accord (supposing always, of course, the assistance of divine grace) strives to divest herself of everything that could prove a hindrance to her belonging wholly to God. St. Francis de Sales remarks that when a house catches fire, all the furniture is thrown out of the window;<sup>2</sup> meaning thereby, that when a person gives himself entirely to God, he needs no persuasion of preachers or confessors, but of his own accord seeks to get rid of every earthly affection. Father Segneri the younger called divine love a robber, which happily despoils us of all, that we may come into possession of God alone. A certain man, of respectable position in life, having renounced everything in order to become poor for the love of Jesus Christ, was questioned by a

<sup>1</sup> "Regnum mundi et omnem ornatum sæculi contempsi, propter amorem Domini mei Jesu Christi."—*Offic. nec Virg. nec Mart. resp.* 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 27.



friend how he fell into such a state of poverty; he took from his pocket a small volume of the Gospels, and said: "Behold, this is what has stripped me of all." The Holy Spirit says: *If a man shall give all the substance of his house for love, he shall despise it as nothing.*<sup>1</sup> And when a soul fixes her whole love in God, she despises all, wealth, pleasures, dignities, territories, kingdoms, and all her longing is after God alone; she says, again and again: "My God, I wish for Thee only, and nothing more." St. Francis de Sales writes:<sup>2</sup> "The pure love of God consumes everything which is not God, to convert all into itself; for whatever we do for the love of God is love."

The Sacred Spouse said: *He brought me into the cellar of wine, he set in order charity in me.*<sup>3</sup> This cellar of wine, writes St. Teresa, is divine love, which, on taking possession of a soul, so perfectly inebriates it as to make it forgetful of everything created. A person intoxicated is, as it were, dead in his senses; he does not see, nor hear, nor speak; and so it happens to the soul inebriated with divine love. She has no longer any sense of the things of the world; she wishes to think only of God, to speak only of God; she recognizes no other motive in all her actions but to love and to please God. In the sacred Canticles the Lord forbids them to awake his beloved, who sleeps: *Stir not up, nor make the beloved to awake, till she please.*<sup>4</sup> This blessed sleep, enjoyed by souls espoused to Jesus Christ, says St. Basil, is nothing else than "the utter oblivion of all things,"<sup>5</sup> a virtuous and voluntary forgetfulness of every created thing, in order to be occu-

<sup>1</sup> "Si dederit homo omnem substantiam domus suæ pro dilectione, quasi nihil despiciet eam."—*Cant.* viii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Lettres* 531, 203.

<sup>3</sup> "Introduxit me in cellam vinariam, ordinavit in me charitatem."—*Cant.* ii. 4.

<sup>4</sup> "Ne suscitetis, neque evigilare faciatis dilectam."—*Cant.* ii. 7.

<sup>5</sup> "Summa rerum omnium oblivio."—*Reg. fus. disp. int.* 6.



pled solely with God, and to be able to exclaim with St. Francis, "My God and my all."<sup>1</sup> My God, what are riches, and dignities, and goods of the world, compared with Thee! Thou art my all and my every good. "My God and my all." Thomas à Kempis writes,<sup>2</sup> "Oh, sweet word! It speaks enough for him who understands it; and to him who loves, it is most delicious to repeat again and again: My God and my all, my God and my all!"

*Detachment from Relatives, above all, in regard to one's Vocation.*

Wherefore, to arrive at perfect union with God, a total detachment from creatures is of absolute necessity. And to come to particulars, we must divest ourselves of all inordinate affection towards relatives. Jesus Christ says: *If any man come to Me and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.*<sup>3</sup> And wherefore this hatred to relatives? because generally, as regards the interests of the soul, we cannot have greater enemies than our own kindred: *And a man's enemies shall be those of his own household.*<sup>4</sup> St. Charles Borromeo declared that he never went to pay a visit to his family without returning cooled in fervor. And when Father Antony Mendoza was asked why he refused to enter the house of his parents, he replied, "Because I know, by experience, that nowhere is the devotion of religious so dissipated as in the house of parents."

When, moreover, the choice of a state of life is con-

<sup>1</sup> "Deus meus, et omnia."

<sup>2</sup> *Imit. Chr.* B. 3, c. 34.

<sup>3</sup> "Si quis venit ad me, et non odit patrem suum, et matrem, et uxorem, et filios, et sorores, adhuc autem et animam suam, non potest meus esse discipulus."—*Luke*, xiv. 26.

<sup>4</sup> "Et inimici hominis domestici ejus."—*Matt.* x. 36.

cerned, it is certain that we are not obliged to obey our parents, according to the doctrine of St. Thomas Aquinas.<sup>1</sup> Should a young man be called to the religious life, and find opposition from his parents, he is bound to obey God, and not his parents, who, as the same St. Thomas says, with a view to their own interests and private ends, stand in the way of our spiritual welfare. "Friends of flesh and blood are oftentimes opposed to our spiritual profit."<sup>2</sup> And they are content, says St. Bernard,<sup>3</sup> to have their children go to eternal perdition, rather than leave home. It is surprising, in this matter, to see some fathers and mothers, even though fearing God, yet so blinded by mistaken fondness, that they use every effort, and exhaust every means, to hinder the vocation of a child who wishes to become a religious. This conduct, however (except in very rare cases), cannot be excused from grievous sin.

But some one may say: What, then, and if such a youth does not become a religious, can he not be saved? Are, then, all who remain in the world cast away? I answer: Those whom God does not call into religion may be saved in the world by fulfilling the duties of their state; but those who are called from the world, and do not obey God, may, indeed, possibly be saved; but they will be saved with difficulty, because they will be deprived of those helps which God had destined for them in religion, and for want of which they will not accomplish their salvation. The theologian Habert writes, that he who disobeys his vocation remains in the Church like a member out of joint, and cannot discharge his duty without the greatest pain; and so will hardly effect his salvation. Whence he draws this conclusion: "Although, absolutely

<sup>1</sup> 2. 2, q. 104, a. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Frequenter amici carnales adversantur profectui spirituali."—2. 2, q. 189, a. 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* III.

speaking, he can be saved, yet he will enter on the way, and employ the means of salvation with difficulty.”<sup>1</sup>

The choice of a state of life is compared by Father Lewis of Grenada to the mainspring in a watch: if the mainspring be broken, the whole watch is out of order; and the same holds good with regard to our salvation—if the state of life be out of order, the whole life is out of order too. Alas, how many poor youths have lost their vocation through their parents, and have afterwards come to a bad end, and have themselves proved the ruin of their family! There was a certain youth who lost his religious vocation at the instigation of his father; but in course of time, conceiving a great dislike of this same father, he killed him with his own hand, and was executed for the crime. Another young man, whilst pursuing his studies in the seminary, was also called by God to leave the world; heedless of his vocation, he first left off the devout life he was leading, prayer, Holy Communion, etc.; then he gave himself up to vice; and eventually, as he was one night leaving a house of ill-fame, where he had been, he was murdered by his rival. Several priests ran to the spot, but they found him already dead. And, oh, what a sad catalogue of like examples could I here add!

But to return to our subject. St. Thomas advises those who are called to a more perfect life not to take their parents' advice, because they would be their enemies in such a case.<sup>2</sup> And if children are not bound to take

<sup>1</sup> “Non sine magnis difficultatibus poterit salutem suam consulere, manebitque in corpore Ecclesiæ velut membrum suis sedibus motum, quod servire potest, sed ægre et cum deformitate. Licet, absolute loquendo, salvari possit, difficile tamen ingrediatur viam humilitatis et pœnitentiæ, quæ sola ipsi patet ingressus ad vitam.”—*De Ord.* p. 3, c. 1, § 2.

<sup>2</sup> “Ab hoc consilio amovendi sunt carnis propinqui . . . : in hoc proposito, amici non sunt, sed potius inimici. juxta sententiam Domini: ‘Inimici hominis, domestici ejus.’”—*Contra retr. a rel.* c. 9.

the advice of their parents on their vocation, they are under less obligation of asking or waiting for their permission, particularly when they have reason to fear that they would unjustly refuse their consent, or prevent them from fulfilling their designs. St. Thomas of Aquinas, St. Peter of Alcantara, St. Francis Xavier, St. Louis Bertrand, and many others, embraced a religious state without even acquainting their parents.

*Sanctity required to enter Holy Orders.*

Again, it must be observed that as we are very much exposed to be lost when to please our relatives we do not follow the divine vocation, so we also endanger our salvation when not to displease them we embrace the ecclesiastical state without being called to it by God. Now, a true vocation to this sublime dignity is distinguished by three signs, namely—the requisite knowledge, the intention of applying one's self only to God's service, and positive goodness of life. We shall here speak only of this last condition.

The Council of Trent has prescribed to bishops to raise to Holy Orders only those whose irreproachable conduct has been proved.<sup>1</sup> This is a rule that Canon Law had already established.<sup>2</sup> Although this is directly understood of the external proof that the bishop should have in regard to the irreproachable conduct of the aspirants to the priesthood, yet one cannot doubt that the Council requires not only external irreproachableness, but even with greater reason, interior irreproachableness, without which the former would be illusory. The Council also adds that those only are to be admitted to Holy Orders who show themselves worthy by a wise maturity.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Subdiaconi et diaconi ordinentur ut habentes bonum testimonium et in minoribus Ordinibus jam probati."—*Sess. xxiii. cap. 13.*

<sup>2</sup> "Nullus ordinetur, nisi probatus fuerit."—*Cap. Nullus, dist. 24.*

<sup>3</sup> "Sciant episcopi debere ad hos (sacros) Ordines assumi dignos dumtaxat, et quorum probata vita senectus sit."—*Sess. xxiii. cap. 12.*

We, moreover, know that the Council prescribes for this end the keeping of the interstices, that is, of an interval of time between the different degrees of Holy Orders.<sup>1</sup>

St. Thomas gives a reason for such a regulation: it is this, that in receiving Holy Orders one is destined to the most sublime ministry,—that of serving Jesus Christ in the Sacrament of the Altar. Hence the angelic Doctor adds that the sanctity of ecclesiastics ought to surpass that of the religious.<sup>2</sup> He elsewhere explains that sanctity is required not only in those who are ordained, but also in the subject who presents himself to be admitted to Holy Orders, and he shows the difference that exists in this respect between the religious and the ecclesiastical state. For in religion one purifies one's self of one's vices, whilst to receive Holy Orders it is necessary that one has already led a pure and holy life.<sup>3</sup> The holy Doctor also says in another place that the candidates for Holy Orders ought to be raised above the simple faithful by their virtue as well as by the dignity of their functions.<sup>4</sup> And this merit he requires before ordination, for he calls it necessary not only in order to exercise well the ecclesiastical functions, but also to be worthily admitted among the number of the ministers of Jesus Christ.<sup>5</sup> He

<sup>1</sup> “Ut in eis, cum ætate, vitæ meritum et doctrina major accrescat.”  
—*Sess. xxiii. cap. II.*

<sup>2</sup> “Quia per sacrum Ordinem aliquis deputatur ad dignissima ministeria, quibus ipsi Christo servitur in Sacramento altaris; ad quod requiritur major sanctitas interior quam requirat etiam religionis status.”—2. 2, q. 184, a. 8.

<sup>3</sup> “Ordines sacri præexigunt sanctitatem; sed status religionis est exercitium quoddam ad sanctitatem assequendam. Unde pondus Ordinum imponendum est parietibus jam per sanctitatem desiccatis; sed pondus religionis desiccat parietes, id est, homines ab humore vitiorum.”—2. 2, q. 189, a. 1.

<sup>4</sup> “Ut, sicut illi, qui Ordinem suscipiunt, super plebem constituuntur gradu Ordinis, ita et superiores sint merito sanctitatis.”

<sup>5</sup> “Et ideo præexigitur gratia, quæ sufficiat ad hoc quod digne connumerentur in plebe Christi.”

finally concludes with these words : "In the reception of the Sacrament of Holy Orders, the candidates receive a more abundant outpouring of grace in order thus to be in a position to advance to a higher perfection."<sup>1</sup> By these last words, "to advance to a higher perfection," the saint declares that the grace of the sacrament, far from being useless, will dispose the subject by an increase of strength to obtain still greater merits ; but he expresses, at the same time, how necessary it is for the candidate to prepare himself in a state of grace that is sufficient in order that he may be judged worthy of entering the sanctuary.

In my *Moral Theology*<sup>2</sup> I have given on this point a long dissertation to establish that those cannot be excused from mortal sin who without having been sufficiently tried by a holy life receive a Holy Order ; since they raise themselves to this sublime state without a divine vocation ; for one cannot regard those as having been called by God who have not yet succeeded in overcoming a bad habit, especially the habit of offending against chastity. And whenever among those one might be found who is disposed by repentance to receive the Sacrament of Penance, he would nevertheless not be in a condition to receive Holy Orders, for in his case there must be more holiness of life manifested during a long trial. Otherwise the candidate would not be exempt from mortal sin on account of the grave presumption that he wished to intrude into the holy ministry without a vocation. Hence St. Anselm says : " Those who thus thrust themselves into Holy Orders and have in view only their own interests are robbers who arrogate to themselves the grace of God ; instead of benediction they

<sup>1</sup> "Sed confertur in ipsa susceptione Ordinis amplius gratiæ munus per quod ad majora reddantur idonei."—*Suppl.* q. 35, a. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Lib.* 6, c. 2, n. 63.



would receive God's malediction."<sup>1</sup> As Bishop Abelly remarks; they would expose themselves to the great danger of being lost forever: "Whoever deliberately and without troubling himself whether or not he had a vocation would thrust himself into the priesthood, would without doubt plainly expose himself to eternal perdition."<sup>2</sup> Soto holds the same opinion when he asserts, in speaking of the Sacrament of Holy Orders, that positive sanctity in the candidate is of divine precept: "Assuredly," he says, "this sanctity is not essential to the sacrament, though it is altogether necessary by a divine precept. . . . Now, the sanctity that should characterize the candidates to Holy Orders does not consist in the general disposition required for the reception of the other sacraments, and sufficient in order that the sacrament may not be impeded. For, in the Sacrament of Holy Orders, one receives not only grace, but one is raised to a much more sublime state. Hence in the candidates there must be great purity of life and perfect virtue."<sup>3</sup> Thomas Sanchez, Holzmann, the school of Salamanca, are also of the same opinion. Thus, what I have advanced is not only the opinion of one theologian, but it is the common teaching based upon what is taught by St. Thomas.

<sup>1</sup> "Qui enim se ingerit, et propriam gloriam quærit, gratiæ Dei rapinam facit, et ideo non accipit benedictionem sed maledictionem."  
—*In Hebr. v.*

<sup>2</sup> "Qui sciens et volens, nulla divinæ vocationis habita ratione, sese in Sacerdotium intruderet, haud dubie seipsum in apertissimum salutis discrimen injiceret."—*Sac. Chr. p. I, c. 4.*

<sup>3</sup> "Quamvis morum integritas non sit de essentia Sacramenti, est tamen præcepto divino maxime necessaria. . . . At vero, quod de idoneitate eorum qui sacris sunt Ordinibus initiandi definitur, non est generalis illa dispositio quæ in suscipiente quodcumque Sacramentum requiritur, ne sacramentalis gratia obicem inveniat. . . . Enim vero, quoniam per sacramentum Ordinis homo, non solum gratiam suscipit, sed ad sublimiorem statum conscendit, requiritur in eo morum honestas et virtutum claritas."—*In 4 Sent. d. 25, q. 1, a. 4.*

If any one receive Holy Orders without having led the requisite good life, not only would he himself commit a mortal sin, but also the bishop who confers them upon him without having been morally certain, by sufficient proofs, of the good conduct of the candidate. The confessor also would be guilty of mortal sin, because he gives absolution to one who, addicted to a bad habit, wishes to be ordained without having given evidence during a considerable time of a positively good life. Finally, parents also sin grievously because, though knowing the wicked conduct of their son, they yet try to induce him to take Holy Orders in order that afterwards he may become the support of the family. Jesus Christ instituted the ecclesiastical state, not to aid the houses of seculars, but to promote the glory of God and the salvation of souls. Some imagine the ecclesiastical state to be an honorable and a remunerative employment or trade; but they deceive themselves. Hence, when parents ask the bishop to ordain one of their children who is ignorant, and whose conduct has been bad, alleging that their family is poor, and that they know not how otherwise to extricate themselves from their embarrassment, the bishop must say to them: This I cannot do; the ecclesiastical state is not established to give assistance to poor families, but to promote the good of the church. They should be sent away without listening to them any longer; for such persons ordinarily bring ruin not only upon their own souls, but upon their family and their country.

As for the priests who live with their parents, if they are solicited to occupy themselves less with the functions of their ministry than the interests and advancement of their families, they should answer what Jesus Christ one day said, for our own edification, to his holy mother: *Did you not know that I must be about my father's business?*<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Nesciebatis quæ in his quæ Patris mei sunt oportet me esse?"  
—*Luke*, ii. 49.

I am a priest; my duty it is not to amass wealth and procure honors, nor to govern the house, but to live in retirement, to meditate, to study, and to work for the salvation of souls. When it is absolutely necessary to aid one's family, one ought to do so as much as possible without neglecting one's principal care, which is, to apply one's self to one's own sanctification, and that of others.

*Detachment from Human Respect and from Self-will.*

Moreover, any one that would belong wholly to God must be free of all human respect. Oh, how many souls does this accursed respect keep aloof from God, and even separate them from him forever! For instance, if they hear mention made of some or other of their failings, oh, what do they not do to justify themselves, and to convince the world that it is a calumny! If they perform some good work, how industrious are they to circulate it everywhere! They would have it known to the whole world, in order to be universally applauded. The saints behave in a very different way: they would rather publish their defects to the whole world, in order to pass in the eyes of all for the miserable creatures which they really are in their own eyes; and, on the contrary, in practising any act of virtue, they prefer to have God alone know of it; for their only care is to be acceptable to him. It is on this account that so many of them were enchanted with solitude, mindful, as they were, of the words of Jesus Christ: *But when thou dost alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth.*<sup>1</sup> And again: *But thou, when thou shalt pray, enter into thy chamber; and having shut the door, pray to thy Father in secret.*<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Te autem faciente eleemosynam, nesciat sinistra tua quid faciat dextera tua."—*Matt.* vi. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Cum oraveris, intra in cubiculum tuum, et clauso ostio, ora Patrem tuum in abscondito."—*Ibid.* 6.

But of all things, self-detachment is most needful; that is, detachment from self-will. Only once succeed in subduing yourself, and you will easily triumph in every other combat. *Vince teipsum*, "Conquer thyself," was the maxim which St. Francis Xavier inculcated on all. And Jesus Christ said: *If any one would come after Me, let him deny himself.*<sup>1</sup> Behold in small compass all that we need practise to become saints; to deny ourselves, and not to follow our own will: *Go not after thy lusts, but turn away from thy own will.*<sup>2</sup> And this is the greatest grace, said St. Francis of Assisi, that we can receive from God: the power, namely, to conquer ourselves by denying self-will. St. Bernard writes, that if all men would resist self-will, none would ever be damned: "Let self-will cease, and there will be no hell."<sup>3</sup> The same saint writes, that it is the baneful effect of self-will to contaminate even our good works: "Self-will is a great evil, since it renders thy good works no longer good."<sup>4</sup> As, for instance, were a penitent obstinately bent on mortifying himself, or on fasting, or on taking the discipline against the will of his director; we see that this act of penance, done at the instigation of self-will, becomes very defective.

Unhappy the man that lives the slave of self-will! for he shall have a yearning for many things, and shall not possess them; while, on the other hand, he will be forced to undergo many things distasteful and bitter to his inclinations: *From whence are wars and contentions among you? Are they not hence? From your concupiscences, which*

<sup>1</sup> "Si quis vult post me venire, abneget semetipsum."—*Matt.* xvi. 24.

<sup>2</sup> "Post concupiscentias tuas non eas, et a voluntate tua avertere."—*Ecclus.* xviii. 30.

<sup>3</sup> "Cesset voluntas propria, et infernus non erit."—*In Temp. Pasch.* s. 3.

<sup>4</sup> "Grande malum propria voluntas, qua fit ut bona tua tibi bona non sint."—*In Cant.* s. 71.

war in your members? You covet, and have not.<sup>1</sup> The first war springs from the appetite for sensual delights. Let us take away the occasion; let us mortify the eyes; let us recommend ourselves to God, and the war will be over. The second war arises from the covetousness of riches: let us cultivate a love of poverty, and this war will cease. The third war has its source in ambitiously seeking after honors: let us love humility and the hidden life, and this war too will be no more. The fourth war, and the most ruinous of all, comes from self-will: let us practise resignation in all things which happen by the will of God, and the war will cease. St. Bernard tells us that whenever we see a person troubled, the origin of his trouble is nothing else but his inability to gratify self-will. "Whence comes disquiet," says the saint, "except that we follow self-will?"<sup>2</sup> Our Blessed Lord once complained of this to St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, in these words: "Certain souls desire my Spirit, but after their own fancy; and so they become incapable of receiving it."

We must therefore love God in the way that pleases God, and not that pleases us. God will have the soul divested of all, in order to be united to himself, and to be replenished with his divine love. St. Teresa<sup>3</sup> writes as follows: "The prayer of union appears to me to be nothing more than to die utterly, as it were, to all things in this world, for the enjoyment of God alone. One thing is certain, that the more completely we empty ourselves of creatures, by detaching ourselves from them for the love of God, the more abundantly will he fill us with himself, and the more closely shall we be united with

<sup>1</sup> "Unde bella et lites in vobis? nonne hinc, ex concupiscentiis vestris, quæ militant in membris vestris? Concupiscitis, et non habetis."—*James*, iv. 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> "Unde turbatio, nisi quod propriam sequimur voluntatem?"—*De Div.* s. 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Interior Castle*, ch. 1.

him." Many spiritual persons would attain to union with God; but then they do not desire the contrarieties which God sends them: they fret at having to suffer from ill-health, from poverty, from affronts; but, for want of resignation, they will never come to a perfect union with God. Let us hear what St. Catharine of Genoa said: "To arrive at union with God, the contrarieties which God sends us are absolutely necessary; his purpose is, to consume in us, by means of them, all irregular movements, both within and without. And hence all contempt, ailments, poverty, temptations, and other trials, are all indispensable, to give us the opportunity of fighting; that so, by the way of victory, we may eventually extinguish all inordinate movements, so as to be no more sensible of them; furthermore, until we begin to find contradictions sweet for God's sake, instead of bitter, we shall never arrive at divine union."

I here subjoin the practice of it, taught by St. John of the Cross. The saint says, that in order to perfect union, "a thorough mortification of the senses and of the appetites is necessary. On the part of the senses, every single relish that presents itself to them, if it be not purely for the glory of God, should forthwith be rejected for the love of Jesus Christ; for example, should you have a desire to see or hear something in no wise conducive to the greater glory of God, then refrain from it. As to the appetites also, endeavor to force ourselves always to choose the worst, the most disagreeable, or the poorest, without fostering any other wish than to suffer and to be despised."<sup>1</sup>

In a word, he that truly loves Jesus Christ loses all affection for things of earth, and seeks to strip himself of all, in order to keep himself united with Jesus Christ alone. Jesus is the object of all his desires, Jesus the subject of all his thoughts; for Jesus he continually

<sup>1</sup> *Mont. du C. l. I, ch. 4-13.*



sighs; in every place, at every time, on every occasion, his sole aim is to give pleasure to Jesus. But to reach this point, we must study unceasingly to rid the heart of every affection which is not for God. And, I ask, what is meant by giving the soul entirely to God? It means, first, to shun whatever may be displeasing to God, and to do what is most pleasing to him; secondly, it means to accept unreservedly all that comes from his hands, how hard or disagreeable soever it may be; it means, thirdly, to give the preference in all things to the will of God over our own: this is what is meant by belonging wholly to God.

*Affections and Prayers.*

Ah, my God and my all! I cannot help feeling that, in spite of all my ingratitude and remissness in Thy service, Thou still invitest me to love Thee. Behold me, then; I will resist Thee no longer. I will leave all to be wholly Thine. I will no more live for myself: Thy claims on my love are too strong. My soul is enamoured of Thee; my Jesus, it sighs after Thee. And how can I possibly love anything else, after seeing Thee die of sufferings on a cross in order to save me! how could I behold Thee dead, and exhausted with torments, and not love Thee with my whole heart? Yes, I love Thee indeed with all my soul; and I have no other desire but to love Thee in this life and for all eternity. My love, my hope, my courage, and my consolation, give me strength to be faithful to Thee; grant me light, and make known to me from what I ought to detach myself; supply me too with a strong will to obey Thee in all things. O love of my soul! I offer myself, and deliver myself up entirely, to satisfy the desire which Thou hast to unite Thyself to me, that I may be wholly united with Thee, my God and my all. Oh, come then, my Jesus; come and take possession of my whole self, and occupy all my thoughts and all my affections. I renounce all my appetites, all my comforts, and all created things; Thou alone art sufficient for me. Grant me the grace to think only of Thee, to desire only Thee, to seek only Thee, my beloved and my only good!

O Mary, Mother of God, obtain for me holy perseverance!

## CHAPTER VIII.

CHARITY IS NOT PROVOKED TO ANGER.

*(Charitas non irritatur.)***He that loves Jesus Christ is never angry with his Neighbor.**

THE virtue not to be angry at the contrarieties that happen to us is the daughter of meekness. We have already spoken at length of the acts which belong to meekness in preceding chapters; but since this is a virtue which requires to be constantly practised by every one living among his fellow-men, we will here make some remarks on the same subject more in particular, and more adapted for practice.

Humility and meekness were the favorite virtues of Jesus Christ; so that he bade his disciples learn of him to be meek and humble: *Learn of Me, for I am meek and humble of heart.*<sup>1</sup> Our Redeemer was called the Lamb, —*Behold the Lamb of God,*<sup>2</sup>—as well in consideration of his having to be offered in sacrifice on the cross for our sins, as in consideration of the meekness exhibited by him during his entire life, but more especially at the time of his Passion. When in the house of Caiphas he received a blow from that servant, who at the same time upbraided him with presumption in those words: *Answerest thou the high-priest so?* Jesus only answered: *If I have spoken evil, give testimony of the evil; but if well, why strikest thou me?*<sup>3</sup> He observed the same invariable

<sup>1</sup> “Discite a me quia mitis sum et humilis corde.”—*Matt.* xi. 29.

<sup>2</sup> “Ecce Agnus Dei.”—*John*, i. 29.

<sup>3</sup> “Si male locutus sum, testimonium perhibe de malo; si autem bene, quid me cædis?”—*John*, xviii. 23.

meekness of conduct till death. While on the cross, and made the object of universal scorn and blasphemy, he only besought the Eternal Father to forgive them: *Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.*<sup>1</sup>

Oh, how dear to Jesus Christ are those meek souls who, in suffering affronts, derisions, calumnies, persecutions, and even chastisement and blows, are not irritated against the person that thus injures or strikes them: *The prayer of the meek hath always pleased thee.*<sup>2</sup> God is always pleased with the prayers of the meek; that is to say, their prayers are always heard. Heaven is expressly promised to the meek: *Blessed are the meek, for they shall possess the land.*<sup>3</sup> Father Alvarez said that paradise is the country of those who are despised and persecuted and trodden under foot. Yes, for it is for them that the possession of the eternal kingdom is reserved, and not for the haughty, who are honored and esteemed by the world. David declares that the meek shall not only inherit eternal happiness, but shall likewise enjoy great peace in the present life: *The meek shall inherit the land, and shall delight in abundance of peace.*<sup>4</sup> It is so, because the saints harbor no malice against those who ill-treat them, but rather love them the more; and the Lord, in reward for their patience, gives them an increase of interior peace. St. Teresa said: "I seem to experience a renewed love towards those persons who speak ill of me."<sup>5</sup> This gave occasion to the Sacred Congregation to say of the saint, that "even affronts themselves supplied her with the food of charity."<sup>6</sup> Offences became a fresh reason for

<sup>1</sup> "Pater! dimitte illis; non enim sciunt quid faciunt."—*Luke*, xxiii. 34.

<sup>2</sup> "Mansuetorum semper tibi placuit deprecatio."—*Judith*, ix. 16.

<sup>3</sup> "Beati mites, quoniam ipsi possidebunt terram."—*Matt.* v. 4.

<sup>4</sup> "Mansueti autem hæreditabunt terram, et delectabuntur in multitudine pacis."—*P's.* xxxvi. 11.

<sup>5</sup> *Rib.* l. 4, c. 26.

<sup>6</sup> "Offensiones amoris ipsi escam ministrabunt."

her to love the person who had offended her. No one can have such meekness as this, if he has not a great humility and a low opinion of himself, so as to consider himself worthy of every kind of contempt; and hence we see, on the contrary, that the proud are always irritable and vindictive, because they have a high conceit of themselves, and esteem themselves worthy of all honor.

*Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord.*<sup>1</sup> We must, indeed, die in the Lord to be blessed, and to enjoy that blessedness even in the present life: we mean, such happiness as can be had before entering heaven, which, though certainly much below that of heaven, yet far surpasses all the pleasures of sense in this world: *And the peace of God, which surpasseth all understanding, keep your hearts;*<sup>2</sup> so wrote the Apostle to his disciples. But to gain this peace, even in the midst of affronts and calumnies, we must be dead in the Lord: a dead person, how much soever he may be ill-treated and trampled on by others, resents it not; in like manner, he who is meek, like a dead body, which no longer sees or feels, should endure all the outrages committed against him. Whoever loves Jesus Christ from his heart easily attains to this; because, as he is conformed in all things to his will, he accepts with equal composure and peace of mind prosperous and adverse occurrences, consolations and afflictions, injuries and courtesies. Such was the conduct of the Apostle; and he says, therefore: *I exceedingly abound with joy in all our tribulation.*<sup>3</sup> Oh, happy the man who reaches this point of virtue! he enjoys a continual peace, which is a treasure precious beyond all other goods of this world. St. Francis de Sales said: "Of what value is the whole universe in comparison with peace of heart?"<sup>4</sup> And, in

<sup>1</sup> "Beati mortui qui in Domino moriuntur."—*Apoc.* xiv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Pax Dei, quæ exsuperat omnem sensum."—*Phil.* iv. 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Superabundo gaudio in omni tribulatione nostra."—*2 Cor.* vii. 4

<sup>4</sup> *Lettre* 580.

truth, of what avail are all riches and all the honors of the world to a man that lives in disquiet, and whose heart is not at peace?"

In short, in order to remain constantly united with Jesus Christ, we must do all with tranquillity, and not be troubled at any contradiction that we may encounter. *The Lord is not in the earthquake.*<sup>1</sup> The Lord does not abide in troubled hearts. Let us listen to the beautiful lessons given on this subject by that master of meekness St. Francis de Sales: "Never put yourself in a passion, nor open the door to anger on any pretext whatever; because, when once it has gained an entrance, it is no longer in our power to banish it, or moderate it, when we wish to do so. The remedies against it are: 1. To check it immediately, by diverting the mind to some other object, and not to speak a word. 2. To imitate the Apostles when they beheld the tempest at sea, and to have recourse to God, to whom it belongs to restore peace to the soul. 3. If you feel that, owing to your weakness, anger has already got footing in your breast, in that case do yourself violence to regain your composure, and then try to make acts of humility and of sweetness towards the person against whom you are irritated; but all this must be done with sweetness and without violence, for it is of the utmost importance not to irritate the wounds."<sup>2</sup> The saint said that he himself was obliged to labor much during his life to overcome two passions which predominated in him, namely, anger and love: to subdue the passion of anger, he avowed it had cost him twenty-two years' hard struggle. As to the passion of love, he had succeeded in changing its object, by leaving creatures, and turning all his affections to God. And in this manner the saint acquired so great an interior peace, that it was visible even in his exterior; for he was in-

<sup>1</sup> "Non in commotione Deus."—3 *Kings*, xix. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Introd.* ch. 8.

variably seen with a serene countenance and a smile on his features.

*From whence are wars? . . . Are they not from your concupiscences?*<sup>1</sup> When we are made angry by some contradiction, we fancy we shall find relief and quiet by giving vent to our anger in actions, or at least in words: but we are mistaken, it is not so; for after having done so, we shall find that we are much more disturbed than before. Whoever desires to persevere in uninterrupted peace, must beware of ever yielding to ill-humor. And whenever any one feels himself attacked by this ill-humor, he must do his utmost to banish it immediately; and he must not go to rest with it in his heart, but must divert himself from it by the perusal of some book, by singing some devout canticle, or by conversing on some pleasant subject with a friend. The Holy Spirit says: *Anger resteth in the bosom of a fool.*<sup>2</sup> Anger remains a long time in the heart of fools, who have little love for Jesus Christ; but if by stealth it should ever enter into the hearts of the true lovers of Jesus Christ, it is quickly dislodged, and does not remain. A soul that cordially loves the Redeemer never feels in a bad humor, because, as she desires only what God desires, she has all she wishes for, and consequently is ever tranquil and well-balanced. The divine will tranquilizes her in every misfortune that occurs; and thus she is able at all times to observe meekness towards all. But we cannot acquire this meekness without a great love for Jesus Christ. In fact, we know by experience that we are not meeker and gentler towards others, except when we feel an increased tenderness towards Jesus Christ.

But since we cannot constantly experience this tenderness, we must prepare ourselves, in our mental prayer,

<sup>1</sup> "Unde bella? . . . nonne hinc, ex concupiscentiis vestris?"—*James*, iv. 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> "Ira in sinu stulti requiescit."—*Ecclus.* vii. 10.



to bear the crosses that may befall us. This was the practice of the saints; and so they were ever ready to receive with patience and meekness injuries, blows, and chastisements. When we meet with an insult from our neighbor, unless we have frequently trained ourselves beforehand, we shall find it extremely difficult to know what course to take, in order not to yield to the force of anger; in the very moment, our passion will make it appear but reasonable for us to retort boldly the audacity of the person who affronts us; but St. John Chrysostom says that it is not the right way to quench the fire which is raging in the mind of our neighbor by the fire of an indignant reply; to do so will only enkindle it the more: "One fire is not extinguished by another."<sup>1</sup>

Some one may say: But why should I use courtesy and gentleness towards an impertinent fellow, that insults me without cause? But St. Francis de Sales replies: "We must practise meekness, not only with reason, but against reason."<sup>2</sup>

We must therefore endeavor, on such occasions, to make a kind answer; and in this way we shall allay the fire: *A mild answer breaketh wrath.*<sup>3</sup> But when the mind is troubled, the best expedient will be to keep silence. St. Bernard writes: "The eye troubled by anger sees not straight."<sup>4</sup> When the eye is dimmed with passion, it no longer distinguishes between what is and what is not unjust; anger is like a veil drawn over the eyes, so that we can no longer discern betwixt right and wrong; wherefore we must, like St. Francis de Sales, make a compact with our tongue: "I have made a covenant with my tongue," he wrote, "never to speak while my heart is disturbed."

<sup>1</sup> "Igne non potest ignis extingui."—*In Gen. hom.* 58.

<sup>2</sup> *Lettre* 231.

<sup>3</sup> "Responsio mollis frangit iram."—*Prov.* xv. 1.

<sup>4</sup> "Turbatus præ ira oculus . . . rectum non videt."—*De Cons.* 1. 2, c. 11.

But there are moments when it seems absolutely necessary to check insolence with severe words. David said: *Be angry, and sin not.*<sup>1</sup> Occasions do exist, therefore, when we may be lawfully angry, provided it be without sin. But here is just the matter: speculatively speaking, it seems expedient at times to speak and reply to some people in terms of severity, in order to make an impression on them; but in practice it is very difficult to do this without some fault on our part; so that the sure way is always to admonish, or to reply, with gentleness, and to scrupulously guard against all resentment. St. Francis de Sales said: "I have never been angry without afterwards repenting of it." And when, for some reason or other, we still feel warm, the safest way, as I said before, is to keep silence, and reserve the remonstrance till a more convenient moment, when the heart is cooled down.

We ought particularly to observe this meekness when we are corrected by our Superiors or friends. St. Francis de Sales again writes: "To receive a reprimand willingly, shows that we love the virtue opposed to the fault for which we are corrected; and consequently this is a great sign of progress in perfection."<sup>2</sup>

We must besides practise meekness towards ourselves. It is a delusion of the devil, to make us consider it a virtue to be angry with ourselves for committing some fault; far from it, it is a trick of the enemy to keep us in a state of trouble, that so we may be unfit for the performance of any good. St. Francis de Sales said: "Hold for certain that all such thoughts as create disquiet are not from God, who is the Prince of peace, but proceed either from the devil, or from self-love, or from the good opinion we have of ourselves. These are the three scourges from which all our troubles spring. When,

<sup>1</sup> "Irascimini, et nolite peccare."—*Ps.* iv. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 19.

therefore, any thoughts arise which throw us into trouble, we must immediately reject and despise them.”<sup>1</sup>

Meekness is also more especially necessary when we have to correct others. Corrections made with a bitter zeal often do more harm than good, especially when he who must be corrected is himself excited: in such cases the correction should be put off, and we must wait until he is cool. And we ourselves ought no less to refrain from correcting while we are under the influence of ill-temper; for then our admonition will always be accompanied with harshness; and the person in fault, when he sees that he is corrected in such a way, will take no heed of the admonition, considering it the mere effect of passion. This holds good as far as concerns the good of our neighbor; as concerns our personal advantage, let us show how dearly we love Jesus Christ, by patiently and gladly supporting every sort of ill-treatment, injury, and contempt.

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O my despised Jesus, O love, O joy of my soul, Thou hast by Thy example made contempt most acceptable to Thy lovers! I promise Thee, from this day forward, to submit to every affront for the love of Thee, who for love of me didst submit on earth to every species of revilement from men. Do Thou grant me strength to keep this promise. Enable me to know and to perform whatever Thou desirest at my hands. My God and my all, I crave no other good than Thyself, who art infinite good! O Thou who takest my interests so much to heart, grant that my only care may be to gratify Thee! Grant that all my thoughts may be occupied in avoiding whatever may offend Thee, and in promoting whatever may contribute to Thy good pleasure. Ward off every occasion that may draw me from Thy love. I strip myself of my liberty, and consecrate it entirely to Thy good will. I love Thee, O infinite goodness! I love Thee, O my delight! O Word incarnate, I love Thee more than myself! Take pity on me,

<sup>1</sup> *Lettre 51.*

and heal whatever wounds remain in my poor soul from its past disloyalties towards Thee. I resign myself wholly into Thy arms, O my Jesus; I will be wholly Thine; I will suffer everything for love of Thee; and I ask of Thee nothing but Thyself!

O Holy Virgin and my Mother Mary, I love thee, and I rely on thee; succor me by thy powerful intercession!

---

## CHAPTER IX.

CHARITY THINKETH NO EVIL, REJOICETH NOT IN INIQUITY,  
BUT REJOICETH WITH THE TRUTH.

*(Charitas non cogitat malum, non gaudet super iniquitate, congaudet autem veritati.)*

**He that loves Jesus Christ only wishes what Jesus Christ wishes.**

CHARITY and truth always go together; so that charity, conscious that God is the only and the true good, detests iniquity, which is directly opposed to the divine will, and takes no satisfaction but in what pleases Almighty God. Hence the soul that loves God is heedless of what people say of it, and only aims at pleasing God. The Blessed Henry Suso said: "That man stands well with God who strives to conform himself to the truth, and for the rest is utterly indifferent to the opinion or treatment of mankind."

As we have already more than once asserted, the sanctity and perfection of a soul consists in renouncement of self and in submission to the will of God; but now it will be well to enter more into detail.

### I.

#### **The Necessity of Conforming to the Will of God.**

If, then, we would become saints, our whole endeavor must be, never to follow our own will, but always the

will of God; the substance of all the precepts and divine counsels is comprised in doing and suffering what God wills, and in the manner he wills it. Let us, therefore, entreat the Lord to bestow on us a holy liberty of spirit; liberty of spirit leads us to embrace whatever is pleasing to Jesus Christ, regardless of all feelings of repugnance arising from self-love and human respect. The love of Jesus Christ makes those who love him utterly indifferent; so that all things are alike to them, whether bitter or sweet: they do not wish for anything that pleases themselves, but only for that which is pleasing to God; they employ themselves in little and great things, be they pleasant or unpleasant, with the same peace of mind; it is enough for them if they please God.

St. Augustine says: "Love, and do what you like."<sup>1</sup> Whoever really loves God seeks only to please him; and in this is all his pleasure. St. Teresa says: "He that seeks but the gratification of one he loves, is gratified with all that pleases that person. Love in its perfection produces this result; it makes a person heedless of all private interests and self-satisfaction, and concentrates all his thoughts on endeavoring to please the person beloved, and to do all he can to honor him himself, and to make him honored by others. O Lord, all our ills come from not keeping our eyes fixed on Thee! Were we solely intent on advancing, we should soon come to the end of our journey; but we fall and stumble a thousand times, and we even lose our way, for want of looking attentively to the right path." Here we may see what should be the single aim of all our thoughts, actions, desires, and of all our prayers, namely, the pleasure of God; our way to perfection must be this, to walk according to the will of God.

God wishes us to love him with our whole heart:

<sup>1</sup> "Ama, et fac quod vis."

*Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart.*<sup>1</sup> That person loves Jesus Christ with his whole heart who says to him with the Apostle: *Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?*<sup>2</sup> Lord, signify to me what Thou wilt have me do; for I desire to perform all. And let us be persuaded that whilst we desire what God desires, we desire what is best for ourselves; for assuredly God only wishes what is best for us. St. Vincent of Paul said: "Conformity with the will of God is the treasure of a Christian and the remedy for all evils; since it comprises abnegation of self and union with God and all virtues." In this, then, is all perfection: *Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?* Jesus Christ promises us, *not a hair of your head shall perish.*<sup>3</sup> Which is as much as to say, that the Lord rewards us for every good thought we have of pleasing him, and for every tribulation embraced with patience in conformity to his holy will. St. Teresa said, "The Lord never sends a trial, without remunerating it with some favor as often as we accept it with resignation."<sup>4</sup>

But our conformity to the divine will must be entire, without any reserve, and constant without withdrawal. In this consists the height of perfection; and to this (I repeat) all our works, all our desires, and all our prayers ought to tend. Some souls given to prayer, on reading of the ecstasies and raptures of St. Teresa and St. Philip Neri, come to wish to enjoy themselves these supernatural unions. Such wishes must be banished as contrary to humility; if we really desire to be saints, we must aspire after true union with God, which is to unite our will entirely to the will of God. St. Teresa<sup>5</sup> said,

<sup>1</sup> "Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo."—*Matt.* xxii. 37.

<sup>2</sup> "Domine, quid me vis facere?"—*Acts*, ix. 6.

<sup>3</sup> "Et capillus de capite vestro non peribit."—*Luke*, xxi. 18.

<sup>4</sup> *Life*, ch. 30.

<sup>5</sup> *Found.* ch. 5.



“Those persons are deceived who fancy that union with God consists in ecstasies, raptures, and sensible enjoyments of him. It consists in nothing else than in submitting our will to the will of God; and this submission is perfect when our will is detached from everything, and so completely united with that of God, that all its movements depend solely on the will of God. This is the real and essential union which I have always sought after, and continually beg of the Lord.” And then she adds: “Oh, how many of us say this, and seem to ourselves to desire nothing besides this; but, miserable creatures that we are, how few of us attain to it!” Such, indeed, is the undeniable truth; many of us say: O Lord! I give Thee my will, I desire nothing but what Thou desirest; but, in the event of some trying occurrence, we are at a loss how to yield calmly to the divine will. And this is the source of our continually complaining that we are unfortunate in the world, and that we are the butt of every misfortune; and so of our dragging on an unhappy life.

If we were conformed to the divine will in every trouble, we should undoubtedly become saints, and be the happiest of mankind. This, then, should form the chief object of our attention, to keep our will in unbroken union with the will of God in every occurrence of life, be it pleasant or unpleasant. It is the admonition of the Holy Spirit. *Winnow not with every wind.*<sup>1</sup> Some people resemble the weathercocks, which turn about every wind that blows; if the wind is fair and favorable to their desires, they are all gladness and condescension; but if there blow a contrary wind, and things fall out against their desires, they are all sadness and impatience; this is why they do not become saints, and why their life is unhappy, because, in the present

<sup>1</sup> “Ne ventiles te in omnem ventum.”—*Ecclus.* v. 11.

life, adversity will always befall us in a greater measure than prosperity. St. Dorotheus said, that to receive from the hands of God whatever happens is a great means to keep ourselves in continual peace and tranquillity of soul. And the saint relates, that on this account the ancient Fathers of the desert were never seen angry or melancholy, because they accepted whatever happened to them joyfully, as coming from the hands of God. Oh, happy the man who lives wholly united and abandoned to the divine will ! he is neither puffed up by success nor depressed by reverses; for he well knows that all alike comes from the self-same hand of God; the will of God is the single rule of his own will; thus he only does what God wishes him to do, and he only desires what God does. He is not anxious to do many things, but to accomplish with perfection what he knows to be acceptable to God. Accordingly, he prefers the minutest obligations of his state of life to the most glorious and important actions, well aware that in the latter self-love may find a great share, whereas in the former there is certainly the will of God.

Thus we, too, shall be happy when we receive from God all the dispositions of his Providence in the spirit of perfect conformity to his divine will, utterly regardless whether or not they coincide with our private inclinations. The saintly Mother de Chantal said: "When shall we come to relish the divine will in every event that happens, without paying attention to anything else but the good pleasure of God, from whom it is certain that prosperity and adversity proceed alike from motives of love and for our best interests? When shall we resign ourselves unreservedly into the arms of our most loving heavenly Father, intrusting him with the care of our persons and our affairs, and reserving nothing for ourselves but the sole desire of pleasing God?" The friends of St. Vincent of Paul said of him while he was still on

earth: "Vincent is always Vincent." By which they meant to say, that the saint was ever to be seen with the same smiling face, whether in prosperity or in adversity; and was always himself, because, as he lived in the total abandonment of himself to God, he feared nothing and desired nothing but what was pleasing to God. St. Teresa said: "By this holy abandonment that admirable liberty of spirit is generated, which those who are perfect possess, wherein they find all the happiness in this life which they can possibly desire; inasmuch as, fearful of nothing, and desirous or wanting for nothing in the things of this world, they possess all."<sup>1</sup>

Many, on the other hand, fabricate a sort of sanctity according to their own inclinations; some, inclined to melancholy, make sanctity consist in living in seclusion; others, of a busy temperament, in preaching and in making up quarrels; some, of an austere nature, in penitential inflictions and macerations; others, who are naturally generous, in distributing alms; some in saying many vocal prayers; others in visiting sanctuaries; and all their sanctity consists in such or the like practices. External acts are the fruit of the love of Jesus Christ; but true love itself consists in a complete conformity to the will of God; and as a consequence of this, in denying ourselves and in preferring what is most pleasing to God, and solely because he deserves it.

Others wish to serve God; but it must be in that employment, in that place, with those companions, and in such circumstances; or else they either neglect their duty, or at least do it with a bad grace: such as these are not free in spirit, but are slaves of self-love, and on that account reap little merit even from what they perform; moreover, they live in perpetual disquiet, since their attachment to self-will makes the yoke of Jesus

<sup>1</sup> *Found.* ch. 5.

Christ become heavy to them. The true lovers of Jesus Christ love only that which is pleasing to Jesus Christ, and for the sole reason that it does please him; and they love it when it pleases Jesus Christ, where it pleases him, and how it pleases him; whether he chooses to employ them in honorable functions, or in mean and lowly occupations; in a life of notoriety in the world, or in one hidden and despised. This is the real drift of what is meant by the pure love of Jesus Christ; hence we must labor to overcome the cravings of our self-love, which seeks to be employed in those works only that are glorious, or that are according to our own inclinations. And what will it profit us to be the most honored, the most wealthy, the greatest in this world, without the will of God? The Blessed Henry Suso said, "I would rather be the vilest insect on earth by the will of God, than a seraph in heaven by my own will."

Jesus Christ said: *Many shall say: Lord, we have cast out devils and done great wonders in Thy name: Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy name, and cast out devils in Thy name, and done many miracles in Thy name?*<sup>1</sup> But the Lord will answer them: *I never knew you; depart from Me, you that work iniquity.*<sup>2</sup> Depart from me; I never acknowledged you for my disciples, because you preferred to follow your own inclinations rather than my will. And this is especially applicable to those priests who labor much for the salvation or perfection of others, while they themselves continue to live on in the mire of their imperfections. Perfection consists: *First*, in a true contempt of one's self. *Secondly*, in a thorough mortification of our own appetites. *Thirdly*, in a perfect conformity to the will

<sup>1</sup> "Domine, nonne in nomine tuo prophetavimus, et in nomine tuo dæmonia ejecimus, et in nomine tuo virtutes multas fecimus?"—*Matt.* vii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> "Nunquam novi vos; discedite a me, qui operamini iniquitatem."—*Ibid.* 23.

of God: whosoever is wanting in one of these virtues is out of the way of perfection. On this account a great servant of God said, it was better for us in our actions to have the will of God rather than his glory as their sole end; for in doing the will of God, we at the same time promote his glory; whereas in proposing to ourselves the glory of God, we frequently deceive ourselves, and follow our own will under pretext of glorifying God. St. Francis de Sales said: "There are many who say to the Lord: I give myself wholly to Thee without reserve; but few indeed, in point of fact, practically embrace this abandonment. It consists in a certain indifference in accepting all kinds of events, just as they fall out according to the order of divine Providence, afflictions as well as consolations, slights and injuries as well as honor and glory."<sup>1</sup>

It is therefore in suffering, and in embracing with cheerfulness whatever cuts against the grain of our own inclinations, that we can discover who is a true lover of Jesus Christ. Thomas à Kempis says "that he is not deserving of the name of lover who is not ready to endure all things for his beloved, and to follow in all things the will of his beloved."<sup>2</sup> On the contrary, Father Balthazar Alvarez said, that whoever quietly resigns himself to the divine will in troubles "travels to God post-haste." And the saintly Mother Teresa said: "What greater acquisition can we make, than to have some proof that we are pleasing God?" And to this I add, that we cannot have a more certain proof of this, than by peacefully embracing the crosses which God sends us. We please God by thanking him for his benefits on earth; but, says Father John of Avila, one "blessed be God" uttered in adversity is worth six thousand acts of thanksgiving in prosperity.

<sup>1</sup> *Entret.* 2.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui non est paratus omnia pati et ad voluntatem stare dilecti, non est dignus amator appellari."—*Imit. Chr.* 1. 3. c. 5.



And here we must observe, that we must receive with resignation not merely the crosses which come directly from God; for instance, ill-health, scanty talents, accidental reverses of fortune; but such, moreover, as come indirectly from God, and directly from our fellow-men; for instance, persecutions, thefts, injuries; for all, in reality, come from God. David was one day insulted by one of his vassals called Semei, who not only upbraided him with words of contumely, but even threw stones at him. One of the courtiers would have forthwith avenged the insult by cutting off the head of the offender; but David replied: *Let him alone, and let him curse; for the Lord hath bid him curse David*; <sup>1</sup> or, in other words, God makes use of him to chastise me for my sins, and therefore he allowed him to pursue me with injuries.

Wherefore St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said, that all our prayers should have for their end to obtain from God the grace to follow his holy will in all things. Certain souls, greedy of spiritual dainties in prayer, go in search only of these banquets of sweet and tender feelings; but courageous souls that seek sincerely to belong wholly to God, ask him only for light to understand his will, and for strength to put it in execution. In order to attain to purity of love, it is necessary to submit our will in all things to the will of God: "Never consider yourselves," said St. Francis de Sales, "to have arrived at the purity which you ought to have, as long as your will is not cheerfully obedient, even in things the most repulsive, to the will of God." "Because," as St. Teresa remarks, "the giving up of our will to God draws him to unite himself to our lowliness."<sup>2</sup> But this can never be obtained, except by means of mental prayer and of continual petitions addressed to the divine majesty, nor

<sup>1</sup> "Dimitte eum ut maledicat; Dominus enim præcepit ei ut malediceret David."—*2 Kings*, xvi. 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Way of Perfect*. ch. 33.



without a cordial desire to belong entirely to Jesus Christ without reserve.

O most amiable Heart of my divine Saviour, Heart enamoured of mankind, since Thou lovest us with such a depth of tenderness; O Heart, in fine, worthy to rule over and possess all our hearts, would that I could make all men comprehend the love Thou bearest them, and the tender caresses Thou dost lavish on those who love Thee without reserve! O Jesus my love, be pleased to accept the offering and the sacrifice which I this day make to Thee of my entire will! Acquaint me with what Thou wouldst have me to do; for I am determined to do all by the help of Thy grace.

## II.

### Obedience.

Now what is the surest way to know and ascertain what God requires of us? There is no surer way than to practise obedience to our Superiors and directors. St. Vincent of Paul said: "The will of God is never better complied with than when we obey our Superiors." The Holy Ghost says: *Much better is obedience than the victims of fools.*<sup>1</sup> God is more pleased with the sacrifice which we make to him of our own will, by submitting it to obedience, than with all other sacrifices which we can offer him; because in other things, as in alms-deeds, fastings, mortifications, and the like, we give of what is ours to God, but in giving him our will we present him ourselves: when we give him our goods, our mortifications, we give him part; but when we give him our will, we give him everything. So that when we say to God, O Lord, make me know by means of obedience what Thou requirest of me, for I wish to comply with all, we have nothing more to offer him.

<sup>1</sup> "Melior est obedientia, quam stultorum victimæ."—*Eccles. iv. 17.*

Whoever, therefore, gives himself up to obedience, must needs detach himself totally from his own opinion. "What though each one," says St. Francis de Sales, "has his own opinions, virtue is not thereby violated; but virtue is violated by the attachment which we have to our own opinions."<sup>1</sup> But alas! this attachment is the hardest thing to part with; and hence there are so few persons wholly given to God, because few render a thorough submission to obedience. There are some persons so fondly attached to their own opinion, that, on receiving an obedience, although the thing enjoined suit their inclination, yet, from the very fact that it is commanded, they lose all fancy for it, all wish to discharge it; for they find no relish in anything but in following the dictates of their individual will. How different is the conduct of saints! their only happiness flows from the execution of what obedience imposes on them. The saintly Mother Jane Frances de Chantal once told her daughters that they might spend the recreation-day in any manner they chose. When the evening came, they all went to her, to beg most earnestly that she would never again grant them such a permission; for they had never spent such a wearisome day as that on which they had been set free from obedience.

It is a delusion to think that any one can be possibly better employed than in the discharge of what obedience has imposed. St. Francis de Sales says: "To desert an occupation given by obedience in order to unite ourselves to God by prayer, by reading, or by recollection, would be to withdraw from God to unite ourselves to our own self-love."<sup>2</sup> St. Teresa adds, moreover, that whoever performs any work, even though it be spiritual, yet against obedience, assuredly works by the instigation of the devil, and not by divine inspiration, as he perhaps

<sup>1</sup> *Entret.* 14.<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 19.

flatters himself; "because," says the saint, "the inspirations of God always come in company with obedience." To the same effect she says elsewhere; "God requires nothing more of a soul that is determined to love him than obedience."<sup>1</sup> "A work done out of obedience," says Father Rodriguez, "outweighs every other that we can imagine." To lift up a straw from the ground out of obedience is of greater merit than a protracted prayer, or a discipline to blood, through our own will. This caused St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi to say, that she would rather be engaged in some exercise from obedience than in prayer; "because," said she, "in obedience I am certain of the will of God, whereas I am by no means so certain of it in any other exercise."<sup>2</sup> According to all spiritual masters, it is better to leave off any devout exercise through obedience, than to continue it without obedience. The Most Blessed Virgin Mary revealed once to St. Bridget,<sup>3</sup> that he who relinquishes some mortification through obedience reaps a twofold profit; since he has already obtained the merit of the mortification by the good-will to do it, and he also gains the merit of obedience by foregoing it. One day the famous Father Francis Arias went to see the Venerable Father John of Avila, his intimate friend, and he found him pensive and sad; he asked him the reason, and received this answer: "O happy you, who live under obedience, and are sure of doing the will of God. As for me, who shall warrant me whether I do a thing more pleasing to God in going from village to village, catechizing the poor peasants, or in remaining stationary in the confessional, to hear everyone that presents himself? Whereas he that is living under obedience is always sure that whatever he performs by obedience is according to the will of God, or rather that it is what is most acceptable to God." Let

<sup>1</sup> *Found.* ch. 5.<sup>2</sup> *Cepar.* c. 5.<sup>3</sup> *Rev.* l. 4, c. 26.

this serve as a consolation for all those who live under obedience.

For obedience to be perfect, we must obey with the *will* and with the *judgment*. To obey with the *will* signifies to obey willingly, and not by constraint, after the fashion of slaves ; to obey with the *judgment* means to conform our judgment to that of the Superior, without examining what is commanded. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi remarks on this: "Perfect obedience demands a soul without judgment." To the like purpose, St. Philip Neri said that, in order to obey with perfection, it was not enough to execute the thing commanded, but it must be done without reasoning on it ; taking it for certain that what is commanded us is for us the most perfect thing we can do, although the opposite might be better before God.<sup>1</sup>

This holds good not merely for religious, but likewise for seculars living under obedience to their spiritual directors. Let them request their director to prescribe them rules for the guidance of their affairs, both spiritual and temporal ; and so they will make sure of doing what is best. St. Philip Neri said: "Let those who are desirous of progressing in the way of God submit themselves to a prudent confessor, whom they should obey as in God's place. By so doing, we are certain of not having to render an account to God of the actions we perform."<sup>2</sup>

He said, moreover, "that we must place faith in the confessor, because the Lord will not permit him to err ; that nothing is so sure of cutting off all the snares of the devil as to do the will of others in the performance of good ; and that there is nothing more dangerous than to wish to direct ourselves according to our private fancy." In like manner, St. Francis de Sales says, in speaking of the direction of the spiritual Father as a means of walk-

<sup>1</sup> *Bacci*, l. I, c. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Bacci*, l. I, c. 20.

ing securely in the path of perfection, "This is the maxim of all maxims."<sup>1</sup> "Seek as you will," says the devout Avila, "you will never so surely find the will of God as in the way of this humble obedience, so much recommended and so practised by all the ancient servants of God." The same thing is affirmed by St. Bernard, St. Bernardine of Siena, St. Antoninus, St. John of the Cross, St. Teresa, John Gerson, and all theologians and masters of the spiritual life; and St. John of the Cross said, that to call this truth in question is almost to doubt of the faith. The words of the saint are, "not to be satisfied with what the confessor says, is arrogance, and a want of faith."

Among the maxims of St. Francis de Sales are the two following, most consolatory for scrupulous souls: "First, a truly obedient soul was never yet lost; secondly, we ought to be satisfied on being told by our spiritual director that we are going on well, without seeking to be convinced of it ourselves." It is the teaching of many Doctors, as of Gerson, St. Antoninus, Cajetanus, Navarrus, Sanchez, Bonacina, Cordovius, Castropalao, and the Doctors of Salamanca, with others, that the scrupulous person is bound, under strict obligation, to act in opposition to scruples, when from such scruples there is reason to apprehend grievous harm happening to soul or body, such as the loss of health, or of intellect; wherefore scrupulous persons ought to have greater scruple at not obeying the confessor than at acting in opposition to their scruples.

To sum up, therefore, all that has been said in this chapter, our salvation and perfection consist: 1. In denying ourselves; 2. In following the will of God; 3. In praying him always to give us strength to do both one and the other.

<sup>3</sup> *Introd.* p. 1, c. 4.

*Affections and Prayers.*

*What have I in heaven? and besides Thee what do I desire upon earth? Thou art the God of my heart, and the God that is my portion forever.*<sup>1</sup> My beloved Redeemer, infinitely amiable, since Thou hast come down from heaven to give Thyself wholly to me, what else shall I seek for on earth or in heaven besides Thee, who art the sovereign good, the only good worthy to be loved? Be Thou, then, the sole Lord of my heart, do Thou possess it entirely: may my soul love Thee alone, obey Thee alone, and seek to please no other than Thee. Let others enjoy the riches of this world, I wish only for Thee: Thou art and shalt ever be my treasure in this life and in eternity Wherefore I give Thee, O my Jesus, my whole heart and all my will. It was at one time, alas! a rebel against Thee; but now I dedicate it wholly to Thee. *Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do?*<sup>2</sup> Tell me what Thou requirest of me, and lend me Thy assistance; for I will leave nothing undone. Dispose of me, and of all that concerns me, as Thou pleasest; I accept of all, and resign myself to all. O Love deserving of infinite love, Thou hast loved me so as even to die for me; I love Thee with my whole heart, I love Thee more than myself, and into Thy hands I abandon my soul. On this very day I bid farewell to every worldly affection, I take leave of everything created, and I give myself without reserve to Thee; Through the merits of Thy Passion receive me, and make me faithful unto death. My Jesus, my Jesus, from this day forward I will live only for Thee, I will love none but Thee, I will seek nothing else than to do Thy blessed will.

Aid me by Thy grace, and aid me, too, by thy protection, O Mary my hope.

<sup>1</sup> "Quid mihi est in cœlo? et a te quid volui super terram? . . . Deus cordis mei, et pars mea, Deus, in æternum."—*Ps. lxxii. 25.*

<sup>2</sup> "Domine quid me vis facere?"—*Acts, ix. 6.*



## CHAPTER X.

CHARITY BEARETH ALL THINGS.

*(Charitas omnia suffert.)*

He that loves Jesus Christ bears all Things for Jesus Christ, and especially Illnesses, Poverty, and Contempt.

IN Chapter I. we spoke of the virtue of patience in general. In this we will speak of certain matters in particular, which demand the especial practice of patience.

Father Balthazar Alvarez<sup>1</sup> said that a Christian need not imagine himself to have made any progress until he has succeeded in penetrating his heart with a lasting sense of the sorrows, poverty, and ignominies of Jesus Christ so as to support with loving patience every sort of sorrow, privation, and contempt, for the sake of Jesus Christ.

## I.

## Patience in Sickness.

In the first place, let us speak of bodily infirmities, which, when borne with patience, merit for us a beautiful crown.

St. Vincent de Paul said: "Did we but know how precious a treasure is contained in infirmities, we should accept of them with joy as the greatest possible blessings." Hence the saint himself, though constantly afflicted with ailments, that often left him no rest day or night, bore them with so much peace and such serenity of countenance that no one could guess that anything ailed him at all. Oh, how edifying is it to see a sick person bear

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. 3.

his illness with a peaceful countenance, as did St. Francis de Sales ! When he was ill, he simply explained his complaint to the physician, obeyed him exactly by taking the prescribed medicines, however nauseous; and for the rest he remained at peace, never uttering a single complaint in all his sufferings. What a contrast to this is the conduct of those who do nothing but complain even for the most trifling indisposition, and who would like to have around them all their relatives and friends to sympathize with them ! Far different was the instruction of St. Teresa to her nuns: "My sisters, learn to suffer something for the love of Jesus Christ, without letting all the world know of it."<sup>1</sup> One Good Friday Jesus Christ favored the Venerable Father Louis da Ponte with so much bodily suffering, that no part of him was exempt from its particular pain: he mentioned his severe sufferings to a friend; but he was afterwards so sorry at having done so, that he made a vow never again to reveal to anybody whatever he might afterwards suffer. I say "he was favored;" for, to the saints, the illnesses and pains which God sends them are real favors. One day St. Francis of Assisi lay on his bed in excruciating torments; a companion said to him: "Father, beg God to ease your pains, and not to lay so heavy a hand upon you." On hearing this, the saint instantly leaped from his bed, and going on his knees, thanked God for his sufferings; then, turning to his companion, he said: "Listen, did I not know that you so spoke from simplicity, I would refuse ever to see you again."<sup>2</sup>

Some one that is sick will say, it is not so much the infirmity itself that afflicts me, as that it disables me from going to church to perform my devotions, to communicate, and to hear Holy Mass; I cannot go to choir

<sup>1</sup> *Way of Perf.* ch. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Vita*, c. 14.

to recite the divine Office with my brethren; I cannot celebrate Mass; I cannot pray; for my head is aching with pain, and is light almost to fainting. But tell me now, if you please, why do you wish to go to church or to choir? why would you communicate and say or hear Holy Mass? is it to please God? but it is not now the pleasure of God that you say the Office, that you communicate, or hear Mass; but that you remain patiently on this bed, and support the pains of this infirmity. But you are displeased with my speaking thus; then you are not seeking to do what is pleasing to God, but what is pleasing to yourself. The Venerable John of Avila wrote as follows to a priest who so complained to him: "My friend, busy not yourself with what you would do if you were well, but be content to remain ill as long as God thinks fit. If you seek the will of God, what matters it to you whether you be well or ill?"<sup>1</sup>

You say you are unable even to pray, because your head is weak. Be it so: you cannot meditate; but why cannot you make acts of resignation to the will of God? If you would only make these acts, you could not make a better prayer, welcoming with love all the torments that assail you. So did St. Vincent of Paul: when attacked by a serious illness, he was wont to keep himself tranquilly in the presence of God, without forcing his mind to dwell on any particular subject; his sole exercise was to elicit some short acts from time to time, as of love, of confidence, of thanksgiving, and more frequently of resignation, especially in the crisis of his sufferings. St. Francis de Sales made this remark: "Considered in themselves, tribulations are terrifying; but considered in the will of God, they are lovely and delightful."<sup>2</sup> You cannot say prayers; and what more exquisite prayer than to cast a look from time to time

<sup>1</sup> *Part 2, Ep. 54.*

<sup>2</sup> *Love of God. B. 9, ch. 2.*

on your crucified Lord, and to offer him your pains, uniting the little that you endure to the overwhelming torments that afflicted Jesus on the cross !

There was a certain pious lady lying bedridden with many disorders; and on the servant putting the crucifix into her hand, and telling her to pray to God to deliver her from her miseries, she made answer: "But how can you desire me to seek to descend from the cross, whilst I hold in my hand a God crucified? God forbid that I should do so. I will suffer for him who chose to suffer torments for me incomparably greater than mine." This was, indeed, precisely what Jesus Christ said to St. Teresa when she was laboring under serious illness; he appeared to her all covered with wounds, and then said to her: "Behold, my daughter, the bitterness of my sufferings, and consider if yours equal mine."<sup>1</sup> Hence the saint was accustomed to say, in the midst of all her infirmities: "When I remember in how many ways my Saviour suffered, though he was innocence itself, I know not how it could enter my head to complain of my sufferings." During a period of thirty-eight years, St. Lidwine was afflicted with numberless evils—fevers, gout in the feet and hands, and sores, all her lifetime; nevertheless, from never losing sight of the sufferings of Jesus Christ, she maintained an unbroken cheerfulness and joy. In like manner, St. Joseph of Leonessa, a Capuchin, when the surgeon was about to amputate his arm, and his brethren would have bound him, to prevent him from stirring through vehemence of pain, seized hold of the crucifix and exclaimed: "Wherefore bind me?—wherefore bind me? behold who it is that binds me to support every suffering patiently for love of him;" and so he bore the operation without a murmur. St. Jonas the Martyr, after passing the entire night immersed in ice by order

<sup>1</sup> *Life, addit.*

of the tyrant, declared next morning that he had never spent a happier night, because he had pictured to himself Jesus hanging on the cross; and thus, compared with the torments of Jesus, his own had seemed rather caresses than torments.

Oh, what abundance of merits may be accumulated by patiently enduring illnesses ! Almighty God revealed to Father Balthazar Alvarez the great glory he had in store for a certain nun, who had borne a painful sickness with resignation; and told him that she had acquired greater merit in those eight months of her illness than some other religious in many years. It is by the patient endurance of ill-health that we weave a great part, and perhaps the greater part, of the crown that God destines for us in heaven. St. Lidwine had a revelation to this effect. After sustaining many and most cruel disorders, as we mentioned above, she prayed to die a martyr for the love of Jesus Christ; now as she was one day sighing after this martyrdom, she suddenly saw a beautiful crown, but still incomplete, and she understood that it was destined for herself; whereupon the saint, longing to behold it completed, entreated the Lord to increase her sufferings. Her prayer was heard, for some soldiers came shortly after, and ill-treated her, not only with injurious words, but with blows and outrages. An angel then appeared to her with the crown completed, and informed her that those last injuries had added to it the gems that were wanting; and shortly afterwards she expired.

Ah, yes ! to the hearts that fervently love Jesus Christ, pains and ignominies are most delightful. And thus we see the holy martyrs going with gladness to encounter the sharp prongs and hooks of iron, the plates of glowing steel and axes. The martyr St. Procopius thus spoke to the tyrant who tortured him: "Torment me as you like; but know at the same time, that nothing is sweeter



to the lover of Jesus Christ than to suffer for his sake.”<sup>1</sup> St. Gordius, Martyr, replied in the same way to the tyrant who threatened him death: “Thou threatenest me with death; but I am only sorry that I cannot die more than once for my own beloved Jesus.”<sup>2</sup> And I ask, did these saints speak thus because they were insensible to pain or weak in intellect? “No,” replies St. Bernard; “not insensibility, but love caused this.”<sup>3</sup> They were not insensible, for they felt well enough the torments inflicted on them; but since they loved God, they esteemed it a great privilege to suffer for God, and to lose all, even life itself, for the love of God.

Above all, in time of sickness we should be ready to accept of death, and of that death which God pleases. We must die, and our life must finish in our last illness; nor do we know which will be our last illness. Wherefore in every illness we must be prepared to accept that death which God has appointed for us. A sick person says: “Yes; but I have committed many sins, and have done no penance. I should like to live, not for the sake of living, but to make some satisfaction to God before my death.” But tell me, my brother, how do you know that if you live longer you will do penance, and not rather do worse than before? At present you can well cherish the hope that God has pardoned you; what penance can be more satisfactory than to accept of death with resignation, if God so wills it? St. Aloysius Gonzaga, at the age of twenty-three, gladly embraced death with this reflection: “At present,” he said, “I am, as I hope, in the grace of God. Hereafter, I know not what may befall me; so that I now die contentedly, if God calls me to the next life.”<sup>4</sup> It was the opinion of Father

<sup>1</sup> *Ap. Sur.* 8 Jul.

<sup>2</sup> *S. Bas. hom. in Gord. M.*

<sup>3</sup> “*Neque hoc facit stupor, sed amor.*”—*In Cant.* s. 61.

<sup>4</sup> *Life*, ch. 25.



John of Avila that every one, provided he be in good dispositions, though only moderately good, should desire death, to escape the danger, which always surrounds us in this world, of possibly sinning and losing the grace of God.

Besides, owing to our natural frailty, we cannot live in this world without committing at least venial sins; this should be a motive for us to embrace death willingly, that we may never offend God any more. Further, if we truly love God, we should ardently long to go to see him, and love him with all our strength in Paradise, which no one can do perfectly in this present life; but unless death open us the door, we cannot enter that blessed region of love. This caused St. Augustine, that loving soul, to cry out: "Oh, let me die, Lord, that I may behold Thee!"<sup>1</sup> O Lord, let me die, otherwise I cannot behold and love Thee face to face.

## II.

### Patience in Poverty.

In the second place, we must practise patience in the endurance of poverty. Our patience is certainly very much tried when we are in need of temporal goods. St. Augustine said: "He that has not God, has nothing; he that has God, has all."<sup>2</sup> He who possesses God, and remains united to his blessed will, finds every good. Witness St. Francis, barefooted, clad in sackcloth, and deprived of all things, yet happier than all the monarchs of the world, by simply repeating, "My God and my all."<sup>3</sup> A poor man is properly he that has not what he desires; but he that desires nothing, and is contented with his poverty, is in fact very rich. Of such St. Paul

<sup>1</sup> "Eia, Domine! moriar, ut te videam."—*Sol. an. ad D. c. I.*

<sup>2</sup> *Serm. 85, E. B.*

<sup>3</sup> "Deus meus, et omnia."

says: *Having nothing, yet possessing all things.*<sup>1</sup> The true lovers of God have nothing, and yet have everything; since, when temporal goods fail them, they exclaim: "My Jesus, Thou alone art sufficient for me;" and with this they rest satisfied. Not only did the saints maintain patience in poverty, but sought to be despoiled of all, in order to live detached from all, and united with God alone. If we have not courage enough to renounce all worldly goods, at all events let us be contented with that state of life in which God has placed us; let our solicitude be not for earthly goods, but for those of Paradise, which are immeasurably greater, and last forever; and let us be fully persuaded of what St. Teresa says: "The less we have here, the more we shall have there."<sup>2</sup>

St. Bonaventure said that temporal goods were nothing more than a sort of bird-lime to hinder the soul from flying to God. And St. John Climacus<sup>3</sup> said, that poverty, or the contrary, is a path which leads to God free of all hindrances. Our Lord himself said: *Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*<sup>4</sup> In the other Beatitudes, the heaven of the life to come is promised to the meek and to the clean of heart; but to the poor, heaven (that is, heavenly joy) is promised even in this life: *theirs is the kingdom of heaven.* Yes, for even in the present life the poor enjoy a foretaste of paradise. By the poor in spirit are meant those who are not merely poor in earthly goods, but who do not so much as desire them; who, having enough to clothe and feed them, live contented, according to the advice of the Apostle: *But having food, and wherewith to be covered, with these we are*

<sup>1</sup> "Nihil habentes, et omnia possidentes."—2 Cor. vi. 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Found.* ch. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *Scala sp. gr.* 17.

<sup>4</sup> "Beati pauperes spiritu, quoniam ipsorum est regnum cœlorum."  
—Matt. v. 3.

*content.*<sup>1</sup> Oh, blessed poverty (exclaimed St. Laurence Justinian), which possesses nothing and fears nothing; she is ever joyous and ever in abundance, since she turns every inconvenience into advantage for the soul.<sup>2</sup> St. Bernard said: "The avaricious man hungers after earthly things as a beggar, the poor man despises them as a lord."<sup>3</sup> The miser is always hungry as a beggar, because he is never satiated with the possessions he desires; the poor man, on the contray, despises them all as a rich lord, inasmuch as he desires nothing.

One day Jesus Christ thus spoke to the Blessed Angela of Foligno: "If poverty were not of great excellence, I would not have chosen it for myself, nor have bequeathed it to my elect." And, in fact, the saints, seeing Jesus poor, had therefore a great affection for poverty. St. Paul says, that the desire of growing rich is a snare of Satan, by which he has wrought the ruin of innumerable souls: *They that will become rich, fall into temptation, and into the snare of the devil, and into many unprofitable and hurtful desires, which drown men into destruction and perdition.*<sup>4</sup> Unhappy beings who, for the sake of vile creatures of earth, forfeit an infinite good, which is God! St. Basil the Martyr was quite in the right, when the Emperor Licinius proposed to make him the chief among his priests, if he would renounce Jesus Christ; he was right, I say, to reply: "Tell the emperor, that were he to give me his whole kingdom, he would not give me as much as he would rob me of, by depriving me of God."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Habentes autem alimenta et quibus tegamur, his contenti sumus."—I *Tim.* vi. 8.

<sup>2</sup> *De Disc. mon.* c. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Avarus terrena esurit ut mendicus, fidelis contemnit ut dominus."—*In Cant.* s. 21.

<sup>4</sup> "Qui volunt divites fieri, incidunt . . . in laqueum diaboli et desideria . . . nociva, quæ mergunt homines in interitum et perditionem."—I *Tim.* vi. 9.

<sup>5</sup> *Boll.* April 26, *Act.* n. 11.

Let us be content then with God, and with those things which he gives us, rejoicing in our poverty, when we stand in need of something we desire, and have it not; for herein consists our merit. "Not poverty," says St. Bernard, "but the love of poverty, is reckoned a virtue."<sup>1</sup> Many are poor, but from not loving their poverty, they merit nothing; therefore St. Bernard says, that the virtue of poverty consists not in being poor, but in the love of poverty.

This love of poverty should be especially practised by religious who have made the vow of poverty. "Many religious," says the same St. Bernard, "wish to be poor; but on the condition of wanting for nothing."<sup>2</sup> "Thus," says St. Francis de Sales, "they wish for the honor of poverty, but not the inconveniences of poverty."<sup>3</sup> To such persons is applicable the saying of the Blessed Salomea, a nun of St. Clare: "That religious shall be a laughing-stock to angels and to men, who pretends to be poor, and yet murmurs when she is in want of something." Good religious act differently; they love their poverty above all riches. The daughter of the Emperor Maximilian II., a discalced nun of St. Clare, called Sister Margaret of the Cross, appeared on one occasion before her brother, the Archduke Albert, in a patched-up habit, who evinced some astonishment, as if it were unbecoming her noble birth; but she made him this answer: "My brother, I am more content with this torn garment than all monarchs with their purple robes." St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi said: "O happy religious! who, detached from all by means of holy poverty, can say,

<sup>1</sup> "Non paupertas virtus reputatur, sed paupertatis amor."—*Epist.* 100.

<sup>2</sup> "Pauperes esse volunt, eo tamen pacto, ut nihil eis desit."—*In Adv. D. s. 4.*

<sup>3</sup> *Introd. ch. 16.*

*The Lord is the portion of my inheritance.*<sup>1</sup> “My God, Thou art my portion and all my good.”<sup>2</sup> St. Teresa, having received a large alms from a certain merchant, sent him word that his name was written in the Book of Life, and that, in token of this, he should lose all his possessions; and the merchant actually failed, and remained in poverty till death. St. Aloysius Gonzaga said that there could be no surer sign that a person is numbered among the elect, than to see him fearing God, and at the same time undergoing crosses and tribulations in this life.

The bereavement of relatives and friends by death belongs also, in some measure, to holy poverty; and in this we must especially practise patience. Some people, at the loss of a parent or friend, can find no rest; they shut themselves up to weep in their chamber, and giving free vent to their sorrow, become insupportable to all around them, by their want of patience. I would ask these persons, for whose gratification they thus lament and shed tears? For that of God? Certainly not; for God’s will is, that they should be resigned to his dispensations. For that of the soul departed? By no means: if the soul be lost, she abhors both you and your tears; if she be saved, and already in heaven, she would have you thank God on her part; if still in purgatory, she craves the help of your prayers, and wishes you to bow with resignation to the divine will, and to become a saint, in order that she may one day enjoy your society in paradise. Of what use, then, is all this weeping? On one occasion, the Venerable Father Joseph Caracciolo, the Theatine, was surrounded by his relatives, who were all bitterly lamenting the death of his brother, whereupon he said to them: “Come, come! let us keep these tears for a better purpose, to weep over the death of Jesus Christ, who has

<sup>1</sup> “*Dominus pars hæreditatis meæ.*”—*Ps.* xv. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Cepar.* c. 22.



been to us a father, a brother, and spouse, and who died for love of us." On such occasions we must imitate Job, who, on hearing the news of the death of his sons, exclaimed, with full resignation to the Divine will, *The Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away*; God gave me my sons, and God hath taken them away. *As it hath pleased the Lord, so is it done: blessed be the name of the Lord*; <sup>1</sup> it hath pleased God that such things should happen, and so it pleaseth me; wherefore may he be blessed by me forever.

### III.

#### Patience under Contempt.

In the third place, we must practise patience, and show our love to God, by tranquilly submitting to contempt.

As soon as a soul delivers herself up to God, he sends her from himself, or through others, insults and persecution. One day an angel appeared to the Blessed Henry Suso and said to him, "Henry, thou hast hitherto mortified thyself in thy own way; henceforth thou shalt be mortified after the pleasure of others." On the day following, as he was looking from a window on the street, he saw a dog shaking and tearing a rag which it held in its mouth; at the same moment a voice said to him, "So hast thou to be torn in the mouths of men." Forthwith the Blessed Henry descended into the street and secured the rag, putting it by to encourage him in his coming trials.<sup>2</sup>

Affronts and injuries were the delicacies the saints earnestly longed and sought for. St. Philip Neri, during the space of thirty years, had to put up with much

<sup>1</sup> "Dominus dedit, Dominus abstulit: sicut Domino placuit, ita factum est; sit nomen Domini benedictum."—*Job*, i. 21.

<sup>2</sup> *Life*, ch. 22.



ill-treatment in the house of St. Jerome at Rome; but on this very account he refused to leave it, and resisted all the invitations of his sons to come and live with them in the new Oratory, founded by himself, till he received an express command from the Pope to do so. So St. John of the Cross was prescribed change of air for an illness which eventually carried him to the grave; now, he could have selected a more commodious convent, of which the Prior was particularly attached to him; but he chose instead a poor convent, whose Prior was his enemy, and who, in fact, for a long time, and almost up to his dying day, spoke ill of him, and abused him in many ways, and even prohibited the other monks from visiting him. Here we see how the saints even sought to be despised. St. Teresa wrote this admirable maxim: "Whoever aspires to perfection must beware of ever saying: *They had no reason to treat me so.* If you will not bear any cross but one which is founded on reason, then perfection is not for you." Whilst St. Peter Martyr was complaining in prison of being confined unjustly, he received that celebrated answer from the Crucifix: our Lord said to him, "And what evil have I done, that I suffer and die on this cross for men?" Oh, what consolation do the saints derive in all their tribulations from the ignominies which Jesus Christ endured! St. Eleazar, on being asked by his wife how he contrived to bear with so much patience the many injuries which he had to sustain, and that even from his own servants, replied: "I turn my looks on the outraged Jesus, and I discover immediately that my affronts are a mere nothing in comparison with what he suffered for my sake; and thus God gives me strength to support all patiently."

In fine, affronts, poverty, torments, and all tribulations, serve only to estrange further from God the soul that does not love him; whereas, when they befall a soul in

love with God, they become an instrument of closer union and more ardent love of God: *Many waters cannot quench charity.*<sup>1</sup> However great and grievous troubles may be, so far from extinguishing the flames of charity, they only serve to enkindle them the more in a soul that loves nothing else but God.

But wherefore does Almighty God load us with so many crosses, and take pleasure in seeing us afflicted, reviled, persecuted, and ill-treated by the world? Is he, perchance, a tyrant, whose cruel disposition makes him rejoice in our suffering? No: God is by no means a tyrant, nor cruel; he is all compassion and love towards us; suffice it to say, that he has died for us. He indeed does rejoice at our suffering, but for our good; inasmuch as, by suffering here, we are released hereafter from the debt of torments justly due from us to his divine justice; he rejoices in them, because they detach us from the sensual pleasures of this world: when a mother would wean her child, she puts gall on the breast, in order to create a disgust in the child; he rejoices in them, because we give him, by our patience and resignation in bearing them, a token of our love; in fine, he rejoices in them, because they contribute to our increase of glory in heaven. Such are the reasons for which the Almighty, in his compassion and love towards us, is pleased at our suffering.

Let us now draw this chapter to a conclusion. That we may be able to practise patience to advantage in all our tribulations, we must be fully persuaded that every trial comes from the hands of God, either directly, or indirectly through men; we must therefore render God thanks whenever we are beset with sorrows, and accept, with gladness of heart, of every event, prosperous or adverse, that proceeds from him, knowing that all happens

<sup>1</sup> “*Aquæ multæ non potuerunt extinguere charitatem.*” —*Cant.* viii. 7.

by his disposition for our welfare: *To them that love God all things work together unto good.*<sup>1</sup> In addition to this, it is well in our tribulations to glance a moment at that hell which we have formerly deserved: for assuredly all the pains of this life are incomparably smaller than the awful pains of hell. But above all, prayer, by which we gain the divine assistance, is the great means to suffer patiently all affliction, scorn, and contradictions; and is that which will furnish us with the strength which we have not of ourselves. The saints were persuaded of this; they recommended themselves to God, and so overcame every kind of torments and persecutions.

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

O Lord, I am fully persuaded that without suffering, and suffering with patience, I cannot win the crown of Paradise. David said: *From Him is my patience.*<sup>2</sup> And I say the same; my patience in suffering must come from Thee. I make many purposes to accept in peace of all tribulations; but no sooner are they at hand than I grow sad and alarmed; and if I suffer, I suffer without merit and without love, because I know not how to suffer them so as to please Thee. O my Jesus, through the merits of Thy patience in bearing so many afflictions for love of me, grant me the grace to bear crosses for the love of Thee! I love Thee with my whole heart, O my dear Redeemer! I love Thee, my sovereign good! I love Thee, my own love, worthy of infinite love. I am grieved at any displeasure I have ever caused Thee, more than for any evil whatever. I promise Thee to receive with patience all the trials Thou mayest send me; but I look to Thee for help to be faithful to my promise, and especially to be enabled to bear in peace the throes of my last agony and death.

O Mary, my Queen, vouchsafe to obtain for me a true resignation in all the anguish and trials that await me in life and death.

<sup>1</sup> “Diligentibus Deum omnia cooperantur in bonum.”—*Rom.* viii. 28.

<sup>2</sup> “Ab ipso patientia mea.”—*Ps.* lxi. 6.

## CHAPTER XI.

CHARITY BELIEVETH ALL THINGS.

*(Charitas omnia credit.)***He that loves Jesus Christ believes all His Words.**

WHOEVER loves a person, believes all that proceeds from the lips of that person; consequently, the more a soul loves Jesus Christ, the more lively and unshaken is her faith. When the good thief beheld our Redeemer, though he had done no ill, suffering death upon the cross with such patience, he began at once to love him; under the influence of this love, and of the divine light which then broke upon his soul, he believed that this was truly the Son of God, and begged not to be forgotten by him when he should have passed into his kingdom.

Faith is the foundation of charity; but faith afterwards receives its perfection from charity. His faith is most perfect whose love of God is most perfect. Charity produces in man not merely the faith of the understanding, but the faith of the will also: those who believe only with the understanding, but not with the will, as is the case with sinners who are perfectly convinced of the truths of the faith, but do not choose to live according to the divine commandments,—such as these have a very weak faith; for had they a more lively belief that the grace of God is a priceless treasure, and that sin, because it robs us of this grace, is the worst of evils, they would assuredly change their lives. If, then, they prefer the miserable creatures of this earth to God, it is because they either do not believe, or because their faith is very weak. On the contrary, he who believes not only with

the understanding, but also with the will, so that he not only believes, but has the will to believe in God, the revealer of truth, from the love he has for him, and rejoices in so believing,—such a one has a perfect faith, and consequently seeks to make his life conformable to the truths that he believes.

Weakness of faith, however, in those who live in sin, does not spring from the obscurity of faith; for though God, in order to make our faith more meritorious, has veiled the objects of faith in darkness and secresy, he has at the same time given us so clear and convincing evidence of their truth, that not to believe them would argue not merely a lack of sense, but sheer madness and impiety. The weakness of the faith of many persons is to be traced to their wickedness of living. He who, rather than forego the enjoyment of forbidden pleasures, scorns the divine friendship, would wish there were no law to forbid, and no chastisement to punish, his sin; on this account he strives to blind himself to the eternal truths of death, judgment, and hell, and of divine justice; and because such subjects strike too much terror into his heart, and are too apt to mix bitterness in his cup of pleasure, he sets his brain to work to discover proofs, which have at least the look of plausibility; and by which he allows himself to be flattered into the persuasion that there is no soul, no God, no hell, in order that he may live and die like the brute beasts, without laws and without reason.

And this laxity of morals is the source whence have issued, and still issue daily, so many books and systems of Materialists, Indifferentists, Politicists, Deists, and Naturalists; some among them deny the divine existence, and some the divine Providence, saying that God, after having created men, takes no further notice of them, and is heedless whether they love or hate him whether they be saved or lost; others, again, deny the



goodness of God, and maintain that he has created numberless souls for hell, becoming himself their tempter to sin, that so they may damn themselves, and go into everlasting fire, to curse him there forever.

Oh, ingratitude and wickedness of men! God has created them in his mercy, to make them eternally happy in heaven; he has poured on them so many lights, benefits, and graces, to bring them to eternal life; for the same end he has redeemed them at the price of so many sorrows and sufferings; and yet they strive to deny all, that they may give free rein to their vicious inclinations! But no: let them strive as they will, the unhappy beings cannot wrest themselves from remorse of conscience, and the dread of the divine vengeance. On this subject I have latterly published a work, entitled *The Truth of Faith*, in which I have clearly shown the inconsistency of all these systems of modern unbelievers. Oh, if they would but once forsake sin, and apply themselves earnestly to the love of Jesus Christ, they would then most certainly cast away all doubts about things of faith, and firmly believe all the truths that God has revealed!

The true lover of Jesus Christ keeps the eternal truths constantly in view, and orders all his actions according to them. Oh, how thoroughly does he who loves Jesus Christ understand the force of that saying of the Wise Man, *Vanity of vanities, and all is vanity*,<sup>1</sup> that all earthly greatness is mere smoke, dirt, and delusion; that the soul's only welfare and happiness consists in loving its Creator, and in doing his blessed will; that we are, in reality, no more than what we are before God; that it is of no use to gain the whole world, if the soul be lost; that all the goods in the world can never satisfy the human heart, but only God himself; and, in fine, that we must leave all in order to gain all.

<sup>1</sup> "Vanitas vanitatum, et omnia vanitas."—*Eccles.* i. 2.



*Charity believeth all things.*<sup>1</sup> There are other Christians,—though not so perverse as the class we have mentioned, who would fain believe in nothing, that they may give full scope to their unruly passions, and live on undisturbed by the stings of remorse,—there are others, I say, who believe, indeed, but their faith is languid; they believe the most holy mysteries of religion, the truths of Revelation contained in the Gospel, the Trinity, the Redemption, the holy Sacraments, and the rest; still they do not believe all. Jesus Christ has said: *Blessed are the poor; blessed are the sorrowful; blessed are the mortified; blessed are those whom men persecute, calumniate, and curse. Blessed are the poor; blessed are they that hunger; blessed are they that suffer persecution; blessed are you when men shall revile you, and shall say all manner of evil against you.*<sup>2</sup> This is the teaching of Jesus Christ in the Gospel. How, then, can it be said, that those believe in the Gospel who say: “Blessed are those who have money; blessed are those who suffer nothing; blessed are those who can take their amusements; pitiable is the man that suffers persecution and ill-treatment from others”? We must certainly say of such as these, that either they do not believe the Gospel, or that they believe only a part of it. He who believes it all esteems it his highest fortune, and a mark of the divine favor in this world, to be poor, to be sick, to be mortified, to be despised and ill-treated by men. Such is the belief, and such the language, of one who believes all that is said in the Gospel, and has a real love for Jesus Christ.

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

My beloved Redeemer, O life of my soul, I firmly believe that Thou art the only good worthy of being loved. I believe that

<sup>1</sup> “Charitas omnia credit.”

<sup>2</sup> “Beati pauperes.—Beati qui lugent.—Beati qui esuriunt.—Beati qui persecutionem patiuntur.—Beati estis cum maledixerint vobis, . . . et dixerint omne malum adversus vos.”—*Matt. v. 3-II.*

Thou art the greatest lover of my soul, since through love alone Thou didst die, overwhelmed with sorrows for love of me. I believe there is no greater blessing in this world, or in the next, than to love Thee, and to do Thy adorable will. All this I believe most firmly; so that I renounce all things, that I may belong wholly to Thee, and that I may possess Thee alone. Help me, through the merits of Thy sacred Passion, and make me such as Thou wouldst have me to be. I believe in Thee, O infallible truth! I trust in Thee, O infinite mercy! I love Thee, O infinite goodness! O infinite love, I give myself wholly to Thee, who hast wholly given Thyself to me in Thy Passion, and in the holy Sacrament of the Altar.

And I recommend myself to Thee, O Mary, refuge of sinners, and Mother of God!

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### CHARITY HOPETH ALL THINGS.

(*Charitas omnia sperat.*)

**He that loves Jesus Christ hopes for all Things from Him.**

HOPE increases charity, and charity increases hope.

Hope in the divine goodness undoubtedly gives an increase to our love of Jesus Christ. St. Thomas says, that in the very moment when we hope to receive some benefit from a person, we begin also to love him.<sup>1</sup> On this account, the Lord forbids us to put our trust in creatures: *Put not your trust in princes.*<sup>2</sup> Further, he pronounces a curse on those who do so: *Cursed be the man that trusteth in man.*<sup>3</sup> God does not wish us to trust in creatures,

<sup>1</sup> "Ex hoc enim quod per aliquem speramus nobis posse provenire bona, movemur in ipsum sicut in bonum nostrum, et sic incipimus ipsum amare."—I. 2, q. 40, a. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Nolite confidere in principibus."—*Ps.* cxlv. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Maledictus homo qui confidit in homine."—*Jer.* xvii. 5.

because he does not wish us to fix our love upon them. Hence St. Vincent of Paul said: "Let us beware of reposing too much confidence in men; for when God beholds us thus leaning on them for support, he himself withdraws from us." On the other hand, the more we trust in God, the more we shall advance in his holy love: *I have run the way of Thy commandments, when Thou didst enlarge my heart.*<sup>1</sup> Oh, how rapidly does that soul advance in perfection that has her heart dilated with confidence in God! She flies rather than runs; for by making God the foundation of all her hope, she flings aside her own weakness, and borrows the strength of God himself, which is communicated to all who place their confidence in him: *They that hope in the Lord shall renew their strength, they shall take wings as eagles, they shall run and not be weary, they shall walk and not faint.*<sup>2</sup> The eagle is the bird that soars nearest the sun; in like manner, the soul that has God for her trust becomes detached from the earth, and more and more united to God by love.

Now as hope increases the love of God, so does love help to increase hope; for charity makes us the adopted sons of God. In the natural order we are the work of his hands; but in the supernatural order we are made sons of God, and partakers of the divine nature, through the merits of Jesus Christ; as the Apostle St. Peter writes: *That by these you may be made partakers of the Divine nature.*<sup>3</sup> And if charity makes us the sons of God, it consequently makes us heirs of heaven, according to

<sup>1</sup> "Viam mandatorum tuorum cucurri, cum dilatasti cor meum."—*Ps.* cxviii. 32.

<sup>2</sup> "Qui autem sperant in Domino, mutabunt fortitudinem, assument pennas sicut aquilæ, current et non laborabunt, ambulabunt et non deficient."—*Is.* xl. 31.

<sup>3</sup> "Ut per hæc efficiamini divinæ naturæ consortes."—2 *Pet.* i. 4.

St. Paul : *And if sons, heirs also.*<sup>1</sup> Now a son claims the right of abiding under the paternal roof; an heir is entitled to the property; and thus charity increases the hope of Paradise : so that the souls that love God cry out incessantly, “Thy kingdom come, Thy kingdom come !”<sup>2</sup> Moreover, God loves those who love him : *I love them that love Me.*<sup>3</sup> He showers down his graces on those that seek him by love : *The Lord is good to the soul that seeketh Him.*<sup>4</sup> Consequently, the soul that loves God most has the greatest hope in his goodness. This confidence produces that imperturbable tranquillity in the saints which makes them always joyful and full of peace, even amid the severest trials; for their love of Jesus Christ, and their persuasion of his liberality towards those who love him, leads them to trust solely in him; and thus they find a lasting repose. The sacred spouse abounded with delights, because she loved none but her Spouse, and leaned entirely on him for support; she was full of contentment, since she well knew how generous her beloved is towards all that love him; so that of her it is written : *Who is this that cometh up from the desert, flowing with delights, leaning upon her Beloved ?*<sup>5</sup> These words of the Wise Man are most true : *All good things come to me together with her.*<sup>6</sup> With charity, all blessings are introduced into the soul.

The primary object of Christian hope is God, whom the soul enjoys in the kingdom of heaven. But we must not suppose that the hope of enjoying God in Paradise is any obstacle to charity; since the hope of Paradise is

<sup>1</sup> “Si autem filii, et hæredes.”—*Rom.* viii. 17.

<sup>2</sup> “Adveniat, adveniat regnum tuum.”

<sup>3</sup> “Ego diligentes me diligo.”—*Prov.* viii. 17.

<sup>4</sup> “Bonus est Dominus. . . . animæ quærenti illum.”—*Lam.* iii. 25.

<sup>5</sup> “Quæ est ista quæ ascendet de deserto, deliciis affluens, innixa super Dilectum suum ?”—*Cant.* viii. 5.

<sup>6</sup> “Venerunt autem mihi omnia bona pariter cum illa.”—*Wisd.* vii. 11.

inseparably connected with charity, which there receives its full and complete perfection. Charity is that infinite treasure, spoken of by the Wise Man, which makes us the friends of God : *An infinite treasure to men, which they that use become the friends of God.*<sup>1</sup> The angelic Doctor St. Thomas says, that friendship is founded on the mutual communication of goods; for as friendship is nothing more than a mutual love between friends, it follows that there must be a reciprocal interchange of the good which each possesses.<sup>2</sup> Hence the saint says : “ If there be no communication, there is no friendship.” On this account Jesus Christ says to his disciples : *I have called you friends, because all things whatsoever I have heard of My Father I have made known to you.*<sup>3</sup> Since he had made them his friends, he had communicated all his secrets to them.

St. Francis de Sales says : “ If, by a supposition of what is impossible, there could be an infinite good (that is a God) to whom we belonged in no way whatever, and with whom we could have no union or communication, we should certainly esteem him more than ourselves; so that we might feel great desire of being able to love him; but we should not actually love him, because love is built upon union; for love is a friendship, and the foundation of friendship is to have things in common; and its end is union.”<sup>4</sup> Thus St. Thomas teaches us that charity does not exclude the desire of the reward prepared for us in heaven by Almighty God; on the contrary, it makes us look to it as the chief object of our love, for such is God, who constitutes the bliss of

<sup>1</sup> “ Infinitus enim thesaurus est hominibus, quo qui usi sunt, participes facti sunt amicitiae Dei.”—*Wisd.* vii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> “ Amicitia super amorem addit mutuam redamationem cum quadam communicatione mutua.”—I. 2, q. 65, a. 5.

<sup>3</sup> “ Vos autem dixi Amicos, quia omnia, quaecumque audiui a Patre meo, nota feci vobis.”—*John*, xv. 15.

<sup>4</sup> *Love of God*, B. 10, c. 10.

paradise; for friendship implies, that friends rejoice with one another.<sup>1</sup>

The Spouse in the Canticles refers to this reciprocal interchange of goods, when she says : *My Beloved to me and I to Him.*<sup>2</sup> In heaven the soul belongs wholly to God, and God belongs wholly to the soul, according to the measure of her capacity and of her merits. But from the persuasion which the soul has of her own nothingness in comparison with the infinite attractions of Almighty God, and aware consequently that the claims of God on her love are beyond measure greater than her own can be on the love of God, she is therefore more anxious to procure the divine pleasure than her own enjoyment ; so that she is more gratified by the pleasure which she affords Almighty God by giving herself entirely to him, than by God's giving himself entirely to her ; but at the same time she is delighted when God thus gives himself to her, inasmuch as she is thereby animated to give herself up to God with a greater intensity of love. She indeed rejoices at the glory which God imparts to her, but for the sole purpose of referring it back to God himself, and of thus doing her utmost to increase the divine glory. At the sight of God in heaven the soul cannot help loving him with all her strength ; on the other hand, God cannot hate any one that loves him : but if (supposing what is impossible) God could hate a soul that loves him, and if a beatified soul could exist without loving God, she would much rather endure all the pains of hell, on condition of being allowed to love God as much as he should hate her, than to live without loving God, even though she could

<sup>1</sup> “ Amicorum est quod quærant invicem perfrui ; sed nihil aliud est merces nostra, quam perfrui Deo, videndo ipsum ; ergo charitas, non solum non excludit, sed etiam facit habere oculum ad mercedem.”—*In 3 Sent.* d. 29, q. 1, a. 4.

<sup>2</sup> “ Dilectus meus mihi, et ego illi.”—*Cant.* ii. 16.



enjoy all the other delights of Paradise. So it is ; for that conviction which the soul has of God's boundless claims upon her love gives her a greater desire to love God than to be loved by him.

*Charity hopeth all things.* St. Thomas, with the Master of the Sentences, defines Christian hope to be a "sure expectation of eternal happiness."<sup>2</sup> Its certainty arises from the infallible promise of God to give eternal life to his faithful servants. Now charity, by taking away sin, at the same time takes away all obstacles to our obtaining the happiness of the blessed; hence the greater our charity, the greater also and firmer is our hope. hope, on the other hand, can in no way interfere with the purity of love, because, according to the observation of St. Dionysius the Areopagite, love tends naturally to union with the object beloved; or, as St. Augustine asserts in stronger terms, love itself is like a chain of gold that links together the hearts of the lover and the loved. "Love is as it were a kind of bond uniting two together."<sup>3</sup> And as this union can never be effected at a distance, the person that loves always longs for the presence of the object of his love. The sacred spouse languished in the absence of her beloved, and entreated her companions to acquaint him with her sorrow, that he might come and console her with his presence : *I adjure you, O daughters of Jerusalem, if you find my Beloved, that you tell Him that I languish with love.*<sup>4</sup> A soul that loves Jesus Christ exceedingly cannot but desire and hope, as long as she remains on earth, to go without delay and be united to her beloved Lord in heaven.

<sup>1</sup> "Charitas omnia sperat."

<sup>2</sup> "Spes est certa exspectatio beatitudinis."—*In 3 Sent.* d. 26.

<sup>3</sup> "Amor est quædam vitta duo aliqua copulans."—*De Trin.* l. 8, c. 10.

<sup>4</sup> "Adjuro vos, filiæ Jerusalem, si inveneritis Dilectum meum, ut nuntietis ei quia amore langueo."—*Cant.* v. 8.

Thus we see that the desire to go and see God in heaven, not so much for the delight which we shall experience in loving God, as for the pleasure which we shall afford God by loving him, is pure and perfect love. Nor is the joy of the blessed in heaven any hindrance to the purity of their love ; such joy is inseparable from their love ; but they take far more satisfaction in their love of God than in the joy that it affords them. Some one will perhaps say : But the desire of a reward is rather a love of concupiscence than a love of friendship. We must therefore make a distinction between temporal rewards promised by men and the eternal rewards of paradise promised by God to those who love him : the rewards given by man are distinct from their own persons and independent of them, since they do not bestow themselves, but only their goods, when they would remunerate others ; on the contrary, the principal reward which God gives to the blessed is the gift of himself : *I am thy reward exceeding great.*<sup>1</sup> Hence to desire heaven is the same thing as to desire God, who is our last end.

I wish here to propose a doubt, which may rise in the mind of one who loves God, and strives to conform himself in all things to his blessed will. If it should be ever revealed to such a one that he would be eternally lost, would he be obliged to bow to it with resignation, in order to practise conformity with the will of God ? St. Thomas says no ; and further, that he would sin by consenting to it, because he would be consenting to live in a state that involves sin, and is contrary to the last end for which God created him ; for God did not create souls to hate him in hell, but to love him in heaven : so that he does not wish the death even of the sinner, but that all should be converted and saved. The holy Doctor says that God wishes no one to be damned except

<sup>1</sup> "Ego . . . merces tua magna nimis."—*Gen.* xv. i.

through sin ; and therefore, a person, by consenting to his damnation, would not be acting in conformity with the will of God, but with the will of sin.<sup>1</sup> But suppose that God, foreseeing the sin of a person, should have decreed his damnation, and that this decree should be revealed to him, would he be bound to consent to it? In the same passage the saint says, By no means ; because such a revelation must not be taken as an irrevocable decree, but made merely *by way of communication*, as a threat of what would follow if he persists in sin.

But let every one banish such baneful thoughts from his mind, as only calculated to cool his confidence and love. Let us love Jesus Christ as much as possible here below ; let us always be sighing to go hence and to behold him in paradise, that we may there love him perfectly ; let us make it the grand object of all our hopes, to go thither to love him with all our strength. We are commanded even in this life to love God with our whole strength : *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart, with thy whole soul, and with all thy strength ;*<sup>2</sup> but the angelical Doctor<sup>3</sup> says that man cannot perfectly fulfil this precept upon earth ; only Jesus Christ, who was both God and man, and the most holy Mary, who was full of grace and free from original sin, perfectly fulfilled it. But we miserable children of Adam, infected as we are with sin, can not love God without some imperfection ; and it is in heaven alone, when we shall see God face to face, that we shall love him, nay more, that we shall be necessitated to love him with all our strength.

Behold, then, the scope of all our desires and aspirations, of all our thoughts and ardent hopes ; to go and

<sup>1</sup> “ Unde, velle suam damnationem absolute, non esset conformare suam voluntatem divinæ, sed voluntati peccati.”—*De Ver.* q. 23, a. 8.

<sup>2</sup> “ Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo, et ex tota anima tua, et ex omnibus viribus tuis,”—*Luke*, x. 27.

<sup>3</sup> *In 3 Sent.* d. 27.

enjoy God in heaven, in order to love him with all our strength, and to rejoice in the enjoyment of God. The blessed certainly rejoice in their own felicity in that kingdom of delights ; but the chief source of their happiness, and that which absorbs all the rest, is to know that their beloved Lord possesses an infinite happiness ; for they love God incomparably more than themselves. Each one of the blessed has such a love for him, that he would willingly forfeit all happiness, and undergo the most cruel torments, rather than that God should lose (if it were possible for him to lose) one, even the least particle of his happiness. Hence the sight of God's infinite happiness, and the knowledge that it can never suffer diminution for all eternity, constitutes his paradise. This is the meaning of what our Lord says to every soul on whom he bestows the possession of eternal glory : *Enter into the joy of thy Lord.*<sup>1</sup> It is not the joy that enters into the blessed soul, but the soul that enters into the joy of God, since the joy of God is the object of the joy of the blessed. Thus the good of God will be the good of the blessed ; the riches of God will be their riches, and the happiness of God will be their happiness.

On the instant that a soul enters heaven, and sees by the light of glory the infinite beauty of God face to face, she is at once seized and all consumed with love. The happy soul is then as it were lost and immersed in that boundless ocean of the goodness of God. Then it is that she quite forgets herself, and inebriated with divine love, thinks only of loving her God : *They shall be inebriated with the plenty of Thy House.*<sup>2</sup> As an intoxicated person no longer thinks of himself, so a soul in bliss can only think of loving and affording delight to her beloved Lord ; she desires to possess him entirely, and she does

<sup>1</sup> "Intra in gaudium Domini tui."—*Matt.* xxv. 21.

<sup>2</sup> "Inebriabuntur ab ubertate domus tuæ."—*Ps.* xxxv. 9.

in fact possess him, without fear of losing him any more; she desires to give herself wholly to him, at every moment, and she does indeed possess him for every moment she offers herself to God without reserve, and God receives her in his loving embraces, and so holds her, and shall hold her in the same fond embraces for all eternity.

In this manner the soul is wholly united to God in heaven, and loves him with all her strength; her love is most perfect and complete, and though necessarily finite, since a creature is not capable of infinite love, it nevertheless renders her perfectly happy and contented, so that she desires nothing more. On the other hand, Almighty God communicates himself, and unites himself wholly to the soul, filling her with himself proportionately to her merits; and this union is not merely by means only of his gifts, lights, and loving attractions, as is the case during the present life, but by his own very essence. As fire penetrates iron, and seems to change it into itself, so does God penetrate the soul and fill her with himself; and though she never loses her own being, yet she becomes so penetrated and absorbed by that immense ocean of the divine substance, that she remains, as it were, annihilated, and as if she ceased to exist. The Apostle prayed for this happy lot for his disciples when he said: *That you may be filled unto all the fulness of God.*<sup>1</sup>

And this is the last end, which the goodness of God has appointed for us in the life to come. Hence the soul can never enjoy perfect repose on earth; because it is only in heaven that she can obtain perfect union with God. It is true that the lovers of Jesus Christ find peace in the practice of perfect conformity with the will of God; but they cannot in this life find complete repose;

<sup>1</sup> “Ut impleamini in omnem plenitudinem Dei.”—*Eph.* iii. 19.



this is only obtained when our last end is obtained; that is, when we see God face to face, and are consumed with his divine love; and as long as the soul does not reach this end, she is ill at ease, and groans and sighs, saying: *Behold, in peace is my bitterness most bitter.*<sup>1</sup> Yes, O my God, I live in peace in this valley of tears, because such is Thy will; but I cannot help feeling unspeakable bitterness at finding myself at a distance from Thee, and not yet perfectly united with Thee, who art my centre, my all, and the fulness of my repose!

For this reason the saints, though they were all inflamed with the love of God, did nothing but sigh after paradise. David cried out: *Wo is me, that my sojourning is prolonged!*<sup>2</sup> *I shall be satisfied when thy glory shall appear.*<sup>3</sup> St. Paul said of himself: *Having a desire to be with Christ.*<sup>4</sup> St. Francis of Assisi said:

“ I look for such a meed of bliss,  
That all my pain seems happiness.”<sup>5</sup>

These were all so many acts of perfect charity. The angelic Doctor teaches us, that the highest degree of charity that a soul can reach upon earth, is to desire intensely to go and be united with God, and to enjoy him in heaven.<sup>6</sup> But, as we have already seen, this enjoyment of God in heaven does not consist so much in the fruition of the delights there lavished on her by Almighty God, as in the pleasure she takes in the happiness of God himself, whom she loves incomparably more than herself.

<sup>1</sup> “ Ecce in pace amaritudo mea amarissima.”—*Is.* xxxviii. 17.

<sup>2</sup> “ Heu mihi, quia incolatus meus prolongatus est.”—*Ps.* cxix. 5.

<sup>3</sup> “ Satiabor cum apparuerit gloria tua.”—*Ps.* xvi. 15.

<sup>4</sup> “ Desiderium habens dissolvi, et esse cum Christo.”—*Phil.* i. 23.

<sup>5</sup> *Apophth.* 57.

<sup>6</sup> “ Tertium autem studium est ut homo ad hoc principaliter intendat, ut Deo inhæreat et eo fruatur; et hoc pertinet ad perfectos, qui cupiunt dissolvi, et esse cum Christo.”—2. 2, q. 24, a. 9.



The holy souls in purgatory feel no pain more acutely than that of their yearning to possess God, from whom they remain still at a distance. And this sort of pain will afflict those especially who in their lifetime had but little desire of paradise. Cardinal Bellarmine<sup>1</sup> also says, that there is a certain place in purgatory called, prison of honor,<sup>2</sup> where certain souls are not tormented with any pain of sense, but merely with the pain of privation of the sight of God; examples of this are related by St. Gregory, Venerable Bede, St. Vincent Ferrer, and St. Bridget; and this punishment is not for the commission of sin, but for coldness in desiring heaven. Many souls aspire to perfection; but for the rest, they are too indifferent whether they go to enjoy the sight of God, or continue on earth. But eternal life is an inestimable good, that has been purchased by the death of Jesus Christ; and God punishes such souls as have been remiss during life in their desires to obtain it.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O God, my Creator and my Redeemer, Thou hast created me for heaven; Thou hast redeemed me from hell to bring me into heaven; and I have so many times, in Thy very face, renounced my claim to heaven by my sins, and have remained contented in seeing myself doomed to hell! But blessed forever be Thy infinite mercy, which, I would fain hope, has pardoned me, and many a time rescued me from perdition. Ah, my Jesus, would that I had never offended Thee! would that I had always loved Thee! I am glad that at least I have still time to do so. I love Thee! O love of my soul, I love Thee with my whole heart; I love Thee more than myself! I see plainly that Thou wishest to save me, that I may be able to love Thee for all eternity in that kingdom of love. I thank Thee, and beseech Thee to help me for the remainder of my life, in which I wish to love Thee most ardently, that I may ardently love Thee in eternity. Ah, my Jesus, when will the day arrive that shall free me from all

<sup>1</sup> *De Purg.* l. 2, c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Carcer honoratus."

danger of losing Thee, that shall consume me with love, by unveiling before my eyes Thy infinite beauty, so that I shall be under the necessity of loving Thee? Oh, sweet necessity! oh, happy and dear and most desired necessity, which shall relieve me from all fear of evermore displeasing Thee, and shall oblige me to love Thee with all my strength! My conscience alarms me, and says: "How canst Thou presume to enter heaven?" But, my dearest Redeemer, Thy merits are all my hope.

O Mary, Queen of Heaven, thy intercession is all-powerful with God, in thee I put my trust!

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### CHARITY BEARETH ALL THINGS.

*(Charitas omnia sustinet.)*

**He that loves Jesus Christ with a Strong Love does not cease to love Him in the midst of all Sorts of Temptations and Desolations.**

It is not the pains of poverty, of sickness, of dishonor and persecution, which in this life most afflict the souls that love God, but temptations and desolations of spirit. Whilst a soul is in the enjoyment of the loving presence of God, she is so far from grieving at all the afflictions and ignominies and outrages of men, that she is rather comforted by them, as they afford her an opportunity of showing God a token of her love; they serve, in short, as fuel to enkindle her love more and more. But to find herself solicited by temptations to forfeit the divine grace, or in the hour of desolation to apprehend having already lost it, oh, these are torments too cruel to bear for one who loves Jesus Christ with all her heart! However, the same love supplies her with strength to endure all patiently, and to pursue the way of perfection, on which she has entered. And, oh, what progress do

those souls make by means of these trials, which God is pleased to send them in order to prove their love!

## I.

## Temptations.

Temptations are the most grievous trials that can happen to a soul that loves Jesus Christ; she accepts with resignation of every other evil, as calculated only to bind her in closer union with God; but temptations to commit sin would drive her, as we said above, to a separation from Jesus Christ; and on this account they are more intolerable to her than all other afflictions.

*Why God permits Temptations.*

We must know, however, that although no temptation to evil can ever come from God, but only from the devil or our own corrupt inclinations: *for God is not a tempter of evils, and he tempteth no man;*<sup>1</sup> nevertheless, God does at times permit his most cherished souls to be the most grievously tempted.

In the first place, in order that from temptations the soul may better learn her own weakness, and the need she has of the divine assistance not to fall. Whilst a soul is favored with heavenly consolations, she feels as if she were able to vanquish every assault of the enemy, and to achieve every undertaking for the glory of God. But when she is strongly tempted, and is almost reeling on the edge of the precipice, and just ready to fall, then she becomes better acquainted with her own misery and with her inability to resist, if God did not come to her rescue. So it fared with St. Paul, who tells us that God had suffered him to be troubled with a temptation to sensual pleasure, in order to keep him humble after the revelations with which God had favored him: *And lest the*

<sup>1</sup> "Deus enim intentator malorum est, ipse autem neminem tentat."  
—James, i. 13.

*greatness of the revelations should exalt me, there was given me a sting of my flesh, an angel of Satan to buffet me.*<sup>1</sup>

Besides, God permits temptations with a view to detach us more thoroughly from this life; and to kindle in us the desire to go and behold him in heaven. Hence pious souls, finding themselves attacked day and night by so many enemies, come at length to feel a loathing for life, and exclaim: *Wo is me, that my sojourning is prolonged!*<sup>2</sup> And they sigh for the moment when they can say: *The snare is broken and we are delivered.*<sup>3</sup> The soul would willingly wing her flight to God; but as long as she lives upon this earth she is bound by a snare which detains her here below, where she is continually assailed with temptations; this snare is only broken by death: so that the souls that love God sigh for death, which will deliver them from all danger of losing him.

Almighty God, moreover, allows us to be tempted, to make us richer in merits; as it was said to Tobias: *And because thou wast acceptable to God, it was necessary that temptations should prove thee.*<sup>4</sup> Thus a soul need not imagine herself out of God's favor because she is tempted, but should make it rather a motive of hope that God loves her. It is a delusion of the devil to lead some pusillanimous persons to suppose that temptations are sins that contaminate the soul. It is not bad thoughts that make us lose God, but the consenting to them; let the suggestions of the devil be ever so violent, let those filthy imaginations which overload our minds be ever so lively, they cannot cast the least stain on our souls, provided only we yield no consent to them; on the contrary, they

<sup>1</sup> "Et ne magnitudo revelationum extollat me, datus est mihi stimulus carnis meæ, angelus Satanæ, qui me colaphizet."—2 Cor. xii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Heu mihi, quia incolatus meus prolongatus est."—Ps. cxix. 5.

<sup>3</sup> "Laqueus contritus est, et nos liberati sumus."—Ps. cxxiii. 7.

<sup>4</sup> "Et quia acceptus eras Deo, necesse fuit, ut tentatio probaret te."—Tob. xii. 13.

make the soul purer, stronger, and dearer to Almighty God. St. Bernard says, that every time we overcome a temptation we win a fresh crown in heaven: "As often as we conquer, so often are we crowned."<sup>1</sup> An angel once appeared to a Cistercian monk, and put a crown into his hands, with orders that he should carry it to one of his fellow-religious, as a reward for the temptation that he had lately overcome.

Nor must we be disturbed if evil thoughts do not forthwith disappear from our minds, but continue obstinately to persecute us; it is enough if we detest them, and do our best to banish them. God is faithful, says the Apostle; he will not allow us to be tempted above our strength: *God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that which you are able; but will make also with temptation issue, that you may be able to bear it.*<sup>2</sup> Thus a person, so far from losing anything by temptations, derives great profit from them. On this account God frequently allows the souls dearest to him to undergo the severest temptations, that they may turn them into a source of greater merit on earth, and of greater glory in heaven. Stagnant water soon grows putrid; a soul left at ease, without any struggle or temptation, stands in great danger of perishing from some self-conceit of her own merit; she perhaps imagines herself to have already attained to perfection, and therefore has little fear; and consequently takes little pains to recommend herself to God and to secure her salvation; but when, on the contrary, she is agitated by temptations, and sees herself in danger of rushing headlong into sin, then she has recourse to God; she goes to the divine Mother; she renews her resolution rather to die than to sin; she humbles herself,

<sup>1</sup> "Quoties restiteris, toties coronaberis."—*In Quadr.* s. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Fidelis autem Deus est, qui non patietur vos tentari supra id quod potestis, sed faciet etiam cum tentatione proventum."—*I Cor.* x. 13.



and casts herself into the arms of the divine mercy: in this manner, as experience shows us, the soul acquires fresh strength and closer union with God.

This must not, however, lead us to seek after temptations; on the contrary, we must pray to God to deliver us from temptations, and from those more especially by which God foresees we should be overcome; and this is precisely the object of that petition of the Our Father: *Lead us not into temptation*;<sup>1</sup> but when, by God's permission, we are beset with temptations, we must then, without either being alarmed or discouraged by those foul thoughts, rely wholly on Jesus Christ, and beseech him to help us; and he, on his part, will not fail to give us the strength to resist. St. Augustine says: "Throw thyself on him, and fear not; he will not withdraw to let thee fall."<sup>2</sup>

### *Remedies against Temptations.*

Let us come now to the means which we have to employ in order to vanquish temptations. Spiritual masters prescribe a variety of means; but the most necessary, and the safest (of which only I will here speak), is to have immediate recourse to God with all humility and confidence, saying: *Incline unto my aid, O God; O Lord, make haste to help me!*<sup>3</sup> This short prayer will enable us to overcome the assaults of all the devils of hell; for God is infinitely more powerful than all of them. Almighty God knows well that of ourselves we are unable to resist the temptations of the infernal powers; and on this account the most learned Cardinal Gotti remarks, "that whenever we are assailed, and in danger of being

<sup>1</sup> "Et ne nos inducas in tentationem."—*Matt.* vi. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Projice te in eum, noli metuere; non se subtrahet, ut cadas."—*Conf.* B. 8, c. 11.

<sup>3</sup> "Deus, in adjutorium meum intende; Domine, ad adjuvandum me festina."—*Ps.* lxi. 2.



overcome, God is obliged to give us strength enough to resist as often as we call upon him for it."<sup>1</sup>

And how can we doubt of receiving help from Jesus Christ, after all the promises that he has made us in the Holy Scriptures? *Come to Me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will refresh you.*<sup>2</sup> Come to me, ye who are wearied in fighting against temptations, and I will restore your strength. *Call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt honor Me.*<sup>3</sup> When thou seest thyself troubled by thine enemies, call upon me, and I will bring thee out of the danger, and thou shalt praise me. *Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall hear: thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am.*<sup>4</sup> Then shalt thou call upon the Lord for help, and he will hear thee: thou shalt cry out, Quick, O Lord, help me! and he will say to thee, Behold, here I am; I am present to help thee. *Who hath called upon Him, and He despised him?*<sup>5</sup> And who, says the prophet, has ever called upon God, and God has despised him without giving him help? David felt sure of never falling a prey to his enemies, whilst he could have recourse to prayer; he says: *Praising, I will call upon the Lord: and I shall be saved from my enemies.*<sup>6</sup> For he well knew that God is close to all who invoke his aid: *The Lord is nigh unto all them that call upon Him.*<sup>7</sup> And St.

<sup>1</sup> "Respondeo, . . . cum tentamur, nobis ad Deum confugientibus, per gratiam a Deo paratam et oblatam, vires adfuturas, qua possimus resistere et actu resistamus."—*De Div. Grat.* q. 2, d. 5, § 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Venite ad me omnes, qui laboratis et onerati estis, et ego reficiam vos."—*Matt.* xi. 28.

<sup>3</sup> "Et invoca me in die tribulationis; eruam te, et honorificabis me."—*Ps.* xlix. 15.

<sup>4</sup> "Tunc invocabis, et Dominus exaudiet; clamabis, et dicet: Ecce adsum."—*Is.* lviii. 9.

<sup>5</sup> "Quis invocavit eum, et despexit illum?"—*Ecclus.* ii. 12.

<sup>6</sup> "Laudans invocabo Dominum, et ab inimicis meis salvus ero."—*Ps.* xvii. 4.

<sup>7</sup> "Prope est Dominus omnibus invocantibus eum."—*Ps.* cxliv. 18.

Paul adds, that the Lord is by no means sparing, but lavish of graces towards all that pray to him: *Rich unto all that call upon Him.*<sup>1</sup>

Oh, would to God that all men would have recourse to him whenever they are tempted to offend him; they would then certainly never commit sin! They unhappily fall, because, led away by the cravings of their vicious appetites, they prefer to lose God, the sovereign good, than to forego their wretched short-lived pleasures. Experience gives us manifest proofs that whoever calls on God in temptation does not fall; and whoever fails to call on him as surely falls: and this is especially true of temptations to impurity. Solomon himself said that he knew very well he could not be chaste, unless God gave him the grace to be so; and he therefore invoked him by prayer in the moment of temptation: *And as I knew that I could not otherwise be continent, except God gave it, . . . I went to the Lord and besought Him.*<sup>2</sup> In temptations against purity (and the same holds good with regard to those against faith), we must take it as a rule never to strive to combat the temptation hand to hand; but we must endeavor immediately to get rid of it indirectly by making a good act of the love of God or of sorrow for our sins, or else by applying ourselves to some indifferent occupation calculated to distract us. At the very instant that we discover a thought of evil tendency, we must disown it immediately, and (so to speak) close the door in its face, and deny it all entrance into the mind, without tarrying in the least to examine its object or errand. We must cast away these foul suggestions as quickly as we would shake off a hot spark from the fire.

If the impure temptation has already forced its way

<sup>1</sup> "Dives in omnibus qui invocant illum."—*Rom.* x. 12.

<sup>2</sup> "Et ut scivi quoniam aliter non possem esse continens, nisi Deus det, . . . adii Dominum, et deprecatus sum illum."—*Wisd.* viii. 21.

into the mind, and plainly pictures its object to the imagination, so as to stir the passions, then, according to the advice of St. Jerome, we must burst forth into these words: "O Lord, Thou art my helper."<sup>1</sup> As soon, says the saint, as we feel the sting of concupiscence, we must have recourse to God, and say: "O Lord, do Thou assist me;" we must invoke the most holy names of Jesus and Mary, which possess a wonderful efficacy in the suppression of temptations of this nature. St. Francis de Sales says, that no sooner do children espy a wolf than they instantly seek refuge in the arms of their father and mother; and there they remain out of all danger. Our conduct must be the same: we must flee without delay for succor to Jesus and Mary, by earnestly calling upon them. I repeat that we must instantly have recourse to them, without giving a moment's audience to the temptation, or disputing with it. It is related in the fourth paragraph of the *Book of Sentences of the Fathers*,<sup>2</sup> that one day St. Pacomius heard the devil boasting that he had frequently got the better of a certain monk on account of his lending ear to him, and not turning instantly to call upon God. He heard another devil, on the contrary, utter this complaint: As for me, I can do nothing with my monk, because he never fails to have recourse to God, and always defeats me.

Should the temptation, however, obstinately persist in attacking us, let us beware of becoming troubled or angry at it; for this might put it in the power of our enemy to overcome us. We must, on such occasions, make an act of humble resignation to the will of God, who thinks fit to allow us to be tormented by these abominable temptations; and we must say: O Lord, I deserve to be molested with these filthy suggestions, in

<sup>1</sup> "Statim ut libido titillaverit sensum, erumpamus in vocem: Dominus auxiliator meus!"—*Epist. ad Eust.*

<sup>2</sup> *Vitæ Patr.* l. 3, n. 35.

punishment of my past sins; but Thou must help to free me. And as long as the temptation lasts, let us never cease calling on Jesus and Mary. It is also very profitable, in the like importunity of temptations, to renew our firm purpose to God of suffering every torment, and a thousand deaths, rather than offend him; and at the same time we must invoke his divine assistance. And even should the temptation be of such violence as to put us in imminent risk of consenting to it, we must then redouble our prayers, hasten into the presence of the Blessed Sacrament, cast ourselves at the feet of the crucifix, or of some image of our Blessed Lady, and there pray with increased fervor, and cry out for help with groans and tears. God is certainly ready to hear all who pray to him; and it is from him alone, and not from our own exertions, that we must look for strength to resist; but sometimes Almighty God wills these struggles of us, and then he makes up for our weakness, and grants us the victory. It is an excellent practice also, in the moment of temptation, to make the sign of the cross on the forehead and breast. It is also of great service to discover the temptation to our spiritual director. St. Philip Neri used to say, that a temptation disclosed is half overcome.

Here it will be well to remark, what is unanimously admitted by all theologians, even of the rigorist school, that persons who have during a considerable period of time been leading a virtuous life, and live habitually in the fear of God, whenever they are in doubt, and are not certain whether they have given consent to a grievous sin, ought to be perfectly assured that they have not lost the divine grace; for it is morally impossible that the will, confirmed in its good purposes for a considerable lapse of time, should on a sudden undergo so total a change as at once to consent to a mortal sin without clearly knowing it; the reason of it is, that mortal sin is so horrible a monster that it cannot possible enter a soul

by which it has long been held in abhorrence, without her being fully aware of it. We have proved this at length in our Moral Theology.<sup>1</sup> St. Teresa said: No one is lost without knowing it; and no one is deceived without the will to be deceived.<sup>2</sup>

Wherefore, with regard to certain souls of delicate conscience, and solidly rooted in virtue, but at the same time timid and molested with temptations (especially if they be against faith or chastity), the director will find it sometimes expedient to forbid them to discover them or make any mention of them; because, if they have to mention them they are led to consider how such thoughts got entrance into their minds, and whether they paused to dispute with them, or took any complacency in them, or gave any consent to them; and so, by this too great reflection, those evil imaginations make a still deeper impression on their minds, and disturb them the more. Whenever the confessor is morally certain that the penitent has not consented to these suggestions, the best way is to forbid him to speak any more about them. And I find that St. Jane Frances de Chantal acted precisely in this manner. She relates of herself, that she was for several years assailed by the most violent storms of temptation, but had never spoken of them in confession, since she was not conscious of having ever yielded to them; and in this she had only followed faithfully the rule received from her director. She says, "I never had a full conviction of having consented."<sup>3</sup> These words give us to understand that the temptations did produce in her some agitation from scruples; but in spite of these, she resumed her tranquillity on the strength of the obedience imposed by her confessor, not to confess similar doubts. With this exception, it will be generally found an ad-

<sup>1</sup> *Lib.* 6, n. 476.

<sup>2</sup> *Life*, *addit.*

<sup>3</sup> *Mém. de la M. de Chaugy*, p. 3, ch. 27.



mirable means of quelling the violence of temptations to lay them open to our director, as we have said above.

But I repeat, the most efficacious and the most necessary of all remedies against temptations, is that remedy of all remedies, namely, to pray to God for help, and to continue praying as long as the temptation continues. Almighty God will frequently have decreed success, not to the first prayer, but to the second, third, or fourth. In short, we must be thoroughly persuaded that all our welfare depends on prayer: our amendment of life depends on prayer; our victory over temptations depends on prayer; on prayer depends our obtaining divine love, together with perfection, perseverance, and eternal salvation.

There may be some who, after the perusal of my spiritual works, will accuse me of tediousness in so often recommending the importance and necessity of having continual recourse to God by prayer. But I seem to myself to have said not too much, but far too little. I know that day and night we are all assailed with temptations from the infernal powers, and that Satan lets slip no occasion of causing us to fall. I know that, without the divine help, we have not strength to repel the assaults of the devils; and that therefore the Apostle exhorts us to put on the armor of God: *Put you on the armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the deceits of the devil. For our wrestling is not against flesh and blood; but against principalities and powers, against the rulers of the world of this darkness.*<sup>1</sup> And what is this armor with which St. Paul warns us to clothe ourselves in order to conquer our enemies? Behold of what it consists: *By all prayer and supplication, praying at all times in the spirit, and in the same*

<sup>1</sup> "Induite vos armaturam Dei, ut possitis stare adversus insidias diaboli; quoniam non est nobis colluctatio adversus carnem et sanguinem, sed adversus principes et potestates, adversus mundi rectores tenebrarum harum."—*Eph.* vi. 11, 12.



*watching with all instance.*<sup>1</sup> This armor is constant and fervent prayer to God, that he may help us to gain the victory. I know, moreover, that in every page of the Holy Scriptures, both in the Old and the New Testament, we are repeatedly admonished to pray: *Call upon Me, and I will deliver thee.*<sup>2</sup> *Cry to Me, and I will hear thee.*<sup>3</sup> *We ought always to pray, and not to faint.*<sup>4</sup> *Ask, and you shall receive.*<sup>5</sup> *Watch and pray.*<sup>6</sup> *Pray without ceasing.*<sup>7</sup> So that I think, far from having spoken too much on prayer, I have not said enough.

I would urge it on all preachers, to recommend nothing so much to their audience as prayer; on confessors, to insist on nothing so earnestly with their penitents as prayer; on spiritual writers, to treat on no subject more copiously than on prayer. But it is a source of grief to my heart, and it seems to me a chastisement of our sins, that so many preachers, confessors, and authors speak so little of prayer. There is no doubt that sermons, meditations, Communions, and mortifications are great helps in the spiritual life; but if we fail to call upon God by prayer in the moment of temptation, we shall fall, in spite of all the sermons, meditations, Communions, penances, and virtuous resolutions. If, then, we really wish to be saved, let us always pray, and commend ourselves to Jesus Christ, and most of all when we are tempted; and let us not only pray for the grace of holy perseverance, but at the same time for the grace to pray always. Let us, likewise, take care to recommend ourselves to the divine Mother, who, as St. Bernard says, is the dispenser

<sup>1</sup> "Per omnem orationem et obsecrationem orantes omni tempore in spiritu, et in ipso vigilantes in omni instantia."—*Eph.* vi. 18.

<sup>2</sup> "Invoca me . . . eruam te."—*Ps.* xlix. 15.

<sup>3</sup> "Clama ad me, et exaudiam te."—*Jer.* xxxiii. 3.

<sup>4</sup> "Oportet semper orare et non deficere."—*Luke*, xviii. 1.

<sup>5</sup> "Petite, et dabitur vobis."—*Matt.* vii. 7.

<sup>6</sup> "Vigilate et orate."—*Matt.* xxvi. 41.

<sup>7</sup> "Sine intermissione orate."—*I Thess.* v. 17.

of graces: "Let us seek for graces, and let us seek them through Mary."<sup>1</sup> For the same saint assures us that it is the will of God, that not a single grace should be dealt to us except through the hands of Mary: "God has willed us to receive nothing that has not passed through the hands of Mary."<sup>2</sup>

*Affections and Prayers.*

O Jesus, My Redeemer, I trust in Thy blood, that Thou hast forgiven me all my offences against Thee; and I fondly hope to come one day to bless Thee for it eternally in heaven: *The mercies of the Lord I will sing forever.*<sup>3</sup> I plainly see now that I have over and over again fallen in times past, from the want of entreating Thee for holy perseverance. I earnestly beg Thee at this present moment to grant me perseverance: "Never suffer me to be separated from Thee."<sup>4</sup> And I purpose to make this prayer to Thee always; but especially when I am tempted to offend Thee. I indeed make this resolution and promise; but what will it profit me thus to resolve and promise, if Thou dost not give me the grace to run and cast myself at Thy feet? By the merits, then, of Thy sacred Passion, oh, grant me this grace, in all my necessities to have recourse to Thee.

O Mary, my Queen, and my Mother, I beseech thee, by thy tender love for Jesus Christ, to procure me the grace of always fleeing for succor, as long as I live, to thy blessed Son and to thee.

II.

**Desolations.**

St. Francis de Sales says: "It is a mistake to estimate devotions by the consolations which we feel. True devotion in the way of God consists in having a determined will to execute all that is pleasing to God."<sup>5</sup> Al-

<sup>1</sup> "Quæramus gratiam, et per Mariam quæramus."

<sup>2</sup> "Nihil nos Deus voluit habere, quod per Mariæ manus non transiret."—*In Vig. Nat.* s. 3.

<sup>3</sup> "Misericordias Domini in æternum cantabo."—*Ps.* lxxxviii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> "Ne permittas me separari a te."

<sup>5</sup> *Introd.* ch. 13.

mighty God is wont to make use of aridities in order to draw closer to him his most cherished souls. Attachment to our own inordinate inclinations is the greatest obstacle to true union with God; and when, therefore, God intends to draw a soul to his perfect love, he endeavors to detach her from all affection to created goods. Thus his first care is to deprive her of temporal goods, of worldly pleasures, of property, honors, friends, relatives, and bodily health; by the like means of losses, troubles, neglects, bereavements, and infirmities, he extirpates by degrees all earthly attachment, in order that the affections may be set on him alone.

With a view to produce a fondness for spiritual things, God regales the soul at first with great consolations, with an abundance of tears and tenderness; she is thus easily weaned from the gratifications of sense, and seeks further to mortify herself with works of penance, fasts, hair-cloths, and disciplines; at this stage the director must keep a check on her, and not allow her to practise mortifications—at least not all those for which she asks permission—because, under the spur of this sensible devotion, a soul might easily ruin her health by indiscretion. It is a subtle artifice of the devil, when he beholds a person giving himself up to God, and receiving the consolations and caresses which God generally gives to beginners, to do his utmost to plunge him into the performance of immoderate penances, so as utterly to destroy his health; so that afterwards, by reason of bodily weakness, he not only gives up the mortifications, but prayer, Communion, and all exercises of devotion, and eventually sinks back into his old way of living. On this account, the director should be very sparing in allowing mortifications to those who are only just entering upon the spiritual life, and who desire to practise bodily mortifications; let him exhort them to practise rather interior mortification, by bearing patiently with affronts and

contradictions, by obedience to Superiors, by bridling the curiosity to see, to hear, and the like; and let him tell them, that when they have acquired the good habit of practising these interior mortifications, they will then be sufficiently perfect to proceed to the external ones. For the rest, it is a serious error to say, as some say, that external mortifications are of little or no use. Without doubt, interior mortification is most requisite for perfection; but it does not follow from this that external mortifications are unnecessary. St. Vincent of Paul declared that the person who does not practise external mortifications will be neither mortified interiorly nor exteriorly. And St. John of the Cross declared that the director who despised external mortifications was unworthy of confidence, even though he should work miracles.

But to come back to our point. The soul then, in the commencement of her conversion to God, tastes the sweetness of those sensible consolations with which God seeks to allure her, and by them to wean her from earthly pleasures; she breaks off her attachment to creatures, and becomes attached to God. Still, her attachment is imperfect, inasmuch as it is fostered more by that sensibility of spiritual consolations than by the real wish to do what is pleasing to God; and she deceives herself by believing that the greater the pleasure she feels in her devotions, the more she loves Almighty God. The consequence of this is, that if this food of spiritual consolations is stopped, by her being taken from her ordinary exercises of devotion, and employed in other works of obedience, charity, or duties of her state, she is disturbed, and takes it greatly to heart: and this is a universal defect in our miserable human nature, to seek our own satisfaction in all that we do. Or again, when she no longer finds this sweet relish of devotion in her exercises, she either forsakes them, or lessens them; and continuing to lessen them from day to day,

she at length omits them entirely. And this misfortune befalls many souls who, when called by Almighty God to love him, enter upon the way of perfection, and as long as spiritual sweetness lasts, make a certain progress; but alas! when this is no longer tasted, they leave off all, and resume their former ways. But it is of the highest importance to be fully persuaded that the love of God and perfection do not consist in feelings of tenderness and consolation, but in overcoming self-love, and in following the divine will. St. Francis de Sales says: "God is as worthy of our love when he afflicts us as when he consoles us."

Amid these consolations, it requires no remarkable degree of virtue to forego sensual delights, and to endure affronts and contradictions. The soul in the midst of these sweetnesses can endure all things; but this endurance comes far more frequently from those sensible consolations than from the strength of true love of God. On this account the Lord, with a view to give her a solid foundation in virtue, retires from her, and deprives her of that sensible devotion, that he may rid her of all attachment to self-love, which was fed by such consolations. And hence it happens, that whereas formerly she felt a joy in making acts of offering, of confidence, and of love, now that the vein of consolations is dried up, she makes these acts with coldness and painful effort; and finds a weariness in the most pious exercises, in her prayers, spiritual readings, and Communions; she even finds in them nothing but darkness and fears, and all seems lost to her. She prays and prays again, and is overwhelmed with sadness, because God seems to have abandoned her.

Let us come now to the practice of what we are to do on our part in the like circumstances. When Almighty God in his mercy deigns to console us with his loving visitations, and to let us feel the presence of his grace,



it is not good to reject the divine consolations, as some false mystics advise: let us thankfully receive them; but let us beware of settling down on them, and seeking delight in those feelings of spiritual tenderness. St. John of the Cross calls this a "spiritual gluttony," which is faulty and displeasing to God. Let us strive in such moments to banish from our mind the sensible enjoyment of these sweetnesses: and let us be especially on our guard against supposing that these favors are a token of our standing better with God than others; for such a thought of vanity would oblige God to withdraw himself from us altogether, and to leave us in our miseries. We must certainly at such times return most fervent thanks to God, because such spiritual consolations are signal gifts of the divine bounty to our souls, far greater than all the riches and honors of this world; but let us not seek then to regale ourselves on these sensible sweetnesses, but let us rather humble ourselves by the remembrance of the sins of our past life. For the rest, we must consider this loving treatment as the pure result of the goodness of God; and that perhaps it is sent as the forerunner of some great tribulation soon to befall us, in order that we may be strengthened by these consolations to endure all with patience and resignation. We should therefore take the occasion of offering ourselves to suffer every pain, internal or external, that may happen to us,—every illness, every persecution, every spiritual desolation, saying: O my Lord, I am here before Thee; do with me, and with all that belongs to me, whatever Thou wilt; grant me the grace to love Thee and perfectly to accomplish Thy holy will, and I ask no more!

When a soul is morally certain of being in the grace of God, although she may be deprived of worldly pleasures, as well as of those which come from God, she nevertheless rests satisfied with her state, conscious, as



she is, of loving God, and of being loved by him. But God, who wishes to see her purified and divested of all sensible satisfaction, in order to unite her entirely to himself by means of pure love, what does he do? He puts her in the crucible of desolation, which is more painful to bear than the most severe trials, whether internal or external; she is left in a state of uncertainty if she be in the grace of God or not, and in the dense darkness that shrouds her, there seems no prospect of her evermore finding God. Almighty God, moreover, will sometimes permit her to be assailed by violent sensual temptations, accompanied by irregular movements of the inferior part, or perhaps by thoughts of unbelief, of despair, and even of hatred of God, when she imagines herself cast off by him, and that he no longer hears her prayers. And as, on the one hand, the suggestions of the devil are vehement, and the motions of concupiscence are excited, and, on the other, the soul finds herself in this great darkness, she can no longer sufficiently distinguish whether she properly resists or yields to the temptations, though her will resolutely refuses all consent. Her fears of having lost God are thus very much increased; and from her fancied infidelity in struggling against the temptations, she thinks herself deservedly abandoned by God. The saddest of all calamities seems to have befallen her,—to be able no longer to love God, and to be hated by him. St. Teresa passed through all these trials, and declares that during them solitude had no charms for her, but, on the contrary, filled her with horror; while prayer was changed for her into a perfect hell.

When a soul that loves God finds herself in this state, she must not lose courage; and neither must he who directs her become alarmed. Those sensual movements, those temptations against faith, those feelings of distrust, and those attacks which urge her to hate Almighty

God, are fears, are tortures of the soul, are efforts of the enemy; but they are not voluntary, and therefore they are not sins. The sincere lover of Jesus Christ resists valiantly on such occasions, and withholds all consent to such suggestions; but because of the darkness which envelops her, she knows not how to distinguish, her soul is thrown into confusion, and the privation of the presence of divine grace makes her fearful and sad. But it can be soon discovered that in these souls, thus tried by God, all is dread and apprehension, but not truth: only ask them, even in their state of desolation, whether they would willingly commit one single deliberate venial sin; they will answer, that they are ready to suffer not one, but a thousand deaths, rather than be guilty of such displeasure to Almighty God.

It is necessary, therefore, to make this distinction, that it is one thing to perform an act of virtue, such as to repel a temptation, to trust in God, to love God, and to will what he wills; and it is another thing to have the consciousness of really making these good acts. This consciousness of doing good contributes to our pleasure; but the profit consists in the first point, that is, in actually doing good. With the first God is satisfied, and deprives the soul of the latter—that is, of the consciousness of doing good, in order thus to remove from her all self-satisfaction, which adds nothing to the merit of the action; for our Lord seeks more our real advantage than our own satisfaction. St. John of the Cross wrote the following words of comfort to a desolate soul: “You were never in a better state than at present; for you were never so deeply humbled, and so cut off from all attachment to this world, and at the same time you were never so thoroughly impressed with the conviction of your own wickedness. Neither were you ever so divested and purified of all self-seeking as now.”<sup>1</sup> Let us,

<sup>1</sup> *Lettre 8.*

then, not believe that when we feel a greater tenderness of devotion we are more beloved by God; for perfection does not consist in that, but in the mortification of our own will, and in its union with the will of God.

Wherefore, in this state of desolation the soul must not heed the devil, when he suggests that God has abandoned her; nor must she leave off prayer. This is the object at which the devil is aiming, in order afterwards to drag her down some precipice. St. Teresa writes: "The Lord proves his true lovers by dryness and temptations. What though the dryness should be of life-long duration, let the soul never relax in prayer; the time will arrive when all will be abundantly repaid."<sup>1</sup> In such a state of suffering, a person should humble himself by the reflection that his offences against God are undeserving of any milder treatment: he should humble himself, and be fully resigned to the divine will, saying: O my Lord, behold me at Thy feet; if it be Thy will that I should remain thus desolate and afflicted for my whole life, and even for all eternity, only grant me Thy grace and the gift of Thy love, and do with me whatever Thou wilt.

It will be useless then, and perhaps a source of greater disquiet, to wish to assure yourself that you are in the grace of God, and that what you experience is only a trial, and not abandonment on the part of God. At such times it is not the will of God that you should have this assurance; and he so wills it for your greater advantage, in order that you may humble yourself the more, and increase your prayers and acts of confidence in his mercy. You desire to see, and God wills that you should not see. For the rest, St. Francis de Sales says: "The resolution not to consent to any sin, however small, is a sure sign that we are in God's grace."<sup>2</sup> But

<sup>1</sup> *Life*, ch. II.

<sup>2</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 4.

a soul in profound desolation cannot even clearly discern this resolution; nevertheless, in such a state she must not aim at feeling what she wills; it is enough to will with the point of the will. In this manner she should entirely abandon herself into the arms of the divine goodness. Oh, how do such acts of confidence and resignation ravish the heart of God, when made in the midst of the darkness of desolation! Ah, let us simply trust in a God, who (as St. Teresa says) loves us far better than we love ourselves.

Let these souls, then, so dear to God, and who are resolutely determined to belong entirely to him, take comfort, although at the same time they see themselves deprived of every consolation. Their desolation is a sign of their being very acceptable to God, and that he has for them a place prepared in his heavenly kingdom, which overflows with consolations as full as they are lasting. And let them hold for certain, that the more they are afflicted in the present life, so much the more they shall be consoled in eternity: *According to the multitude of my sorrows in my heart, Thy comforts have given joy to my soul.*<sup>1</sup>

### *Example.*

For the encouragement of souls in desolation, I will here mention what is related in the life of St. Jane Frances de Chantal.

For the space of forty years she was tormented by the most fearful interior trials, by temptations, by fears of being in enmity with God, and of being even quite forsaken by him. Her afflictions were so excruciating and unremitting, that she declared her sole ray of comfort came from the thought of death. Moreover she said: "I am so furiously assaulted, that I know not where to

<sup>1</sup> "Secundum multitudinem dolorum meorum in corde meo, consolationes tuæ lætificaverunt animam meam."—*Ps.* xciii. 19.

hide my poor soul. I seem at times on the point of losing all patience, and of giving up all as utterly lost." "The tyrant of temptation is so relentless," she says, "that any hour of the day I would gladly barter it with the loss of my life; and sometimes it happens that I can neither eat nor sleep."<sup>1</sup>

During the last eight or nine years of her life, her temptations became still more violent. Mother de Chatel said that her saintly Mother de Chantal suffered a continual interior martyrdom night and day, at prayer, at work, and even during sleep; so that she felt the deepest compassion for her. The saint endured assaults against every virtue (except chastity), and had likewise to contend with doubts, darkness, and disgusts. Sometimes God would withdraw all lights from her, and seem indignant with her, and just on the point of expelling her from him; so that terror drove her to look in some other direction for relief: but failing to find any, she was obliged to return to look on God, and to abandon herself to his mercy. She seemed each moment ready to yield to the violence of her temptations. The divine assistance did not indeed forsake her; but it seemed to her to have done so, since, instead of finding satisfaction in anything, she found only weariness and anguish in prayer, in reading spiritual books, in Communion, and in all other exercises of piety. Her sole resource in this state of dereliction was to look upon God, and to let him do his will.

The saint said: "In all my abandonments my mere life is a new cross to me, and my incapability of action adds considerably to its heaviness." And it was therefore that she compared herself to a sick person overwhelmed with sufferings, unable to turn from one side to the other, speechless, so as not to be able to express his

<sup>1</sup> *Mém. de la M. de Chaugy*, p. 3, ch. 27.



ills, and blind, so as not to discern whether the attendants are administering to him medicine or poison. And then, weeping bitterly, she added, "I seem to be without faith, without hope, and without love for my God." Nevertheless, the saint maintained throughout her serenity of countenance and affability in conversation, and kept her looks fixedly bent towards God, in the bosom of whose blessed will she constantly reposed. Wherefore St. Francis de Sales, who was her director, and knew well what an object of predilection her beautiful soul was to Almighty God, wrote thus of her: "Her heart resembled a deaf musician, who, though he may sing most exquisitely, can derive no pleasure from it himself." And to herself he wrote as follows: "You must endeavor to serve your Saviour solely through love of his blessed will, utterly deprived of consolations, and overwhelmed by a deluge of fears and sadness."<sup>1</sup> It is thus that the saints are formed:

" Long did the chisels ring around,  
 Long did the mallet's blows rebound,  
 Long work'd the head and toil'd the hand,  
 Ere stood thy stones as now they stand." <sup>2</sup>

The saints of whom the Church sings are precisely these choice stones, which are reduced to shapeliness and beauty by the strokes of the chisel,—that is, by temptations, by fears, by darkness, and other torments, internal and external,—till at length they are made worthy to be enthroned in the blessed kingdom of Paradise.

<sup>1</sup> *Love of God*, B. 9, ch. 11.

<sup>2</sup> " Scalpri salubris ictibus  
 Et tunsione plurima,  
 Fabri polita malleo,  
 Hanc saxa molem construunt,  
 Aptisque juncta nexibus  
 Locantur in fastigio."—*Offic. Dedic. eccl.*



*Affections and Prayers.*

O Jesus, my hope, my love and only love of my soul, I deserve not Thy consolations and sweet visitations; keep them for those innocent souls that have always loved Thee; sinner that I am, I do not deserve them, nor do I ask for them: this only do I ask, give me grace to love Thee, to accomplish Thy adorable will during my whole life; and then dispose of me as Thou pleasest! Unhappy me! far other darkness, other terrors, other abandonments would be due to the outrages which I have done Thee: hell were my just award, where, separated from Thee forever, and totally abandoned by Thee, I should shed tears eternally, without ever being able to love Thee more. But no, my Jesus, I accept of every punishment; only spare me this. Thou art deserving of an infinite love; Thou hast placed me under an excessive obligation of loving Thee; oh, no, I cannot trust myself to live and not love Thee! I do love Thee, my sovereign good; I love Thee with my whole heart; I love Thee more than myself; I love Thee, and have no other desire than to love Thee. I own that this my good-will is the pure effect of Thy grace; but do Thou, O my Lord, perfect Thy own work; withdraw not Thy helping hand till death! Oh, never for a moment leave me in my own hands; give me strength to vanquish temptations and to overcome myself; and for this end give me grace always to have recourse to Thee! I wish to belong wholly to Thee; I give Thee my body, my soul, my will, and my liberty; I will no longer live for myself, but for Thee alone, my Creator, my Redeemer, my love, and my all: my God and my all.<sup>1</sup> I desire to become a saint, and I hope this of Thee. Afflict me as Thou wilt, deprive me of all; only deprive me not of Thy grace and of Thy love.

O Mary, the hope of sinners, great is thy power with God; I confide fully in thy intercession: I entreat thee by thy love of Jesus Christ, help me, and make me a saint!

<sup>1</sup> "Deus meus et omnia."

## Abstract of the Virtues treated of in this Work, to be Practised by Him who Loves Jesus Christ.

### I.

We must patiently endure the tribulations of this life—ill-health, sorrows, poverty, losses, bereavement of kindred, affronts, persecutions, and all that is disagreeable. Let us invariably look on the trials of this world as signs of God's love towards us, and of his desire to save us in the world to come. And let us, moreover, be fully persuaded that the involuntary mortifications which God himself sends us are far more pleasing to him than those which are the fruit of our own choice.

In sickness let us endeavor to resign ourselves entirely to the will of God; no devout exercise is more acceptable to him than this. If at such times we are unable to meditate, let us fix our eyes on our crucified Lord, and offer him our sufferings in union with all that he endured for us upon the cross. And when we are told that we are about to die, let us accept the tidings with tranquility and in the spirit of sacrifice; that is, with the desire to die, in order to give pleasure to Jesus Christ: it was the like desire that gave all the merit to the death of the martyrs. We should then say: O Lord, behold me here with no other will but Thine own blessed will; I am willing to suffer as much as Thou pleasest; I wish to die whenever Thou wilt. Nor should we then wish to have our life prolonged, in order to do penance for our sins; to accept death with perfect resignation outweighs all other penance.

We must likewise practise conformity to the will of God in bearing poverty and the various inconveniences

which accompany it: cold, hunger, fatigue, contempt, and scorn.

Nor should we be less resigned to losses, whether of property or of relatives and friends, on whom our ease and happiness depended. Let us acquire the good habit of saying in every adversity: God hath so willed it, and so I will it likewise. And at the death of our relatives, instead of wasting time in fruitless tears, let us employ it in praying for their souls; and offer to Jesus Christ, in their behalf, the pain of our bereavement.

Let us, moreover, force ourselves to endure scorn and insult with patience and tranquillity. Let us answer terms of outrage and injury with words of gentleness; but as long as we feel ourselves disturbed, the best plan is to keep silence, till the mind grows tranquil. Meanwhile let us not be fretfully speaking to others of the affront we have received, but in silence offer it to Jesus Christ, who endured so much for us.

## II.

Behave kindly to all, to Superiors and inferiors, to the high-born and peasant, to relatives and strangers; but more especially to the poor and infirm, and, above all, to those who regard us with an evil eye.

Gentleness in the correction of faults is more efficacious than any other means or reasons that may be employed. Be therefore on your guard against correcting in a fit of passion; for then harshness is sure to be mingled with it, either in word or action. Beware likewise of correcting the person in fault while he is excited; for in like cases the result is exasperation instead of improvement.

## III.

Envy not the great ones of this world their riches, honors, dignities, or applause given them by men; but

envy rather those who most love Jesus Christ, who undoubtedly enjoy greater happiness than the first monarchs of the earth. Return thanks to the Lord for enlightening you to discover the vanity of all wordly things, for the sake of which so many unhappily perish.

## IV.

In all our actions and thoughts let us seek only the pleasure of Almighty God, and not our private satisfaction; and let us therefore lay aside all disquietude when our efforts are attended with failure. And when we succeed, let us be no less cautious against seeking the thanks and approbation of men; should they murmur against us, let us pay no attention to this; our consolation will be to have striven to please God, and not men.

## V.

The chief means of perfection are:

1. To avoid all deliberate sin, however small. Should we, however, happen unfortunately to commit a fault, let us refrain from becoming angry and impatient with ourselves: we must, on such occasions, quietly repent of it; and while we make an act of love to Jesus Christ, and beg his help, we must promise him not to repeat the fault.

2. To have an earnest desire to acquire the perfection of the saints, and to suffer all things to please Jesus Christ; and if we have not this desire, to beseech Jesus Christ, through his bounty, to grant it us; since, as long as we do not feel a sincere desire of becoming saints, we shall never make one step forward in the way of perfection.

3. To have a firm resolution of arriving at perfection: whoever is wanting in this resolution, works but languidly, and in the occasion does not overcome his re-

pugnances; whereas a resolute soul, by the divine aid, which never fails her, surmounts every obstacle.

4. To make make daily two hours' or at least one hour's mental prayer; and, except in case of urgent necessity, never to relinquish it for the sake of any weariness, dryness, or trouble that we may experience.

5. To frequent Holy Communion several times a week, in obedience to the counsel of our director; for frequent Communion should not be practised against the consent of our director. The same rule holds good with regard to external mortifications, such as fasting, wearing the cilice, taking the discipline, and the rest; mortifications of this kind, when practised without obedience to our spiritual director, will either destroy health or produce vainglory. So that it is necessary for each one to have his own director, so that all may be regulated in obedience to him.

6. To pray continually, by having recourse to Jesus Christ in all our necessities, by invoking likewise the intercession of our Angel Guardian, of our Holy Patrons, and most particularly of the divine Mother, through whose hands Almighty God bestows all graces upon us. It has already been shown, at the end of Chapter IV., that our welfare entirely depends on prayer. We must especially not pass a day without begging God to grant us the gift of perseverance in his grace; whosoever asks for this perseverance obtains it, but he that does not ask for it obtains it not, and is damned: we must pray, too, that Jesus Christ may grant us his holy love and perfect conformity with his divine will. Neither should we forget to pray for every grace through the merits of Jesus Christ. We must first make these prayers when we rise in the morning, and afterwards repeat them in our meditation, at Holy Communion, at the visit to the Blessed Sacrament, and again in the evening at the examination of conscience. We must particularly cry to God for help

in the time of temptation, and more especially in temptations against purity, when we should not cease to call for succor on the holy names of Jesus and Mary. He that prays, conquers; he that prays not, is conquered.

## VI.

With respect to humility, not to pride ourselves on riches, honors, high birth, talents, or any other natural advantage, and still less on any spiritual gift, reflecting that all are the gifts of God. To consider ourselves the worst of all, and consequently to delight in being despised by others; and not to act as some do, who declare themselves the worst of men, and at the same time wish to be treated as the best. Moreover, to receive corrections humbly, and without attempts to excuse ourselves, and this even though blamed wrongfully; except when to defend ourselves would be necessary in order to prevent others being scandalized.

Much more ought we to banish all desire of appearing in public, and of being honored by the world. The maxim of St. Francis should never be out of our sight: "We are just what we are before God." It would be still worse for a religious to covet posts of honor and superiority in his community. The true honor of a religious is to be the most humble of all; and he is the humblest of all who most joyfully embraces humiliations.

## VII.

Detach your heart from all creatures. Whoever continues bound by the slightest fondness to things of earth can never rise to a perfect union with God.

To detach ourselves especially from an undue affection for our relatives. It was said by St. Philip Neri, that "whatever affection we bestow on creatures is so much



taken from God.”<sup>1</sup> In deciding on a state of life, we must be quite unbiased by the advice of parents, who generally keep their own interests in view, rather than our real welfare.

Cast away all considerations of human respect, and of the vain esteem of men; and, above all, be detached from self-will. We must leave all, in order to gain all. “All for all,”<sup>2</sup> writes Thomas à Kempis.

VIII.

Not to give way to anger, whatever happens; but if perchance the sparks of passion are suddenly lighted in our breasts, let us call on God, and refrain from acting or speaking till we are sure that our anger is appeased. We shall find it of great service to arm ourselves in prayer against every chance of irritation that may befall us, in order not then to give way to culpable resentment; we should always remember that saying of St. Francis de Sales: “I never remember to have been angry without afterwards regretting it.”

IX.

All sanctity consists in loving God, and all love of God consists in doing his blessed will. We must, therefore, bow with resignation to all the dispositions of divine Providence without reserve; and so cheerfully submit to the adversity as well as prosperity which God sends, to the state of life in which God places us, to the sort of health which God bestows on us: and this should be the grand aim of all our prayers, namely, that God would enable us to fulfil his holy will in all things. And in order to be certain of the divine will, the religious must depend on obedience to his Superior, and those who are in the world to their confessor; for nothing is more cer-

<sup>1</sup> *Bacci*, l. 2, ch. 15.

<sup>2</sup> “Totum pro toto.”—*Imit. Chr.* l. 3, c. 37.

tain than that saying of St. Philip Neri: "We shall have no account to render to God of what is done through obedience." Which is to be understood, of course, as long as there is no evident sin in the command.

## X.

There are two remedies against temptations: *resignation* and *prayer*. *Resignation*, for though temptations do not come from God, yet he permits them for our good. Wherefore beware of yielding to vexation, however annoying the temptations may be; be resigned to the will of God, who allows them; and take up the arms of prayer, which are the most powerful and the most certain to overcome our enemies. Bad thoughts, however filthy and abominable, are not sins; it is only the consenting to them which makes the sin. We shall never be overcome as long as we call on the holy names of Jesus and Mary. During the assaults of temptation, it is of service to renew our resolution to suffer death rather than to offend God; it is also a good practice repeatedly to sign ourselves with the sign of the cross, and with holy water; it is of great help, too, to discover the temptation to the confessor. But prayer is the most necessary remedy, and continual cries for help to Jesus and Mary.

## XI.

Then as to spiritual desolations, there are two acts in which we ought principally to exercise ourselves: 1st, to humble ourselves, with the sincere avowal that we deserve no better treatment; 2d, to resign ourselves to the will of God, and to abandon ourselves into the arms of his divine goodness. When God favors us with consolations, let us prepare ourselves for coming trials, which generally follow consolations. If it please God to leave us in desolation, let us be humble and fully resigned to

his divine will, and we shall thus reap far greater advantage from desolations than from consolations.

XII.

In order to live always well, we must store up deeply in our minds certain general maxims of eternal life, such as the following:

All passes away in this life, whether it be joy or sorrow; but in eternity nothing passes away.

What good is all the greatness of this world at the hour of death?

All that comes from God, whether it be adverse or prosperous, all is good, and is for our welfare.

We must leave all, to gain all.

There is no peace to be found without God.

To love God and save one's soul is the one thing needful.

We need only be afraid of sin.

If God be lost, all is lost.

He that desires nothing in this world is master of the whole world.

He that prays is saved, and he that prays not is damned.

Let me die, and give God pleasure.

God is cheap at any cost.

Every pain is slight to him who has deserved hell.

He bears all who looks on Jesus crucified.

Everything becomes a pain that is not done for God.

Whoever wishes for God alone is rich in every good.

Happy the man who can say: "My Jesus, I desire Thee alone, and nothing more!"

He that loves God, finds pleasure in everything; he that loves not God, finds no true pleasure in anything.

## Novena to the Holy Spirit;

CONSISTING OF MEDITATIONS FOR EACH DAY OF THE NOVENA, BEGINNING WITH THE FEAST OF THE ASCENSION, TILL THE EVE OF PENTECOST INCLUSIVELY.

The Novena to the Holy Spirit is the chief of all the Novenas, because it was the first that was ever celebrated, and that by the holy Apostles and the most holy Mary in the supper-room, and distinguished by so many remarkable wonders and gifts; principally by the gift of the same Holy Spirit, a gift merited for us by the Passion of Jesus Christ himself. Jesus himself made this known to us, when he said to his disciples, that if he did not die, he could not send us the Holy Ghost: *If I go not, the Paraclete will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him to you.*<sup>1</sup> We know well by faith that the Holy Ghost is the love that the Father and the Eternal Word bear one to the other; and therefore the gift of love, which the Lord infuses into our souls, and which is the greatest of all gifts, is particularly attributed to the Holy Ghost, as St. Paul says: *The charity of God is poured forth in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, who is given to us.*<sup>2</sup> In this Novena, therefore, we must consider, above all, the great value of divine love, in order that we may desire to obtain it, and endeavor, by devout exercises, and specially by prayer, to be made partakers of it, since God has promised it to him who asks for it with humility:

<sup>1</sup> "Si autem non abiero, Paracletus non veniet ad vos; si autem abiero, mittam eum ad vos."—*John*, xvi. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "Charitas Dei diffusa est in cordibus nostris per Spiritum Sanctum, qui datus est nobis."—*Rom.* v. 5.

*Your Father from heaven will give the good Spirit to them that ask Him.*<sup>1</sup>

## MEDITATION I.

**Love is a Fire that inflames the Heart.**

God had ordered, in the ancient law, that there should be a fire kept continually burning on his altar: *The fire on the altar shall always burn.*<sup>2</sup> St. Gregory<sup>3</sup> says, that the altars of God are our hearts, where he desires that the fire of his divine love should always be burning; and therefore the Eternal Father, not satisfied with having given us his Son Jesus Christ, to save us by his death, would also give us the Holy Ghost, that he might dwell in our souls, and keep them constantly on fire with love.

And Jesus himself declared, that he had come into the world on purpose to inflame our hearts with this holy fire, and that he desired nothing more than to see it kindled: *I am come to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I but that it be kindled?*<sup>4</sup> Forgetting, therefore, the injuries and ingratitude he received from men on this earth, when he had ascended into heaven he sent down upon us the Holy Spirit. O most loving Redeemer, Thou dost, then, love us as well in Thy sufferings and ignominies as in Thy kingdom of glory! Hence it was that the Holy Ghost chose to appear in the supper-room under the form of tongues of fire: *And there appeared to them parted tongues, as it were of fire.*<sup>5</sup> And hence the Church teaches us to pray: "May the Holy Ghost, we

<sup>1</sup> "Pater vester de cœlo dabit Spiritum bonum petentibus se."—*Luke*, xi. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Ignis autem in altari semper ardebit."—*Lev.* vi. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Mor.* l. 25, c. 7.

<sup>4</sup> "Ignem veni mittere in terram; et quid volo, nisi ut accendatur?"—*Luke*, xii. 49.

<sup>5</sup> "Et apparuerunt illis dispertitæ linguæ tanquam ignis."—*Acts*, ii. 3.

beseech Thee, O Lord, inflame us with that fire which our Lord Jesus Christ came to cast upon the earth, and which he ardently desired should be enkindled.”<sup>1</sup>

This was the holy fire which has inflamed the saints to do so great things for God, to love their enemies, to desire contempt, to deprive themselves of all earthly goods, and to embrace with delight even torments and death. Love cannot remain idle, and never says, “It is enough.” The soul that loves God, the more she does for her beloved, the more she desires to do, in order to please him, and to attract to herself his affections the more.

This holy fire is enkindled by mental prayer : *In my meditation a fire shall flame out.*<sup>2</sup> If, therefore, we desire to burn with love towards God, let us love prayer ; this is the blessed furnace in which this divine ardor is enkindled.

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O my God, hitherto I have done nothing for Thee, who hast done such great things for me ! Alas ! my coldness deserves that Thou shouldst “vomit me out of Thy mouth.” O Holy Spirit, I beseech Thee, “warm what is cold,”<sup>3</sup> deliver me from this coldness, and enkindle within me an earnest desire of pleasing Thee. I now renounce all my worldly gratifications ; and I will rather die than give Thee the least displeasure. Thou didst appear in the shape of fiery tongues ; I consecrate my tongue to Thee, that it may never offend Thee more. Thou didst give it me, O my God, to praise Thee with ; and I have made use of it to offend Thee, and to draw others also into sinning against Thee. I repent of this with my whole soul. Oh, for the love of Jesus Christ, who, during his life on earth, honored Thee so much with his tongue, grant that I also may from this day forth honor Thee constantly, by celebrating Thy

<sup>1</sup> “Illo nos igne, quæsumus, Domine, Spiritus Sanctus inflammet, quem Dominus noster Jesus Christus misit in terram, et voluit vehementer accendi.”—*In Sabb. Pent.*

<sup>2</sup> “In meditatione mea exardescet ignis.”—*Ps. xxxviii. 4.*

<sup>3</sup> “Fove quod est frigidum.”



praises, by frequently invoking Thy aid, and by speaking of Thy goodness and the infinite love which Thou deservest! I love Thee, my sovereign good, I love Thee, O God of love! O Mary, thou art the most dear spouse of the Holy Ghost, obtain for me this holy fire!

## MEDITATION II.

## Love is a Light that Enlightens the Soul.

One of the greatest evils that the sin of Adam has produced in us, is that darkening of our reason by means of the passions which cloud our mind. Oh, how miserable is that soul that allows itself to be ruled by any passion! Passion, is as it were, a vapor, a veil which prevents us from seeing the truth. How can he fly from evil, who does not know what is evil? Besides, this obscurity increases in proportion as our sins increase. But the Holy Spirit, who is called "most blessed light,"<sup>1</sup> is he who not only inflames our hearts to love him, through his divine splendor, but also dispels our darkness, and shows us the vanity of earthly things, the value of eternal goods, the importance of salvation, the price of grace, the goodness of God, the infinite love which he deserves, and the immense love which he bears us. *The sensual man perceiveth not those things that are of the Spirit of God.*<sup>2</sup> A man who is absorbed in the pleasures of earth knows little of these truths, and therefore, unfortunate that he is, he loves what he ought to hate, and hates what he ought to love. St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi exclaimed: O love not known! O love not loved!" And therefore St. Teresa said that God is not loved because he is not known. Hence the saints were always seeking light from God: *Send forth Thy*

<sup>1</sup> "Lux beatissima."

<sup>2</sup> "Animalis homo non percipit ea quæ sunt Spiritus Dei."—1 Cor. ii. 14.

*light ;*<sup>1</sup> *illuminate my darkness ;*<sup>2</sup> *open Thou my eyes.*<sup>3</sup> Yes : because without light we cannot avoid precipices, nor can we find God.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O holy and divine Spirit, I believe that Thou art really God, but one only God with the Father and the Son. I adore Thee, and acknowledge Thee as the giver of all those lights by which Thou hast made known to me the evil which I have committed in offending Thee, and the obligation which I am under of loving Thee. I thank Thee for them, and I repent with my whole heart of having offended Thee. I have deserved that Thou shouldst abandon me in my darkness; but I see that Thou hast not yet forsaken me. Continue, O eternal Spirit, to enlighten me, and to make me know more and more Thy infinite goodness; and give me strength to love Thee for the future with my whole heart. Add grace to grace; so that I may be sweetly overcome, and constrained to love none other but Thee. I implore this of Thee, through the merits of Jesus Christ. I love Thee, my sovereign good; I love Thee more than myself. I desire to be entirely Thine; do Thou accept me, and suffer me not to be separated from Thee any more. O Mary, my Mother, do thou always assist me by thy intercession!

MEDITATION III.

**Love is a Fountain that Satisfies.**

Love is also called a living fountain: "a living fountain, fire, and charity."<sup>4</sup> Our Blessed Redeemer said to the Samaritan woman: *But he that shall drink of the water that I will give him shall not thirst for ever.*<sup>5</sup> Love is the

<sup>1</sup> "Emitte lucem tuam."—*Ps.* xlii. 3.

<sup>2</sup> "Illumina tenebras meas."—*Ps.* xvii. 29.

<sup>3</sup> "Revela oculos meos."—*Ps.* cxviii. 18.

<sup>4</sup> "Fons vivus, ignis, charitas."

<sup>5</sup> "Qui autem biberit ex hac aqua quam ego dabo ei, non sitiet in æternum."—*John*, iv. 13.

water which satisfies our thirst; he who loves God really with his whole heart neither seeks nor desires anything else; because in God he finds every good. Wherefore, satisfied with God, he often joyfully exclaims, "My God and my all!" My God, Thou art my whole good.

But the Almighty complains that many souls go about seeking for fleeting and miserable pleasures from creatures, and leave him, who is the infinite good and fountain of all joy: *They have forsaken Me, the fountain of living water, and have digged to themselves cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water.*<sup>1</sup> Wherefore God, who loves us, and desires to see us happy, cries out and makes known to all: *If any thirst, let them come to me.*<sup>2</sup> He who desires to be happy, let him come to me; and I will give him the Holy Ghost, who will make him blessed both in this life and the next. *He that believeth in Me* (he goes on to say), *as the Scripture saith, Out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.*<sup>3</sup> He therefore, that believes in Jesus Christ, and loves him, shall be enriched with so much grace, that from his heart (the heart, that is, the will), shall flow many fountains of holy virtues, which shall not only serve to preserve his own life, but also to give life to others. And this water was the Holy Ghost, the substantial love which Jesus Christ promised to send us from heaven after his ascension: *Now this He said of the Spirit, which they should receive who believed in Him, for as yet the Spirit was not given, because Jesus was not yet glorified.*<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Me dereliquerunt fontem aquæ vivæ, et foderunt sibi cisternas, cisternas dissipatas, quæ continere non valent aquas."—*Jer.* ii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Si quis sitit veniat ad me, et bibat."—*John*, vii. 37.

<sup>3</sup> "Qui credit in me, sicut dicit Scriptura, flumina de ventre ejus fluent aquæ vivæ."—*Ibid.* 38.

<sup>4</sup> "Hoc autem dixit de Spiritu quem accepturi erant credentes in eum; nondum enim erat Spiritus datus, quia Jesus nondum erat glorificatus."—*Ibid.* 39.

The key which opens the channels of this blessed water is holy prayer, which obtains every good for us in virtue of the promise, *Ask, and you shall receive.*<sup>1</sup> We are blind, poor, and weak; but prayer obtains for us light, strength, and abundance of grace. Theodoret said: "Prayer, though but one, can do all things."<sup>2</sup> He who prays receives all he wishes. God desires to give us his graces; but he will have us pray for them.

*Affections and Prayers.*

*Lord, give me this water.*<sup>3</sup> O my Jesus, with the Samaritan woman, I beseech Thee, give me this water of Thy love, which may make me forget the earth, to live only for Thee, O amiable, infinite one. "Water that which is dry." My soul is a barren soil, which produces nothing but the weeds and thorns of sin; oh, do Thou water it with Thy grace, so that it may bring forth some fruits to Thy glory, before death takes me out of this world. O fountain of living water, O sovereign good, how many times have I left Thee for the puddles of this earth, which have deprived me of Thy love! Oh, would that I had died before I offended Thee! But for the future I will seek after nothing but Thee, O my God. Do Thou assist me, and enable me to be faithful to Thee. Mary, my hope, do thou keep me always under thy protection!

MEDITATION IV.

Love is a Dew which fertilizes.

Thus does Holy Church teach us to pray: "May the infusion of the Holy Ghost cleanse our hearts, and fertilize them by the interior sprinkling of his dew."<sup>4</sup> Love fertilizes the good desires, the holy purposes, and

<sup>1</sup> "Petite et accipietis."—*John*, xvi. 24.

<sup>2</sup> "Oratio, cum sit una, omnia potest."—*Ap. Rodr.* p. 1, tr. 5, c. 14.

<sup>3</sup> "Domine, da mihi hanc aquam."—*John*, iv. 15.

<sup>4</sup> "Sancti Spiritus corda nostra mundet infusio, et sul roris intima aspersione fecundet."

the good works of our souls: these are the flowers and fruits which the grace of the Holy Spirit produces. Love is also called dew, because it cools the heart of bad passions and of temptations. Therefore the Holy Ghost is also called refreshment and cooling in the heat: "In heat refreshment and pleasing coolness."<sup>1</sup> This dew descends into our hearts in the time of prayer. A quarter of an hour's prayer is sufficient to appease every passion of hatred or of inordinate love, however ardent it may be: *He brought me into the cellar of wine, He set in order charity in me.*<sup>2</sup> Holy meditation is this cellar where love is set in order, so that we love our neighbor as ourselves, and God above everything. He who loves God loves prayer; and he that loves not prayer will find it morally impossible to overcome his passions.

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

O holy and divine Spirit, I will no longer live to myself; but I will spend all the days that remain for me in this life in loving Thee and pleasing Thee. Therefore I beseech Thee to grant me the gift of prayer. Do Thou descend into my heart, and teach me to pray as I ought. Give me strength not to leave it off through weariness in times of aridity; and give me the spirit of prayer, that is to say, the grace constantly to pray to Thee, and to use those prayers which are dearest to Thy Sacred Heart. I was once lost through my sins; but I see, from all the kindnesses I have received from Thee, that Thou willest that I should be saved and become a saint; and I desire to become a saint to give Thee pleasure, and that I may love Thy infinite goodness more and more. I love Thee, O my sovereign good, my love, my all; and because I love Thee I give myself entirely to Thee. O Mary, my hope, do thou protect me!

<sup>1</sup> "In æstu temperies, dulce refrigerium."

<sup>2</sup> "Introduxit me in cellam vinariam; ordinavit in me charitatem."

—Cant. ii. 4.

## MEDITATION V.

## Love is a Repose that refreshes.

Love is also called, "in labor rest, in mourning comfort."<sup>1</sup> Love is repose that refreshes; because the principal office of love is to unite the will of the lover to that of the beloved one. To a soul that loves God, in every affront that it receives, in every sorrow that it endures, in every loss that happens to it, the knowledge that it is the will of its beloved that it should suffer these trials is enough to comfort it. It finds peace and contentment in all tribulations by merely saying, This is the will of my God. This is that peace which surpasses all the pleasure of sense: *The peace of God which surpasseth all understanding.*<sup>2</sup> St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, by merely saying, "The will of God," was always filled with joy.

In this life every one must carry his cross; but St. Teresa says, that the cross is heavy for him that drags it, not for him that embraces it. Thus our Lord knows well how to strike and how to heal: *He woundeth, and cureth*, says Job.<sup>3</sup> The Holy Spirit, by his sweet unction, renders even ignominies and torments sweet and pleasant: *Yea, Lord; for so hath it seemed good in Thy sight.*<sup>4</sup> Thus ought we to say in all adversities that happen to us: *So be it done, Lord, because so hath it pleased Thee.* And when the fear of any temporal evil that may befall us alarms us, let us always say: "Do what Thou wilt, my God; whatever Thou doest, I accept it all, henceforth." And thus it is a very good thing to offer one's self constantly during the day to God, as did St. Teresa.

<sup>1</sup> "In labore requies, in fletu solatium."

<sup>2</sup> "Pax Dei, quæ exsuperat omnem sensum."—*Phil.* iv. 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Ipse vulnerat, et medetur."—*Job*, v. 18.

<sup>4</sup> "Ita, Pater! quoniam sic fuit placitum ante te."—*Matt.* xi. 26.



*Affections and Prayers.*

O my God, how often, for the sake of doing my own will, have I opposed myself to Thy will and despised it! I regret this evil more than every other evil. O Lord, from this day forward I will love Thee with my whole heart: *Speak, Lord; for Thy servant heareth.*<sup>1</sup> Tell me what Thou wouldst have me to do, I will do it all. Thy will shall be my only desire, my only love. O Holy Spirit, help my weakness. Thou art goodness itself; how can I love any other but Thee? Oh, do Thou draw all my affections to Thyself by the sweetness of Thy holy love. I renounce everything, to give myself entirely to Thee. Do Thou accept me and help me. O Mary, my Mother, I trust in thee!

## MEDITATION VI.

**Love is the Virtue which gives us Strength.**

*Love is strong as death.*<sup>2</sup> As there is no created strength that can resist death, so there is no difficulty for a loving soul that love cannot overcome. When there is question of pleasing its beloved, love conquers all,—losses, contempt, and sorrow: “Nothing is so hard, but that the fire of love can conquer it.”<sup>3</sup>

This is the most certain mark whereby to know if a soul really loves God, if it is as faithful in love when things are adverse as when they are prosperous. St. Francis de Sales said, that “God is quite as amiable when he chastises as when he consoles us, because he does all for love.”<sup>4</sup> Indeed, when he strikes us most in this life, then it is that he loves us most. St. John Chrysostom<sup>5</sup> esteemed St. Paul in chains more fortunate than St. Paul rapt up into the third heaven.

<sup>1</sup> “Loquere, Domine, quia audit servus tuus.”—I *Kings*, iii. 10.

<sup>2</sup> “Fortis est ut mors dilectio.”—*Cant.* viii. 6.

<sup>3</sup> “Nihil tam durum, quod amoris igne non vincatur.”—*De Mor. Eccl. Cath.* c. 22.

<sup>4</sup> *Love of God*, B. 9, ch. 2.

<sup>5</sup> *In Eph. hom.* 8.

Hence the holy martyrs, in the midst of their torments, rejoiced and thanked the Lord, as for the greatest favor that could fall to their lot—that of having to suffer for his love. And other saints, where there were wanting tyrants to afflict them, became their own executioners, by the penances which they inflicted upon themselves in order to please God. St. Augustine says, that “For that which men love, either no labor is felt, or the labor itself is loved.”<sup>1</sup>

*Affections and Prayers.*

O God of my soul, I say that I love Thee ; and yet what do I do for Thy love ? Nothing. This shows, therefore, that either I do not love Thee, or I love Thee too little. Send me therefore, O my Jesus, Thy Holy Spirit, that he may come and give me strength to suffer for Thy love, and to do something for the love of Thee before death overtakes me. O my beloved Redeemer, let me not die cold and ungrateful as I have hitherto been to Thee. Grant me strength to love suffering, after so many sins whereby I have deserved hell. O my God, who art all goodness and love, Thou desirest to dwell in my heart from which I have so often expelled Thee ; come, then, dwell within it, take possession of it, and make it entirely Thine. I love Thee, O my Lord ; and if I love Thee, Thou art already with me, as St. John assures me : *He that abideth in charity abideth in God, and God in him.*<sup>2</sup> Since, therefore, Thou art with me, increase the flames, increase the chains, so that I may neither seek nor love anything else but Thee ; and thus bound, may never be separated from Thy love. I desire to be Thine, O my Jesus, and entirely Thine. O Mary, my Queen and Advocate, obtain for me love and perseverance !

MEDITATION VII.

Love causes God to dwell in our Souls.

The Holy Ghost is called “Sweet guest of the soul.” This was the great promise made by Jesus Christ to

<sup>1</sup> “In eo quod amatur, aut non laboratur, aut et labor amatur.”—*De Bono vid. c. 21.*

<sup>2</sup> “Qui manet in charitate, in Deo manet, et Deus in eo.”—I *John*, iv. 16.

those who love him, when he said: *If you love Me, I will pray My Father, and He will send you the Holy Spirit, that He may always dwell in you. If you love Me, keep My commandments. And I will ask the Father, and He shall give you another Paraclete, that He may abide with you forever.*<sup>1</sup> For the Holy Spirit never forsakes a soul, says the Council of Trent, if he is not driven away from it: "He does not forsake, unless he be first forsaken."<sup>2</sup>

God, then, dwells in a soul that loves him; but he declares that he is not satisfied if we do not love him with our whole heart. St. Augustine tells us, that the Roman senate would not admit Jesus Christ into the number of their gods, because they said that he was a proud god, who would have none other beloved but himself. And so it is: he will have no rivals in the heart that loves him; and when he sees that he is not the only object loved, he is jealous (so to say), according to what St. James writes, of those creatures who divide with him the heart which he desires to have all to himself: *Do you think the Scripture saith in vain: To envy doth the spirit covet which dwelleth in you?*<sup>3</sup> In short, as St. Jerome says, "Jesus is jealous."<sup>4</sup> Hence the heavenly Spouse praises that soul which, like the turtle-dove, lives in solitude and hidden from the world: *Thy cheeks are beautiful as the turtle-doves.*<sup>5</sup> Because he does not choose that the world should take a part of that love which he desires to have all to himself, therefore he also praises his Spouse by calling her "a garden enclosed:" *My sister, My spouse, is a garden enclosed.*<sup>6</sup> A

<sup>1</sup> "Si diligitis me, mandata mea servate. Et ego rogabo Patrem, et alium Paracletum dabit vobis, ut maneat vobiscum in æternum."—*John*, xiv. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "Non deserit, nisi deseratur."—*Sess. vi. c. 11.*

<sup>3</sup> "An putatis quia inaniter Scriptura dicat: Ad invidiam concupiscit Spiritus qui habitat in vobis?"—*James*, iv. 5.

<sup>4</sup> "Zelotypus est Jesus."—*Epist. ad Eust.*

<sup>5</sup> "Pulchræ sunt genæ tuæ sicut turturis."—*Cant. i. 9.*

<sup>6</sup> "Hortus conclusus, soror mea sponsa."—*Ibid. iv. 12.*

garden closed against all earthly love. Do we doubt that Jesus deserves our whole love? "He gave himself wholly to thee," says St. John Chrysostom; "He left nothing for himself."<sup>1</sup> He has given thee all his blood and his life; there remains nothing more for him to give thee.

*Affections and Prayers.*

O my God, I see that Thou desirest to have me entirely for Thine own. I have oftentimes driven Thee from my soul, and yet Thou hast not disdained to return to me and reunite Thyself to me again. Oh, do Thou now take possession of my whole self. I give myself this day entirely to Thee; accept of me, O my Jesus, and let me never for the future live one moment deprived of Thy love. Thou seekest me, and I seek none other but Thee. Thou desirest my soul, and my soul desires none but Thee. Thou lovest me, and I love Thee; and since Thou lovest me, bind me to Thyself, so that I may never more be separated from Thee. O Queen of heaven, I trust in thee!

MEDITATION VIII.

**Love is a Bond which binds.**

As the Holy Spirit, who is uncreated love, is the indissoluble bond which binds the Father to the Eternal Word, so he also unites the soul to God. "Charity is a virtue," says St. Augustine, "uniting us to God."<sup>2</sup> Hence, full of joy, St. Laurence Justinian exclaims: O love, thy bond has such strength, that it is able to bind even God, and unite him to our souls: "O love, how strong is thy bond, which could bind God!"<sup>3</sup>

The bonds of the world are bonds of death; but the bonds of God are bonds of life and salvation: *Her bonds are a healthful binding.*<sup>4</sup> Yes, because the bonds of God

<sup>1</sup> "Totum tibi dedit, nihil sibi reliquit."

<sup>2</sup> "Charitas est virtus conjungens nos Deo."

<sup>3</sup> "O charitas! quam magnum est vinculum tuum, quo Deus ligari potuit!"—*Lign. v. de Char.* c. 6.

<sup>4</sup> "Vincula illius, alligatura salutaris."—*Ecclus.* vi. 31.

by means of love unite us to God, who is our true and only life.

Before the coming of Jesus Christ men fled away from God, and being attached to the earth, refused to unite themselves to their Creator; but the loving God has drawn them to himself by the bonds of love, as he promised by the prophet Osee: *I will draw them with the cords of Adam, with the bands of love.*<sup>1</sup> These bands are the benefits, the lights, the calls to his love, the promises of paradise, which he makes to us; but above all, the gift which he has bestowed upon us of Jesus Christ in the Sacrifice of the Cross and in the Sacrament of the Altar, and finally, the gift of his Holy Spirit. Therefore the prophet exclaims: *Loose the bonds from off thy neck, O captive daughter of Zion.*<sup>2</sup> O my soul, thou who art created for heaven, loose thyself from the bonds of earth, and unite thyself to God by the bonds of holy love: *Have charity, which is the bond of perfection.*<sup>3</sup> Love is a bond which unites to herself all other virtues, and makes the soul perfect. "Love, and do what you will,"<sup>4</sup> said St. Augustine. Love God, and do what thou wilt; because he who loves God tries to avoid causing any displeasure to his beloved, and seeks in all things to please him.

#### *Affections and Prayers.*

My dearest Jesus, how much hast Thou not done to oblige me to love Thee, and how much hath it cost Thee to gain to Thyself my love! Ah, I should be too ungrateful if I loved Thee little, or divided my heart between Thy creatures and Thyself, after Thou hast given me Thy blood and Thy life. I will detach myself from everything, and in Thee alone will I place all my affections. But I am weak in carrying out this my desire;

<sup>1</sup> "In funiculis Adam traham eos, in vinculis charitatis."—*Os.* xi. 4.

<sup>2</sup> "Solve vincula colli tui, captiva filia Sion."—*Is.* lii. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "Charitatem habete, quod est vinculum perfectionis."—*Col.* iii.

14.

<sup>4</sup> "Ama, et fac quod vis."



O Thou who hast inspired me with it, do Thou give me strength to execute it. Pierce my poor soul, O dearest Jesus, with the sweet dart of Thy love, so that I may ever languish with desire of Thee, and be dissolved with the love of Thee; that I may seek Thee alone, desire only Thee, and find none but Thee. My Jesus, I desire Thee, and Thee alone. Make me repeat continually in this life, and especially at the hour of my death, "Thee alone do I desire, and nothing else." O Mary, my Mother, obtain for me that henceforth I may desire nothing but God.

### MEDITATION IX.

**Love is a Treasure containing every Good.**

Love is that treasure of which the Gospel says that we must leave all to obtain it; yes, because love makes us partakers of the friendship of God: *An infinite treasure to men, which they that use become the friends of God.*<sup>1</sup> O man, says St. Augustine, wherefore, then, goest thou about seeking for good things? seek that one good alone in which all other good things are contained. But we cannot find God, who is this sovereign good, if we do not forsake the things of the earth. St. Teresa writes, "Detach thy heart from creatures, and thou shalt find God."<sup>2</sup>

He that finds God finds all that he can desire: *Delight in the Lord, and He will give thee the requests of thy heart.*<sup>3</sup> The human heart is constantly seeking after good things that may render it happy; but if it seeks them from creatures, how much soever it may acquire, it will never be satisfied with them; but if it seeks God alone, God will satisfy all its desires. Who are the happiest people

<sup>1</sup> "Infinitus enim thesaurus est hominibus, quo qui usi sunt, participes facti sunt amicitiae Dei."—*Wisd.* vii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Avis* 36.

<sup>3</sup> "Delectare in Domino, et dabit tibi petitiones cordis tui."—*Ps.* xxxvi. 4.



in this world, if it be not the saints? And why? Because they desire and seek only God.

A certain prince, as he was going out hunting, saw a solitary who was running about in the forest, and asked him what he was doing in that desert. The solitary replied, "And thou, O prince, what art thou seeking?" The prince said, "I am going out in search of wild beasts." "And I," said the hermit, "am going out in search of God." The tyrant offered gold and gems to St. Clement, in order to persuade him to renounce Jesus Christ; the saint exclaimed, with a sigh, "Alas, is God put into competition with a little dirt? Blessed is he who knows this treasure of divine love, and strives to obtain it. He who obtains it will of his own accord divest himself of everything else, that he may have nothing else but God." "When the house is on fire," says St. Francis de Sales, "all the goods are thrown out of the window."<sup>1</sup> And Father Paul Segneri the Younger, a great servant of God, used to say, that love is a thief, which robs us of all earthly affections; so that we can say, "And what else do I desire, but Thee alone, O my Lord?"

### *Affections and Prayers.*

O my God, hitherto I have not sought Thee, but myself and my own pleasures; and for the sake of these I have turned my back upon Thee, my sovereign good. But I am comforted by these words of Jeremias, *The Lord is good to the soul that seeketh Him.*<sup>2</sup> They tell me that Thou art all goodness towards him who seeks Thee. My beloved Saviour, I know the evil that I have committed in forsaking Thee, and I repent of it with my whole heart. I know that Thou art an infinite treasure. I will not abuse this light; I will forsake all, and choose Thee for my only love. My God, my love, my all, I love Thee, I desire Thee, I sigh after Thee. Come, O Holy Spirit, and destroy in me by

<sup>1</sup> *Spirit*, ch. 27.

<sup>2</sup> "Bonus est Dominus . . . animæ quærenti illum."—*Lam.* iii. 25.

Thy sacred fire every affection which has not Thee for its object. Grant that I may be all Thine, and that I may conquer everything to please Thee. O Mary, my advocate and Mother, do thou help me by thy prayers!

#### MEDITATION X.

##### The Means of loving God and of becoming a Saint.

The more we love God, the more holy do we become. St. Francis Borgia says that it is prayer that introduces divine love into the human heart; and it is mortification that withdraws the heart from the earth, and renders it capable of receiving this holy fire. The more there is of the earth in the heart, the less room there is for holy love: *Wisdom is not to be found in the land of them that live in delights.*<sup>1</sup> Hence the saints have always sought to mortify as much as possible their self-love and their senses. The saints are few; but we must live with the few, if we will be saved with the few: "Live with the few," writes St. John Climacus, "if you would reign with the few."<sup>2</sup> And St. Bernard says, "That cannot be perfect which is not singular."<sup>3</sup> He who would lead a perfect life must lead a singular life.

But before all, in order to become saints, it is necessary to have the desire to be saints; we must have the desire and the resolution. Some are always desiring, but they never begin to put their hands to the work. "Of these irresolute souls," says St. Teresa, "the devil has no fear." On the other hand, the saint said, "God is a friend of generous souls." The devil tries to make it appear to us to be pride to think of doing great things for God. It would indeed be pride in us, if we thought of doing them, trusting in our own strength; but it is

<sup>1</sup> "Sapientia vero ubi invenitur? . . . Nescit homo pretium ejus, nec invenitur in terra suaviter viventium."—*Job*, xxviii. 12, 13.

<sup>2</sup> "Vive cum paucis, si vis regnare cum paucis."

<sup>3</sup> "Perfectum non potest esse, nisi singulare."

not pride to resolve to become saints, trusting in God, and saying, *I can do all things in Him who strengtheneth me.*<sup>1</sup>

We must therefore be of good courage, make strong resolutions, and begin. Prayer can do everything. What we cannot do by our own strength, we shall do easily with the help of God, who has promised to give us whatever we ask of him: *You shall ask whatever you will, and it shall be done unto you.*<sup>2</sup>

*Affections and Prayers.*

My dearest Redeemer, Thou desirest my love, and commandest me to love Thee with my whole heart. Yes, my Jesus, I desire to love Thee with my whole heart. O my God, I will say to Thee, trusting in Thy mercy, my past sins do not make me fear, because I now hate them and detest them above every other evil; and I know that Thou dost forget the offences of a soul that is penitent and loves Thee. Indeed, because I have offended Thee more than others, I will also love Thee more than others, with the help that I hope to obtain from Thee. O my Lord, Thou desirest that I should be a saint; and I desire to become a saint to please Thee. I love Thee, O infinite goodness. To Thee do I give myself entirely. Thou art my only good, my only love. Accept of me, O my beloved, and make me entirely Thine, and suffer me not to offend Thee any more. Grant that I may be wholly consumed for Thee, as Thou hast wholly consumed Thyself for me, O Mary, the most loving and most beloved spouse of the Holy Spirit, obtain for me love and fidelity!

<sup>1</sup> “Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat.”—*Phil.* iv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> “Quodcumque volueritis petetis, et fiet vobis.”—*John*, xv. 7.

## Pious Exercise to obtain the Seven Gifts of the Holy Ghost.\*

<i>Spiritus Sancti gratia illuminet sensus et corda nostra. Amen.</i>	May the grace of the Holy Spirit enlighten our minds and hearts. Amen.
<i>Veni, Creator Spiritus!</i>	Come, Holy Ghost, Creator, come,
<i>Mentes tuorum visita ;</i>	From Thy bright heavenly throne ;
<i>Imple, superna gratia,</i>	Come, take possession of our souls,
<i>Quæ tu creasti pectora.</i>	And make them all Thy own.
<i>Qui diceris Paraclitus,</i>	Thou who art called the Paraclete,
<i>Altissimi Donum Dei ;</i>	Best gift of God above ;
<i>Fons vivus, Ignis, Charitas,</i>	The living spring, the living fire,
<i>Et spiritalis Unctio.</i>	Sweet unction and true love.
<i>Tu septiformis munere,</i>	Thou who art sevenfold in Thy grace,
<i>Digitus Paternæ dexteræ ;</i>	Finger of God's right hand ;
<i>Tu rite Promissum Patris,</i>	His promise teaching little ones
<i>Sermone ditans guttura.</i>	To speak and understand.

---

\* Pope Pius VI., by a brief, May 26, 1796, granted to all the faithful who, once or oftener in the day, with at least contrite heart and devotion, shall say in Latin or in any other language the hymn *Veni Creator Spiritus*, or the sequence *Veni Sancte Spiritus*, an indulgence of three hundred days during the octave of Pentecost, and of one hundred days at any other time ; and, moreover, a plenary indulgence each month, on the usual conditions. These indulgences are applicable to the souls in purgatory.—ED.

*Accende lumen sensibus,*

*Infunde amorem cordibus ;*

*Infirma nostri corporis,*

*Virtute firmans perpeti.*

*Hostem repellas longius,*

*Pacemque dones protinus ;*

*Ductore sic te prævio,*

*Vitemus omne noxium.*

*Per te sciamus da Patrem ;*

*Noscamus atque Filium,*

*Teque, utriusque Spiritum,*

*Credamus omni tempore.*

*Deo Patri sit gloria*

*Ejusque soli Filio,*

*Cum Spiritu Paraclito,*

*Nunc et per omne sæculum.*

*Amen.*

*Emitte Spiritum tuum, et cre-*  
*abuntur.*

*Et renovabis faciem terræ.*

Oremus.

*Adsit nobis, quæsumus, Dom-*  
*ine, virtus Spiritus Sancti, quæ*  
*et corda nostra clementer expur-*  
*get et ab omnibus tueatur ad-*  
*versis. Per Christum Dom-*  
*inum nostrum. Amen.*

Oh ! guide our minds with Thy  
blest light,

With love our hearts in-  
flame ;

And with Thy strength, which  
ne'er decays,

Confirm our mortal frame.

Far from us drive our hellish  
foe,

True peace unto us bring ;

And through all perils lead us  
safe,

Beneath Thy sacred wing.

Through Thee may we the  
Father know ;

Through Thee th' Eternal  
Son,

And Thee, the Spirit of them  
both ;

Thrice blessed Three in One.

All glory to the Father be

With his coequal Son,

The like to Thee, great Para-  
clete,

While endless ages run.

Amen.

Send forth Thy Spirit, and  
they shall be created.

And shalt renew the face of  
the earth.

*Let us pray.*

Assist us, O Lord, we be-  
seech Thee, with the power of  
Thy Holy Spirit, that our hearts  
may be purified according to  
Thy mercy, and we be defend-  
ed from all adversities. Amen.



*Deus, in adjutorium meum intende.—Domine, ad adjuvandum me festina.*

*Gloria Patri et Filio et Spiritui Sancto.—Sicut erat in principio, et nunc, et semper, et in sæcula sæculorum. Amen.*

Incline unto my aid, O God !  
—O Lord ! make haste to help me.

Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost.—As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, world without end. Amen

*First Prayer to obtain the Gift of the Fear of the Lord.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and the seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Thy holy Fear in order that it may prevent me from falling any more into my past infidelities, for which I now ask you a thousand times to forgive me.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Second Prayer to obtain the Gift of Piety.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father, and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and the seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst



enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of piety, in order that I may in future serve Thee with greater fervor, follow with greater promptness Thy holy inspirations, and observe with greater exactness Thy holy precepts.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Third Prayer to obtain the Gift of Knowledge.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler, I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and the seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Knowledge in order that I may be able to know well the things of God, and that enlightened by Thy holy instructions I may steadily walk in the way of my eternal salvation.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Fourth Prayer to obtain the Gift of Fortitude.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceas-

ingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God. I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Fortitude, in order that I may be able courageously to overcome all the attacks of the devil, and escape all the dangers of the world that stand in the way of my eternal salvation.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Fifth Prayer to obtain the Gift of Counsel.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Counsel in order that I may be able to choose what is most suitable to my spiritual advancement, and to discover all the snares and artifices of the evil spirit who tempts me.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Sixth Prayer to obtain the Gift of Understanding.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou

dost receive from the angels and the seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God. I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Understanding, in order that I may be able to understand the divine mysteries, and by the contemplation of heavenly things may detach my thoughts and affections from all the vanities of this miserable world.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Seventh Prayer to obtain the Gift of Wisdom.*

Holy Spirit, divine consoler ! I adore Thee as my true God, just as I adore God the Father and God the Son. I bless Thee by uniting myself to the blessings that Thou dost receive from the angels and the seraphs. I offer Thee my whole heart, and I render Thee heartfelt thanks for all the benefits that Thou hast bestowed and dost unceasingly bestow upon the world. Thou who art the author of all supernatural gifts, and who didst enrich with immense favors the soul of the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God. I beseech Thee to visit me by Thy grace and Thy love, and to grant me the gift of Wisdom, in order that I may be able to direct all my actions by referring them to God as my last end, so that by loving and serving Thee in this life as I ought to do, I may have the happiness of eternally possessing Thee in the next.

One *Our Father*, one *Hail Mary*, and the *Glory be to the Father* three times.

*Humble Supplication.*

Holy Spirit, divine Paraclete, Father of the poor, consoler of the afflicted, light of hearts, sanctifier of souls ! behold me prostrate in Thy presence ; I adore Thee with the most profound submission, and I repeat a thousand times with the seraphs who are before Thy throne : Holy, Holy, Holy ! I firmly believe that Thou art eternal, consubstantial with the Father and the Son. I hope that by Thy goodness Thou wilt sanctify and save my soul. I love Thee, O God of love ! I love Thee more than all the things of this world ; I love Thee with all my affections, because Thou art infinite goodness that alone dost merit all love ; and since, insensible as I have been to Thy holy inspirations, I have been so ungrateful as to offend Thee by so many sins, I ask Thee a thousand pardons for them, and I supremely regret having ever displeased Thee, O sovereign good ! I offer Thee my heart cold as it is, and I supplicate Thee to let a ray of Thy light and a spark of Thy fire enter therein to melt the hardened ice of my iniquities. Thou who hast filled with immense graces the soul of Mary, and inflamed with a holy zeal the hearts of the apostles, vouchsafe also to set on fire my heart with Thy love. Thou art a divine Spirit ; fortify me against evil spirits : Thou art a fire ; enkindle in me the fire of Thy love : Thou art a light ; enlighten me so that I may know eternal things : Thou art a dove ; give me great purity of heart : Thou art a breath that is full of sweetness ; dissipate the storms that my passions raise up against me : Thou art a tongue ; teach me the manner of praising Thee without ceasing : Thou art a cloud ; cover me with the shadow of Thy protection : and if, finally, Thou art the author of all heavenly gifts, ah, I beseech Thee to grant them to me : vivify me by Thy grace, sanctify me by Thy

charity, govern me by Thy wisdom, adopt me by Thy bounty as Thy child, and save me by Thy infinite mercy, so that I may never cease to bless Thee. to praise Thee, to love Thee, at first during my life on this earth, and afterwards for all eternity in heaven. Amen.

*Veni, Sancte Spiritus !  
Et emitte cœlitus.*

*Lucis tuæ radium.*

*Veni, Pater pauperum !*

*Veni, Dator munerum !*

*Veni, Lumen cordium !*

*Consolator optime,  
Dulcis Hospes animæ,  
Dulce Refrigerium !*

*In labore Requies,  
In æstu Temperies,  
In fletu Solatium.*

*O Lux beatissima !  
Reple cordis intima*

*Tuorum fidelium.*

*Sine tuo nomine,  
Nihil est in homine,  
Nihil est innoxium.*

*Lava quod est sordidum,*

*Riga quod est aridum,  
Sana quod est saucium.*

Holy Spirit ! Lord of light !  
From Thy clear celestial  
height,  
Thy pure, beaming radiance  
give.

Come, Thou Father of the  
poor !

Come, with treasures which  
endure !

Come, Thou light of all that  
live !

Thou, of all consolers best,  
Visiting the troubled breast,  
Dost refreshing peace be-  
stow.

Thou in toil are comfort sweet ;  
Pleasant coolness in the heat ;  
Solace in the midst of woe.

Light immortal ! light divine !  
Visit Thou these hearts of  
Thine,  
And our inmost being fill.

If Thou take Thy grace away,  
Nothing pure in man will stay ;  
All his good is turn'd to ill.

Heal our wounds—our strength  
renew ;

On our dryness pour Thy dew ;  
Wash the stains of guilt  
away.

*Flecte quod est rigidum,*

*Fove quod est frigidum,*

*Rege quod est devium.*

*Da tuis fidelibus,*

*In te confidentibus,*

*Sacrum septenarium.*

*Da virtutis meritum*

*Da salutis exitum,*

*Da perenne gaudium. Amen.*

*Emitte Spiritum tuum et cre-*  
*abuntur.*

*Et renovabis faciem terræ.*

*Domine exaudi orationem*  
*meam.*

*Et clamor meus ad te veniat.*

Oremus.

*Deus qui charitatis dona per*  
*gratiam Sancti Spiritus tuo-*  
*rum cordibus fidelium infudis-*  
*ti ! da famulis tuis, pro quibus*  
*tuam deprecamur clementiam,*  
*salutem mentis et corporis, ut te*  
*tota virtute diligant, et, quæ*  
*tibi placita sunt, tota dilectione*  
*perficiant. Per Christum Do-*  
*minum nostrum. Amen.*

Bend the stubborn heart and  
will ;

Melt the frozen, warm the  
chill ;

Guide the steps that go  
astray.

Thou, on those who evermore  
Thee confess and Thee adore,  
In Thy sevenfold gifts de-  
scend ;

Give them comfort when they  
die ;

Give them life with Thee on  
high ;

Give them joys which never  
end. Amen.

Send forth Thy Spirit, and  
they shall be created.

And Thou shalt renew the  
face of the earth.

O Lord, hear my prayer.

And let my cry come unto  
Thee.

*Let us pray.*

O God, who by the grace of  
the Holy Spirit hast infused  
the gifts of charity into the  
hearts of Thy faithful ! give to  
Thy servants, for whom we im-  
plore Thy clemency, health of  
soul and of body, in order that  
they may love Thee with all  
their strength, and may accom-  
plish with all their heart what  
is pleasing to Thee. Through  
Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.



## HYMN.

## To the Holy Ghost.

THE SOUL ALL FOR GOD.

BEGONE, ye vain hopes, ye attachments of earth ;  
Give your joys to such souls as no higher can soar ;  
Away, far away from my mem'ry begone,  
For I seek you no longer, esteem you no more ;  
O God of my heart ! make me love Thee alone.

Adieu, every creature ; I leave you with joy ;  
I no longer am yours—nay, I am not my own ;  
I belong but to God, from all else I am free ;  
I am thine, dearest Jesus,—all Thine,—Thine alone ;  
My best-beloved good ! let me cling but to Thee.

O amiable Lord ! let Thy sweet holy love  
Now possess my whole being and reign over me ;  
Let Thy love in my heart every passion restrain ;  
In that heart which was once so rebellious to Thee,  
O amiable Lord ! come, establish Thy reign.

O heavenly dew ! that so sweetly dost fall,  
Of passions unholy Thou calmest the glow ;  
Ah ! make me forever enamour'd of Thee,  
And live to seek only my God here below.  
O heavenly dew ! descend gently on me.

O fire all divine ! who with heavenly flames  
Dost those souls where Thou glowest make holy and blest,  
Come Thou to my heart, make it worthy to burn  
With Thy holiest ardors ; inflame my breast ;  
O fire all divine ! for Thy ardors I yearn.

O infinite love ! Ah, how blessèd is he  
Who beholds Thy sweet face there in heaven above !  
Oh ! when shall I too come Thy beauty to see,  
And enjoy Thee forever in transports of love !  
O infinite love ! haste to draw me to Thee.



## INDEX.

---

### A.

- ALACOCQUE, Sister Margaret Mary, vision relative to the Sacred Heart of Jesus, 113, 230.
- ALOYSIUS, St., his devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 115; his contentment to die in order to escape the dangers of this world, 420.
- ALVAREZ, Father Balthasar, vision of glory that one acquires by patience in sickness, 419.
- AVILA, Venerable John, his sentiments of love and of confidence towards Jesus Christ, 270, 290; his humility, 360.

### B.

- BERCHMANS, Venerable Brother John, his devotion to the Blessed Virgin, 120.
- BERNARDINE OF SIENNA, St., his devotion to the Blessed Virgin, 120.

### C.

- COMMUNION, love that Jesus Christ has shown us in instituting it, 275; desire that he has to be united to us through this sacrament, 278. Effects of Communion, 281. Frequent Communion, 347. Counsel as to preparation, 68, 347; as to thanksgiving, 75, 349. Acts before, 71; after, 77. Aspirations of love before, 83; after, 93. Hymns, 105. Meditations, 213. Spiritual Communion, its utility, 121; acts to make it well, 124, 351.
- CONFESSION, pious exercise to dispose one's self well for it, 61.
- CONFESSORS, counsel about timid persons, 454; prayer, 457; spiritual consolation, 458; desolation, 463.
- CONFIDENCE that we should have in Jesus Christ, 285.
- CONFORMITY to the will of God, its necessity, 400; happiness that it procures, 403. One surely does God's will by practising obedience, 409, 475.
- CONSOLATIONS, interior, they are not true devotion, 458; behavior in regard to them, 461.
- CONTRITION, motives and acts, 63.

## D.

DEATH, we must prepare for it and desire it above all in sickness, 420. Divine love makes it desirable, 444.

DESOLATION, spiritual, 458, 476.

DETACHMENT from earthly affection, necessary to find God, 371, 474; from human respect and from self-will, 387; from relatives, above all in regard to vocation, 379.

DIAZ, Mary, her devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 173.

DU PONT, Father Louis, makes a vow never to manifest his sufferings, 416.

## E.

ELEAZAR, St., fortifies himself in patience by looking at the outraged Jesus, 427.

EUCCHARIST, see *Mass, Communion, Blessed Sacrament*.

## F.

FAITH, it is the foundation of charity, but it is charity that perfects it, 430; a bad life is an enemy of faith, 431; many believe without believing all, 433.

FERIA, Countess of, a nun of St. Clare, her devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 127.

FRANCIS of the Infant Jesus, Brother, his devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 173.

FRANCIS of Assisi, St., his tenderness towards Jesus suffering, 273; he thanks God for being able to suffer, 416.

FRANCIS de Sales, St., his meekness, 316; his submission to the divine will, 321; his patience in sickness, 416; how he triumphed over the two passions, anger and love, 395.

FRIENDSHIP, it presupposes a communication of goods, 437.

## G.

GOD, his love for us, his benefits, 264; he loves to see us suffer, but this is for our good, 428.

## H.

HEART of Jesus, apparition to Sister Margaret Mary Alacoque, 113. Devotion to the Heart of Jesus, 229. Meditations, 235. Affections, 256. Hymns, 258.

HENRY Suso, Blessed, learns by revelation the trials that await him, 426.

HOLY GHOST, our divine love, novena, 478; effects that he produces in souls, meditations, 479; pious exercise to obtain his gifts, 496; hymn, 505.

HOPE, it augments charity, 434.

HUMILITY, its necessity and its merit, 358; the practice of it, 361; we must avoid vainglory, 366.

## I.

INTENTION, pure, to please God, necessary in all our actions, 323; which are signs of it, 326.

## J.

JANE Frances de Chantal, St., her interior trials, 466.

JESUS CHRIST, love that he has shown us by suffering for us, 265; by instituting the Blessed Sacrament, 275; desire that he has to be united to us, 279; confidence with which this love of our Saviour should inspire us, 285; how much we are obliged to love him, 293; how we should love him, 299; he wishes to be loved alone without a competitor, 372.

JOHN of the Cross, St., chooses a house in which he has more to suffer, 427.

JONAS, St., Martyr, his resignation sustained by the remembrance of Jesus crucified, 418.

JOSEPH, St., de Leonissa, his courage in a painful operation, 418.

## L.

LA NUSA, Father Louis, his devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 114.

LIDWINE, St., her resignation in sufferings, 418; thereby she completed her crown, 419.

LOVE, divine, its excellence, 297; its marks, 300; the practice of it, 305; it perfects faith, 430; and makes hope increase, 435. See *Holy Ghost* and *Perfection*.

LUKEWARMNESS, unavoidable, 330; lukewarmness that one can and should avoid, 331; remedies against this vice, 334, 472, 477.

## M.

MARGARET of the Cross, Sister, prefers a poor habit to the purple, 428.

MARY, Mother of God, how we should honor her, visits, 118. Indulged prayer for the visits, 125. Visits for every day in the month, 129.

MASS, the same sacrifice as that of the Cross, 25; its four ends, 58. Explanation of the prayers of Mass, 28. Instruction on the manner of hearing Mass, 58. Offering of the Mass to obtain the remission of sins, 66.

MEEKNESS, its excellence, the practice of it, 316, 392, 471, 475.

MORTIFICATIONS, those that come from God or from our neighbor are preferable to those of our own choice, 313; exterior mortifications are necessary, 460. Interior mortification, see *Detachment*.

## O.

OBEDIENCE, sure means to fulfil God's will, 409; it should subject the will and the judgment, 412. Seculars practise obedience by submitting to their confessor, 412.

ORDERS, holy, sanctity required for receiving them, 382.

## P.

PARADISE, we should desire it in order to love God perfectly; in this consists the happiness of the soul, 440.

PATIENCE, its necessity and its merit, 305; it renders us happy even in this life, 310. Patience in sickness, 415; in poverty, 421; in the loss of relatives and friends, 425; in contempt, 426. Practical summary, 470.

PERFECTION, it consists solely in the love of God, 263, 299; or in humility, mortification, and conformity to the divine will, 406; means to attain it and persevering in it, 272, 334, 472, 494.

PETER, Martyr, St., Jesus crucified appears to him in prison, 427.

PHILIP Neri, St., prefers the house in which he has more to suffer, 426.

POVERTY, we should patiently bear it and even love it, 421.

PRAYER, its necessity and efficacy, 351; especially against temptations, 450, 476. The Lord's prayer, explanation, 48. Mental prayer, its utility and importance, 342; subjects for meditation, 346.

PURGATORY, the greatest pain that one suffers there, and particular pain for those that have but little desire for heaven, 445.

## S.

SACRAMENT, Blessed, worship that we owe it, visits, 113. Indulged prayer for the visits, 123. Visits for every day in the month, 127. Aspirations of love, 83. Hymns, 209. Meditations, 213.



SACRIFICES of the Old Law, four kinds, 16; five conditions requisite, 18; the sacrifice of Jesus Christ fulfils these conditions and realizes the figures, 21. See *Mass*.

SALESIOUS, Father, his devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 166.

SICKNESS, with what patience one should bear it, 415.

SOUL, its happiness and its union with God in heaven, 442.

SUFFERINGS, their utility, 305. See *Patience*.

SUPERIOR, what should be his meekness, 317.

### T.

TEMPTATIONS, pains that they cause a soul that loves Jesus Christ, and why God permits them, 447; means to be adopted to conquer them, 450, 476.

TERESA, St., Jesus encourages her to suffer, 418.

### V.

VINCENT de Paul, his meekness, 320; his patience in sickness, 415, 417.

VOCATION, one is not obliged to obey one's parents when there is question of following it, 381; signs of vocation to the ecclesiastical state, 382.

### W.

WENCESLAUS, St., his devotion to the Blessed Sacrament, 116.